

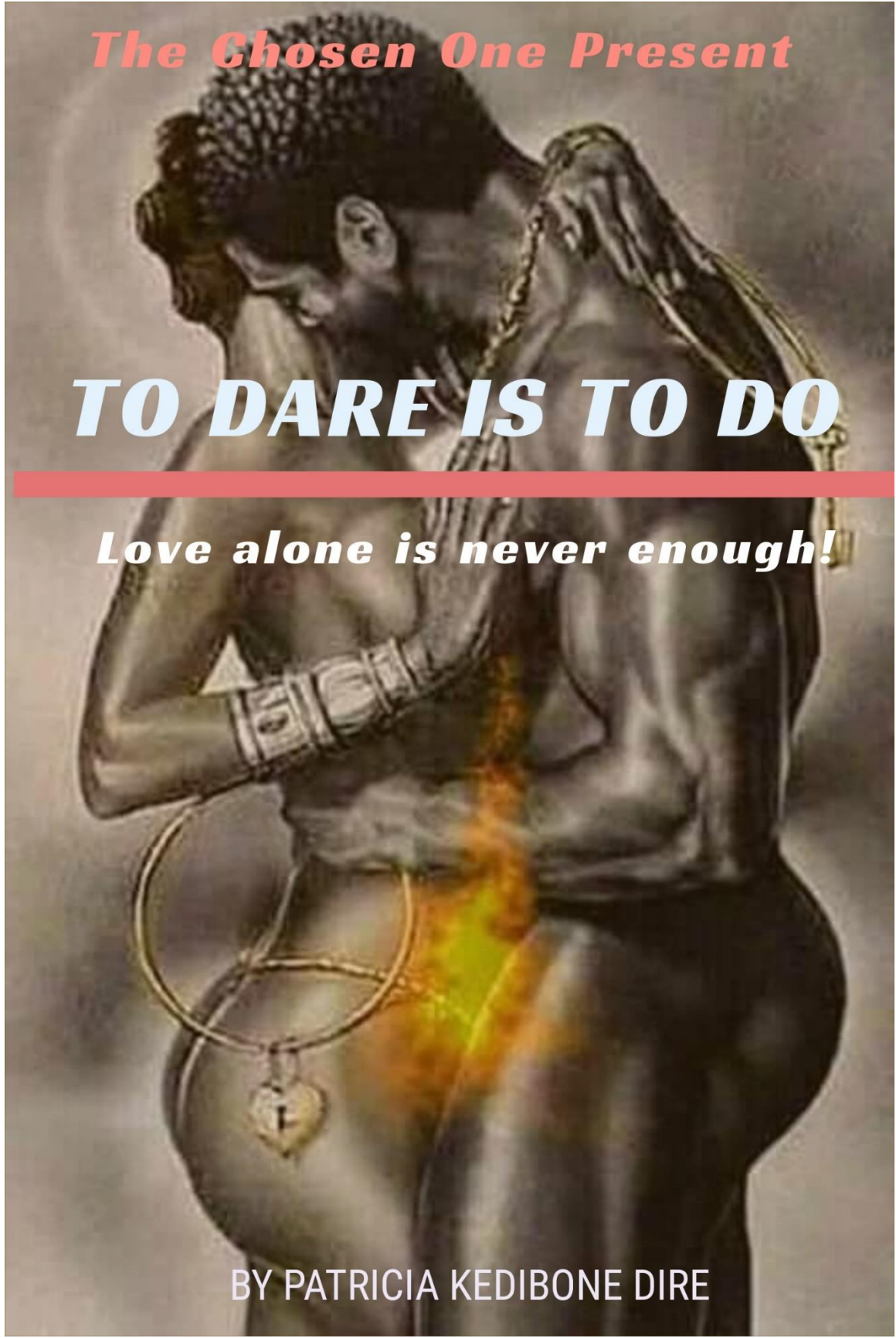


***The Chosen One Present***

***TO DARE IS TO DO***

***Love alone is never enough!***

BY PATRICIA KEDIBONE DIRE



## Chapter 1

Mpande: ang'kuqondi konke lokhu ( I dont understand all of this)

\*\*\*He said with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Alpha: what

Mpande: this thing yama engagement party....izinto zabelungu....infact umsangano nje ( this things of engagement parties...its a white people thing....in fact its stupid)

Alpha: well vasati va swirandza ( well women love it)

Mpande: well my woman will need to make peace with the fact that she will never get it or amabridal shower or baby shower

Alpha: then you better go find yourself a village girl cause city or township girls love those things

Mpande: well the girl I saw I think is a township girl even though I feel like I know her from somewhere....i still remember how she insulted my mother and called my type of music rubbish

\*\*\*Alpha laughed \*\*\*

Alpha: I remember....yeer xivindzi xa yena ( yeer her liver)

\*\*\*he laughed again\*\*\*

Mpande: she's gonna pay that one...the day she's gonna be mine heeh bafu nc nc nc... uma engibona uzothi ashee mhlonishwa ( when she sees me she will say hello sir)

\*\*\*Alpha busted out with laughter as he parked the car\*\*\*

Alpha: well that's if you'll ever find her

\*\*\*he said getting out\*\*\*

Mpande: ooh I will...i wont rest until I find her

\*\*\*he said also getting out and Alphalette just shook his head locking the car and they walked inside\*\*\*

Alpha: what if she's married

Mpande: divorce baba

\*\*\*Alphalette laughed shaking his head\*\*\*

Alpha: I already feel sorry for her

Mpande: im not that bad mfo

Alpha: yeah you're not that bad....you're the worst

Mpande: mxm

\*\*\*he looked around at all the cars\*\*\*

Mpande: I see all the high status people are here

Alpha: after Ma sees us we eat then leave

Mpande: mmmh indlebe izwile bafo...sishaya ama In and Out ( the ear has heard....we will do a In and Out thing)

Alpha: I cant stand all these fake people nxa

Mpande: calm down mfo....angifuni amadlozi aphume ( I dont want your ancestors to come out)....remember we are here for umamcane ( aunt)

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed and they walked inside the house and as soon as Alphalette's younger sister saw him she ran to him and jumped on him and Alphalette laughed catching her....after they hugged and greeted each other she jumped on Mpande and he swung her around then he put her down\*\*\*

Mpande: waze wakhula Clair ( you have grown Clair)

\*\*\*She blushed looking down\*\*\*

Alpha: mmmh and tell all those boys that im a sangoma ( traditional healer) and your other brother has a gun

Clair: huh bhuti

Alpha: im just saying

Mrs.Reineke: my boys

\*\*\*She said opening her arms for them and they quickly took off their hats and they both hugged her and when they broke the hug he pinched their ears\*\*\*

Alpha: aah ma

\*\*\*Clair laughed as they held their aching ears and Mpande gave her a stern look\*\*\*

Mpande: uhlekani wena nekhanda elikhulu ( what are you laughing at big head)

\*\*\*she stuck her tongue out and ran away when Mpande took a step towards her\*\*\*

Mpande: sifelani manje ma ( what did we do ma)

Mom: is this the time to come to your brother's engagement party

Alpha: but ma I told you we will be late

Mom: late yamasimba nxa.... And what are you wearing.....yazin I'm not gonna let you two to stress me .....come and meet your soon to be sister in law

\*\*\*she said walking away\*\*\*

Mpande: ngimdala manginje imagine indoda endala kanje ( I'm old....imagine a man as old as me) pinched on his ear as if he's some small boy....this is not on

\*\*\*he whined\*\*\*

Mom: you want another pinch Mpande cause this time I wont let go until that big ear of yours bleeds

Mpande: haai cha.... indlebe izwile ma...izwile ngempela ( haai no the ear has heard....it has heard indeed)

Mom: good... now come

\*\*\*Alphalette laughed at him and he showed him the middle finger and they followed her... inside they found people standing in groups some sitting down drinking....the guys were wearing formal some semi formal clothing and women are wearing dresses and heels while some are wearing semi formal clothing as well.....soft music was playing....the was a bar area and waiters and waitresses serving them finger food....Mpande sighed shaking his head\*\*\*

Mpande: and then

\*\*\*he said pointing at a plate\*\*\*

Alpha: relax...lets eat and leave

Mpande: yho hai shem umamcane waze walithwala idombolo ( I feel sorry for aunty)... eat what??? do you see food here...

Alpha: bro relax

Mpande: umavetane ushada umlungu yini ( is whitey marrying a white woman)

Alpha: I dont know and I dont care....lets eat and leave

Mpande: so dlani ( what are we gonna eat)....im not a rabbit and im definitely not on diet....did you see what they are serving...ngiyindoda yomZulu mina...angidli udoti ....nxa ( im a Zulu man... I dont eat rubbish)

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Mpande: ithi ngiyophuzibiya ( let me go drink) before I lose my mind

\*\*\*he went to the bar area and Alphalette followed him....people gave him weird looks cause he's wearing different kinds of beads on his wrists and neck....he's wearing a black golf shirt black jeans and a red cap and red sneakers while Mpande is wearing a tailor made navy blue brentwood pants a Madiba shirt that has brown and navy blue strips with a gold chain hanging

around his neck on top of the shirt and navy blue Carvelas...all in all they looked out of place....Alpha followed him to the bar area\*\*\*

Mpande: heita

Whiteguy: hi gentlemen what would you like to drink

\*\*\*he said looking uncomfortable\*\*\*

Alpha: heineken

Whiteguy: ok

\*\*\*he put a 330ml on top of the counter and reached for a glass but then he stopped when he saw

Alpha opening the bottle using his teeth\*\*\*

Whiteguy: ok...ummm what about you sir

Mpande: what about me

Alpha: uphuzani ( what do you drink)

Mpande: ooho....give me black label lapho.... And Ngud'

\*\*\*the guy cleared his throat\*\*\*

Mpande: black label ndoda ( man)

Whiteguy: umm I'm sorry sir but we don't have it

Mpande: mihlola ( I cant believe this)

Alpha: just give him what I'm having

\*\*\*he knew he was about to cause a scene\*\*\*

Mpande: heh bafo amasimb.... ( heh bro what nons...)

\*\*\*he stopped when he saw Alphalette's mother walking towards them with Stevens and his fiance and Alphalette's heart almost stopped\*\*\*

Mpande: bafo ( bro)

Alpha: nguye ( its her)

Ma: aah ibiya ( beer) before eating Alpha...Mpande

\*\*\*Masai looked at Alphalette as if she's seeing a ghost\*\*\*

Mpande: there's no food here ma

Ma: I cooked for you two...your food is in the kitchen cause I know you wont eat what is being served here

Stevens: big bro...howzit

\*\*\*Alphalette's eyes left Masai and he looked at Stevens with a scary frown on his face\*\*\*

Alpha: sho

Stevens: I'd like you to meet my beautiful baby....my fiance....Masai Rapula

Alpha: we already know each other....right Masai

\*\*\*He said looking at a shocked Masai\*\*\*

Ma: you know each other

Alpha: mmmh but through someone

\*\*\*Masai swallowed hard so did Stevens\*\*\*

Stevens: who

\*\*\*he asked with his heart beating fast\*\*\*

Stevens: babe

\*\*\*She blinked fast and tears ran down her cheeks as her hands shook then she ran out...her sister Hills saw her running out and she followed her outside and Mpande frowned looking at Hills \*\*\*

Mpande: fuck...bafo is that...

\*\*\*he asked looking freaked out...then he frowned and shook his head vigorously\*\*\*

Ma: Masa....whats going on...why is she running

\*\*\*Stevens looked at Alphalette who still had that scary frown on his face and he clicked his tongue then he followed her....he got outside and Hills was reversing out of the yard and the car drove away....Stevens clenched his jaws looking angry and he clicked his tongue and went to his car and drove off too\*\*\*

## INSIDE THE HOUSE

Ma: whats going on Alpha....what was that all about

Alpha: how should I know ma

Ma: ungangiyenzi islima ( dont make me a fool)...i saw your face

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: ma....i dont know why she ran off ok maybe you should ask your son....yes I know her cause we once met at a party 2 years back in Cape Town and Mpande here hooked up with her friend and he wasn't nice to the friend maybe that's why she reacted that way

Ma: why to you and not him heh

Alpha: ma...eish

\*\*\*he said rubbing his forehead trying to think of a believable lie\*\*\*

Alpha: we...eish

Alpha: we had a threesome with her friend and I was more rougher to her than him

Ma: whats a three....yuh mihlola...im done with you two....done.... done

\*\*\*she said sounding and looking dramatic\*\*\*

Mpande: I need a smoke and ubiya ( a beer)

\*\*\*he said walking away\*\*\*

Ma: nishera abafazi Alphalette Ntsako Mabunda ( you share women Alphalette Ntsako Mabunda)

Alpha: ma

Ma: ungathi nnywa....now I see why you two are not married....nishera ikhekhe ( you share a pussy)....yho ngaze ngahlolwa ( I cant believe this)

\*\*\*she walked away mumbling to herself and Alphalette sighed and followed Mpande....he found him smoking like a chimney \*\*\*

Mpande: I knew I've seen that girl somewhere

Alpha: who...

Mpande: my wife to be.....umfazi wami bafo....you didnt pay much attention to them cause you concentrated on your girl

\*\*\*Mpande took a large gulp\*\*\*

Mpande: they were three bafo....you left with your girl and I was left with two and I had a three sum with them....that one your girl left with is the sister that was engaged...she was getting married the following weekend

\*\*\*Alpha gave him a shocked look\*\*\*

Mpande: fuck bafo....ngimoshile straight ( I messed up)....i cant believe i had a threesome with them and now im interested in one of the sisters....Yazi i knew I've seen that girl somewhere....i didnt see her properly that time she insulted me but I knew I know her from somewhere I dont think she'll give me a chance bafo....damn it!!!

Alpha: oooh shit!!!

\*\*\*he exclaimed taking the beer from him and he took a large gulp\*\*\*

Alpha: and my chosen one is engaged to my younger brother and I have a child out there I need to find....

\*\*\*he said rubbing his forehead anxiously\*\*\*

Mpande: yho

\*\*\*he walked to the bar area and Alpha followed him\*\*\*

Mpande: ei give me something strong lapho....ichefu ngife once ( poison so that I die)

Alpha: make it two



\*\*\*His mind went to Masai....she looked beautiful....grown....she's a bit chubby cause that time she was slender....even her breasts are full that time they looked like tennis balls but now.....he shook his head...." nah it cant be" he thought....but then.... " nah..." he thought again shaking his head\*\*\*

## ON THE ROAD

Hills: mntase what happened....did something happen

\*\*\*Masai continued to cry ignoring her....why did he have to be Stevens brother....why doesnt happiness last in her life\*\*\*

Hills: bathong Masa whats going on....you know what im calling Moera

\*\*\*she called Moera Masai's twin sister\*\*\*

Moera: efedile party ya makgowa ( is the white peoples party over)

Hills: where are you

Moera: home

Hills: ok we are on our way

Moera: whats going Hills is Masa ok

Hills: no...something happened and I dont know what....she ran out of the party and she's crying but she doesnt say whats wrong

Moera: ok ummm hurry I'm waiting....that rotten guava had better not hurt her or else...heh heh

Hills: ok shap

\*\*\*after sometime they arrived and got out of the car and went up to their apartment and as soon as they got in Masai ran to her bedroom and she busted out with a cry as she slowly sat on her bed Moera and Hills walked in \*\*\*

Hills: Masa talk to us what happened

\*\*\*Moera hugged her and Hills joined them until she calmed down....Moera wiped her tears\*\*\*

Moera: who hurt you...is it Stevens

\*\*\*she shook her head as more tears made their way out\*\*\*

Hills: then who

Masai: Stevens brother is Khai's father

Hills&Moera: WHAT!!!

Masai: he looks like him....his photocopy Hills...

Hills: I didnt see him remember your mother in law took you and Stevens to go introduce you to his elder brother and I remained with Stevens friends

Moera: what did he say

Masai: nothing much just that we already knew each other

\*\*\*She said wiping her tears off\*\*\*

Masai: Stevens is gonna leave me Mo....i have a child with one brother and im engaged to another brother....why cant happiness last in my life....why

She said crying and the sisters hugged her with Hills crying too and Moera just swallowed hard\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Stevens knocked on the door and it was opened and there stood his baby mama Helga\*\*\*

Helga: what do you want

Stevens: you

\*\*\*she laughed mockingly\*\*\*

Stevens: are you gonna let me in or should I go and find another pussy to satisfy me

\*\*\*she raised her eyebrow\*\*\*

Helga: where's your new fiance...her pussy is not sweet anymore Steve

Stevens: are you gonna let me in or not Helga

\*\*\*he said with an annoyed voice\*\*\*

Helga: mxm

\*\*\*she said making way for him and he walked in\*\*\*

Stevens: where's my son

Helga: at my moms

\*\*\*he nodded then he sighed and went to sit down and he brushed his face\*\*\*

Helga: what happened

\*\*\*she asked with a bored tone\*\*\*

Stevens: I think....i think Masai and that shangaan brother of mine once had a thing going

Helga: wait what now

\*\*\*she said sounding interested now\*\*\*

Stevens: what if...i mean she doesnt want to talk about her baby daddy saying he's dead to her....what if he's.....fuck!!!

\*\*\*he said rubbing his face and Helga swallowed hard...." no" she thought as she blinked rapidly\*\*\*

Helga: what do you mean Stevens

\*\*\* she asked with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Stevens: I need to release

\*\*\*he said unbuckling his belt and unbuttoning his pants and he pulled out his average dick stroking it gently\*\*\*

Stevens: make me happy baby and I'll make you happy too

Helga: im not your fiance Stevens

Stevens: you know what fuck this shit I'm not about to beg you nxa

\*\*\*he said getting up and he fixed himself then Helga got up and stopped him\*\*\*

Helga: uyathanda ukucengwa heh ( you like being begged )

Stevens: are you gonna give me pussy or what

Helga: I need R10 000 for my girls strip

Stevens: you're selling now?

Helga: you chose to marry her instead of me so my pussy is no longer free for you mister...if you want free pussy go to your boring fiance

\*\*\*he sighed looking at her\*\*\*

Stevens: fine....now get naked

\*\*\*she smiled and grabbed his dick gently and he gasped\*\*\*

Helga: im gonna make you scream my name out loud.....

\*\*\*Stevens smirked getting excited\*\*\*

Stevens: make me happy baby

Helga: then make yourself comfortable daddy

He went and sat down comfortably and she started stripping for him seductively\*\*\*

Stevens: fuck you're gorgeous mamakhe

\*\*\*he said as his dick got harder and harder as he watched her\*\*\*

-----

## AT HILLS HOUSE

\*\*\*she got in and found her husband on the phone Moera and Hills walked in \*\*\*

Hills: Masa talk to us what happened

\*\*\*Moera hugged her and Hills joined them until she calmed down...Moera wiped her tears\*\*\*

Moera: who hurt you...is it Stevens

\*\*\*she shook her head as more tears made their way out\*\*\*

Hills: then who

Masai: Stevens brother is Khai's father

Hills&Moera: WHAT!!!

Masai: he looks like him...his photocopy Hills...

Hills: I didnt see him remember your mother in law took you and Stevens to go introduce you to his elder brother and I remained with Stevens friends

Moera: what did he say

Masai: nothing much just that we already knew each other

\*\*\*She said wiping her tears off\*\*\*

Masai: Stevens is gonna leave me Mo...i have a child with one brother and im engaged to another brother...why cant happiness last in my life...why

She said crying and the sisters hugged her with Hills crying too and Moera just swallowed hard\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Stevens knocked on the door and it was opened and there stood his baby mama Helga\*\*\*

Helga: what do you want

Stevens: you

\*\*\*she laughed mockingly\*\*\*

Stevens: are you gonna let me in or should I go and find another pussy to satisfy me

\*\*\*she raised her eyebrow\*\*\*

Helga: where's your new fiance...her pussy is not sweet anymore Steve

Stevens: are you gonna let me in or not Helga

\*\*\*he said with an annoyed voice\*\*\*

Helga: mxm

\*\*\*she said making way for him and he walked in\*\*\*

Stevens: where's my son

Helga: at my moms

\*\*\*he nodded then he sighed and went to sit down and he brushed his face\*\*\*

Helga: what happened

\*\*\*she asked with a bored tone\*\*\*

Stevens: I think...i think Masai and that shangaan brother of mine once had a thing going

Helga: wait what now

\*\*\*she said sounding interested now\*\*\*

Stevens: what if...i mean she doesnt want to talk about her baby daddy saying he's dead to her...what if he's.....fuck!!!

\*\*\*he said rubbing his face and Helga swallowed hard...." no" she thought as she blinked rapidly\*\*\*

Helga: what do you mean Stevens

\*\*\* she asked with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Stevens: I need to release

\*\*\*he said unbuckling his belt and unbuttoning his pants and he pulled out his average dick stroking it gently\*\*\*

Stevens: make me happy baby and I'll make you happy too

Helga: im not your fiance Stevens

Stevens: you know what fuck this shit I'm not about to beg you nxa

\*\*\*he said getting up and he fixed himself then Helga got up and stopped him\*\*\*

Helga: uyathanda ukucengwa heh ( you like being begged )

Stevens: are you gonna give me pussy or what

Helga: I need R10 000 for my girls strip

Stevens: you're selling now?

Helga: you chose to marry her instead of me so my pussy is no longer free for you mister...if you want free pussy go to your boring fiance

\*\*\*he sighed looking at her\*\*\*

Stevens: fine....now get naked

\*\*\*she smiled and grabbed his dick gently and he gasped\*\*\*

Helga: im gonna make you scream my name out loud.....

\*\*\*Stevens smirked getting excited\*\*\*

Stevens: make me happy baby

Helga: then make yourself comfortable daddy

He went and sat down comfortably and she started stripping for him seductively\*\*\*

Stevens: fuck you're gorgeous mamakhe

\*\*\*he said as his dick got harder and harder as he watched her\*\*\*

-----

## AT HILLS HOUSE

\*\*\*she got in and found her husband on the phone the conversation he was having with the person seemed tense cause he kept brushing his right eyebrow time and time again and he does that when he's stressed or angry...he turned and saw her standing near the dining table and he gave her a faint smile and he dropped the call then he walked to her\*\*\*

Hills: hey

\*\*\*he got to her and he pulled her closer by her thick waist and smashed his lips on hers and kissed the living daylight out of her leaving her breathless\*\*\*

Hills: wow looks like someone missed me too much

Tarek: more than you'll ever know

Hills: you good

\*\*\*she said wiping off her lipstick on his lips\*\*\*

Tar: mmmh

\*\*\*His voice vibrated on his throat\*\*\*

Hills: sure??

\*\*\*she said with a raised eyebrow and he perked her lips\*\*\*

Tarek: yah...i love you bambo lwam...i love you so much

Hills: I love you too sthandwa sam

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Tarek: just know that everything I do I do it for us....i always want you to be happy  
Shalate....your happiness means the world to me and I'll do everything to make sure you are  
always happy...

\*\*\*he sighed again\*\*\*

Hills: babe

\*\*\*he perked her lips again\*\*\*

Tarek: im not perfect and I'll never be but one thing I know is I love you to death Shalate....i  
dont think I will be able to live without you

\*\*\*she frowned\*\*\*

Hills: baby whats wrong

Tarek: ngiyakthanda mama

Hills: I love you too

Tarek: never give up on me...on us please bambo lwam

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tarek: promise me

Hills: I promise

\*\*\*he kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Tarek: how was the party

Hills: yho mmmh

\*\*\*she said dramatically and Tarek laughed cause he knew mgozi ( gossip) is about to  
happen\*\*\*

Hills: it was actually an engagement party

\*\*\*he raised his eyebrow\*\*\*

Tarek: heban

\*\*\*he said following her to the lounge to sit down\*\*\*

Hills: mmh shem the ring is to die for no lie and the food was five star restaurant style...you  
know those fancy finger food

Tarek: mmmh

Hills: but the party was boring babe like yho white people stuff

\*\*\*Tarek laughed looking at her admiringly....Hills is a thick woman and im not taking about  
those thick woman with tiny waist no no...she's one of those women that were born thick and  
even if they try to lose weight it wont happen and they don't need to lose it cause their thickness  
looks good on them with their thick waist thick thighs chubby cheeks actually thick  
everything...she's not dark skinned and she's not light skinned either she's in the middle....and

when she smiles she brightens up the room because of her deep dimples and she drives Tarek crazy...he's madly in love with her but there's only one thing missing in their lives....a child....on their wedding day she took a bullet for him....she survived but her womb didn't...she now have complications she cant carry a child full term....so far she's had five miscarriages.... She pretends to be this happy and joyful person but Tarek can see right through her....he knows she's dying inside and it kills him to know that the one thing they both want they cant have....yes there are other ways to have a child of their own but Tarek also has his own wishes....to go through pregnancy with the woman who's gonna carry his seed feeling the baby kick doctors appointment and having the best sex with a pregnant woman has always been his fantasy and also being available in the delivery room to witness his child's birth is his dream....to be the one to cut the umbilical cord.... he knows he cant experience that with a surrogate\*\*\*

Hills: babe are you listening

Tarek: ye...yeah

Hills: so yeah Masai found out that Stevens elder brother is her baby daddy....the mystery man

Tarek: what.... ithi uyadlala!!! ( what say you're kidding)

\*\*\*he said shocked\*\*\*

Hills: struu baby

\*\*\* then she sighed\*\*\*

Hills: im worried about her...you know her condition and I don't want her stressing baby....i just hope they make it with Stevens and Alphalette doesn't cause them problems when he finds out about AJ

Tarek: damn

Hills: let me go shower while you order my favorite

\*\*\*she perked his lips and got up and Tarek spanked her thick a\$\$ then he squeezed it getting a boner instantly....she's the first thick woman he's dated....he has always had a thing for hour glass figure women but Hills....Hills' chubbiness drives him crazy including that hot stove between her legs\*\*\*

Tarek: let me join you bambo lam

\*\*\*Hills stopped walking and she laughed\*\*\*

Hills: mara baby you smell fresh like you just took shower mos

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Tarek: that heat outside in the patio made me sweat again sthandwa sam

\*\*\*Hills laughed and continued to walk with Tarek behind her\*\*\*



Hills: what heat ...stop lying Mvelase...just say you want some of this thick a\$\$

\*\*\*she said grabbing it and he cursed\*\*\*

Tarek: f#!k!!!

\*\*\*she laughed and picked up her pace and he laughed\*\*\*

Tarek: you know you cant out run me bambo lam

\*\*\*his phone rang as she got in their bed room and he looked at the caller id and clenched his jaws then he dropped it...he sighed and walked in then an sms reported on his phone and he opened it...he read it and swallowed hard as his heart started beating fast...his hands shook then he folded fists trying to stop them... He went out of the bedroom as the shower ran and he went to pour himself a hot drink and gulped it at one go then he calmed down then he typed an sms\*\*\*

Tarek: “ you don’t have to do that I’ll tell her tonight”

\*\*\*he send it and deleted it from his phone and went to join his wife with a heavy heart\*\*\*

-----

TO BE CONTINUED.....

## CHAPTER 2

### WEEKS LATER

### MASAI NAIMA RAPULA

\*\*\* I’m sitting in the balcony at our apartment trying to make sense of what happened weeks back....i found out that my fiancé’s brother is actually some guy whom I once slept with and after he was done with me he kicked me out of his hotel room like I’m

some useless prostitute....The guy treated me like garbage and the worst part is he left his seed inside of me and I didn't even know.....yes we used a condom but few weeks later I found out I was pregnant and he was the only guy I slept with and before him I was single for 5 months.... Maybe the condom broke and he didn't tell me or he removed it I don't know what I know is he's the father unless I also got impregnated by the Holy Spirit..... ( sigh)

The way I was devastated after he treated me like trash I didn't even think of drinking morning after pills even though we used protection because those things aren't 100 percent safe....I'm here looking down at my son Khai and damn he looks like his father....i never thought I'll ever see him again....i only knew his name Alphalette I didn't know even where he's from and which tribe he's from...hell I didn't even know if he's South African or not cause we only spoke English even though it was brief before he f#ck!d my brains out the piece of sh!t didn't even have an accent....I'm sure if Stevens paid more attention in trying to build some sort of relationship or even made an effort in spending some time with Khai he would have seen his older brother in him....

Steven neh....eish we met 5 month ago and nigga decided to propose weeks back the same day he introduced me to his whole family officially....I swear I wanted to die there and then when I saw him....i wished the ground could open and I would gladly jump in and hide... ( sigh).....Another thing he's a fr#ak!n sangoma like a Gobela...a thokoza Mkhulu...yes I saw the beads but I didn't think he's a Sangoma cause even those who haven't been initiated wear them I mean some wear them for protection and I can't differentiate between a sangoma and an initiate and a random person who wears beads for protection.... and for as far as I know Sangomas are not supposed to look like that I mean hot....i didn't smell Mpepho or traditional herbs on him.....nikka smelled like million dollars...( sigh).....

Another thing that confuses me is he's a fr#ak!n Sangoma but he didn't know that he has a child out there....doesn't traditional healers have super powers to see the future or something...( sigh)....then there's Stevens how do I tell him that his brother is my son's

father well that's if he didn't put two and two together when I ran off after I saw baby daddy....i don't think he would want to marry me anymore....imagine having a child with one brother and getting married to another...( sigh)....yho Masai wa tla wa e baka( you just did the unthinkable)....

The door opened and I turned to look and Moera my twin sister walked in holding shopping bags...she puts them down and walked to us....she bend and kissed Khai's forehead....gosh she loves him and spoils him rotten so does his grandmother ( our crazy mom) and Hills our other sister not by blood though....Khai calls me mommy and Moera mama and he calls Hills Mamkhulu...he's a smart and clever child and I love him to bits I can't imagine my life without him\*\*\*

Moera: has it been long since a robetse ( he slept)

\*\*\*I just shook my head\*\*\*

Moera: keng o tsuputse ( why are you sulking)

Me: a ka tsupula ( im not sulking)

Moera: ok then why the long face

\*\*\*I rolled my eyes at her....mxm she can be a bore\*\*\*

Me: im just worried of how Steven will take or is taking the news that Khai is his brother's child

Moera: mxm oho....that one le bo yellow e kare guava ya go bola ( that yellow one that looks like a rotten guava) well im sure he already knows...i mean its been weeks and he still haven't called you....take your losses Masa and move on

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Me: he just need some time to calm down...i love him ok

Moera: mmmmh I also would love to wear nothing but expensive brands only but I can't afford to be broke so I settle for something affordable so don't tell me about that yellow one....

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes again\*\*\*

Me: what??...dude what does that got to do with what I said and you know we are privileged ...stop lying and being dramatic

Moera: I know it got nothing to do with what you said about RG but I made my point case closed

\*\*\*I just gave her the “wtf” look then I rolled my eyes....right then my phone rings and it’s Stevens....gosh my heart nearly stopped beating.....anyway I answered with my heart beating fast\*\*\*

Me: babe

\*\*\*Moera rolled her eyes and took Khai from me and walked inside\*\*\*

Stevens: hey

\*\*\*i heard him sigh\*\*\*

Me: I tried calling you

Stevens: I didn’t wanna talk to you

\*\*\*ouch\*\*\*

Stevens: are you ready to come clean

\*\*\*you know what let me get this over and done with\*\*\*

Me: ummm....there’s something you need to know

\*\*\*he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Stevens: im listening

\*\*\*I sighed...f#ck this is hard....i’m even shaking\*\*\*

Me: ummm your brother....he’s...he’s Khai’s father

\*\*\*silence\*\*\*

Stevens: tell me you’re not gonna tell him he’s the father

\*\*\*I frowned\*\*\*

Me: askies???

Stevens: dont tell him...please

\*\*\*I can’t believe this\*\*\*

Me: what do you mean I shouldn’t tell him Stevens....he’s Khai father for goodness sake and why don’t you sound surprised

Stevens: I’ll raise him as my own

\*\*\*he’s crazy this one\*\*\*

Me: you never showed interest in building a relationship with him and get to know him since we met and now just because he’s your brother’s son you wanna raise him as your own

Stevens: im not the one who’s wrong here... you have a f#ck#n child with my brother...i should be the one who’s angry!!!

\*\*\*he sounds pissed and I swallowed...i put the phone on loud speaker and put it on my lap and massaged the sides of my head....the stress is showing me flames\*\*\*

Stevens: this sh!t is gonna divide my family....how will it look you having a child with him and me marrying you....you're gonna be called names and sh!t....look you can't tell him I'll play a fatherly role towards your son and plus he's been doing good without a father in his life...why do you wanna disrupt his life huh

Me: you can't hide that he's his Steven....he looks like him and why don't you sound surprised

Steven: I put two and two together.....

Moera: f#tsek RG!! ( piss off RG)

\*\*\*I quickly turned and Moera looked angry...ok how long has she been standing there....she snatched the phone from me and turned the loud speaker off and put it on her ear....ooh Lord save me\*\*\*

Moera: sebete se se kana o se tsey a kae....who the f3ck are you.....bona moo jou hond Alphalette your brother will know that he has a son with Masa and if you cant accept that and love her regardless then fotsekela kwaa....o nagana gore kwena fela a naleng pipi molefatsheleng heh ( where do you get the nerve.... who the f3ck are you.... look here you dog Alphalette your brother will know that he has a son with Masa and if you cant accept that and love her regardless then f3ck off....you think you're the only one with a dick in the world)

Me: Moera!!!

Moera: hey don't start with me wena nxa....i see o nyako nnyela le mpya ee ya gao ( I see you wanna sh!t yourself with this dog of yours).... when it comes to AJ dont piss me off

\*\*\*it looks like Stevens said something to her and the insults that came out of her mouth were just too much for my ears\*\*\*

Moera: fots#ke le tlhogo ya le premature ( f3#k you with a premature head)

\*\*\*she threw the phone at me\*\*\*

Moera: im disappointed in you twinnie ....your child comes first not pipi ( a dick)...this sh!t you're doing ke desperation fela....i can't believe you

\*\*\*she gave me a nasty look and walked away and I sighed and took my phone and the call was dropped ( sigh)...she's right and deep down I know I would never deprive my son a chance to meet and know his father but I love Stevens and im scared that he will leave me....i have bad luck when it comes to relationships and everything was going well between us until I met his brother and realized that he's my mysterious baby daddy....Moera walked back to me ( ooh here we go again)\*\*\*

Moera: o sa nyako ng'gafisa wena wankutlwa....don't ever and I mean ever secure a dick ka AJ...e nne la bofelo....you don't wanna see the other side of me....o sa batla go ngferola dibete Masai....Phalette is off limits....i used to dislike him mara nou I hate him nxa ( don't make me go crazy you hear me....dont ever and I mean ever secure a dick AJ....it should be the last time....you don't wanna see the other side of me....dont make me mad Masai....Phalette is off limits.... i used to dislike him but now I hate him nxa) \*\*\*she walked away.... gosh she's mad..... no she's angry...(sigh) I rubbed my eyes they are painful...they usually get painful when I have a headache or im stressed\*\*\*

-----

## **THE FOLLOWING DAY**

### **MOERA ZAHRA RAPULA**

\*\*\* Im holding AJ and Masai is pushing the trolley we are at the grocery store and yes this twin of mine did apologize and she promised that she'll always put AJ first. She just needs some time to find a way and contact baby daddy and tell him the truth which wont be a problem cause I have people who can get me his contacts....Well she's still heart broken about the conversation she had with RG but she'll be fine....i pray that they break up for good cause he doesn't deserve her at all\*\*\*

Masai: so how was lunch with his brother...i never got to ask you about it

\*\*\*I sighed...well I went to have lunch with my late fiancé's elder brother Drench the last time I saw him was the day after we buried Alex he was assassinated on his way home from my place a year ago ( sigh) well he wasn't a guy who did legal things and so is his brother....i found out one day when we were being followed and he asked me to take the wheel and he took out a gun I didn't even know he owned and started shooting at the other car.... Well I broke up with him but nikka wouldn't let me be he kept pestering me until I gave him another chance and from there onward he taught me how to shoot and fight to protect myself...at least he promised to make sure I don't get to be part of

his other life and he kept his promise until they killed him in cold blood and even today I don't know who did it...i asked his brother and he just told me he took care of it and I shouldn't worry\*\*\*

Me: aarg just ok he was just checking up on me he was in town so...

\*\*\*I just shrugged my shoulders\*\*\*

Masai: mmmmh

Me: and what's that supposed to mean

Masai: after a year he calls you and wants to have lunch with you

Me: and what's wrong with that

Masai: no offense but you were engaged not married to his little brother so why is he checking up on you

\*\*\*she raised her eyebrow at me....mxm\*\*\*

Me: tsek

\*\*\*she laughed...mxm this idiot\*\*\*

Me: you can be an idiot sometimes

\*\*\*she continued to laugh until AJ shouted "papa papa" trying to get off my hold\*\*\*

Me: AJ what is it

\*\*\*he tried to wiggle out of my hold shouting "papa papa"\*\*\*

Voice: WHAT THE FUCK!!!

\*\*\*a deep scary male voice said and we both looked where it was coming from and we froze..." ooh shit" is what is playing in my head\*\*\*

AJ: papa

\*\*\*he was now crying....the guy looked at Masai and at AJ with a scary frown on his face\*\*\*

AJ: papa!!!

\*\*\*he walked closer and took AJ from me and this little betrayer wrapped his tiny hands around his neck and he rested his head on his shoulder sniffing\*\*\*

Him: what the hell is going on

\*\*\*he said looking at Masai...he looked shocked and I can also see some anger on his face\*\*\*

Me: she can explain

\*\*\*I was scared for my twinnie...she looked like she's about to faint...this nikka looks scary and intimidating...those dark eyes hide something sinister even that mole on his cheek even that mole on his cheek the dark color of his skin and the black and grayish

beard on his face made him an intimidating scary drop dead gorgeous handsome motherf#ck#r...( phweeeu)...out of the blue Masai ran away leaving me and her son alone with this handsome creep\*\*\*

Me: the F!!! No she didn't....oooh noo she didn't

Alphalette: what's all this....whats going on

\*\*\*I sighed.... yho I have a coward of a sister bathong...i breathed out looking at him\*\*\*

Me: Well he's your son and I swear she was about to tell you....she didn't know where to find you and when you finally met she was scared cause you are her fiancés brother...she didn't know how to approach you

\*\*\*i said that fast then i looked at this handsome tiny betrayer resting his head on his dad's shoulder like he has known him since he was inside Masa's belly( mxm never ever trust this gender)\*\*\*

Alphalette: call her and finish shopping we need to talk me and her

\*\*\*I just nodded and called her....who the f#ck run away and leaves her twin sister and child with a stranger....yho Masai!!! ( clap once) \*\*\*

-----

## **MASAI NAIMA RAPULA**

\*\*\*I don't know what happened but I just panicked and found myself rushing out of the shop...well more like running out of the shop I only snapped out of it when I was in the parking lot by Moera's car .... Gosh how can Khai do this to me....i wasn't ready....i just got off the call with Moera and I feel bad for leaving her and Khai alone with Alphalette....i just panicked....with a tail between my legs I went back....i got inside the store and searched for them and found Moera shopping and Khai was still in Alphalette's arms as he walked behind Moera....i swallowed hard and walked closer to them\*\*\*

Me: im sorry twinnie

\*\*\*she gave me a mean look then she shook her head ( eish)\*\*\*

Moera: lets finish up here so you two can go and talk



\*\*\*I swallowed nothing and nodded....i could feel his eyes on me but I couldn't even look at him....gosh im f#ck#d\*\*\*

-----

## **ALPHALETTE NTSAKO MABUNDA**

\*\*\*I can't believe this....i really can't believe this..... I have a son a whole son and to meet him for the first time in a grocery store is just....yah..... im looking at this woman and thinking about the time we f#ck#d and how I treated her....the fact that she kept the pregnancy even though she didn't have to just makes me respect her....After how I treated her she didn't have to keep the pregnancy but she did and made me a father....Well the signs were there the dreams and me hearing a child cry out loud out of the blue and when I look around there's no child in sight.....i just.....eish....i messed up pretty bad.....i don't even have a right to be mad at her we had a one night stand which was bad for her ( sigh)....yah neh life is messed up she's my baby mama and she's engaged to my younger brother...Anyway they paid for everything and her sister left\*\*\*

Me: let's go

Her: wh...where?

\*\*\*she looks scared\*\*\*

Me: to talk

\*\*\*the little man is sleeping peacefully in my arms\*\*\*

Her: we can sit in a restaurant and....talk

Me: no lets go

\*\*\*I went towards the parking and she followed behind me\*\*\*

Her: Alphalette i...i don't feel comfortable going with you....lets just go sit in the restaurant and talk please

\*\*\*I turned and looked at her\*\*\*

Me: whats making you uncomfortable

\*\*\*She swallowed\*\*\*

Her: please give me my son we will talk some other time

\*\*\*I chuckled\*\*\*

Me: he is our son....our son....i didn't abandoned you with him and it's not your fault that I wasn't there either so for peace to rein between us.... for his sake let's not act irrational

\*\*\*she just looked at me with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Me: now lets go talk then I'll drive you home

\*\*\* I continued to walk to where my car is leaving her standing there....i unlocked my car and opened the back seat door and waited for her....she looked angry ( well tough)....she reached the car and got in and I gave her the little man and closed the door and got inside the driver seat and off we went....

After some time we arrived and my remote controlled gate opened and I drove in and parked and I got out and opened her door and took the little man and walked inside while she followed me ....i went to the bedroom downstairs and put our son down and she came and put him in a comfortable position and we went back to the lounge and sat down\*\*\*

Me: something to drink

\*\*\*she just shook her head no ( sigh)....i went to pour her a glass of juice instead and took a bottle of beer for me and put the glass down on the coffee table in front of her and sat down then I sighed\*\*\*

Me: what's his name

\*\*\*she cleared her throat.... I could see that she looked uncomfortable she kept playing with her phone that's on her hands...as for me my mind is working overtime\*\*\*

Her: Al.....Alphalette Khai Rapula

\*\*\*I can't believe she named him after me....she should be hating me but she named our son after me.... Anyway i cleared my throat\*\*\*

Me: what's the story behind Khai

Her: my mother named her after our late father

\*\*\*I just nodded and opened the beer with my teeth and took a sip\*\*\*

Me: what happened to him...your father

\*\*\*she breathed out and blinked fast probably to fight back the tears\*\*\*

Her: died in a car accident along with my biological mother

\*\* she sighed...ohhh so the mother she talked about is not her biological mother...mmmh ok\*\*\*

-----

## SHALATE HILLS MTHEMBU

Tarek: look I love you babe....i live for you nana...im doing this for us...i did this for us...i love you believe me

\*\*\*I just looked at him....my face is filled with tears and I keep on wiping my snort with my shirt....i cant believe he did this to me I love this man with everything in me and he do me like this....i didn't even see the signs.... I almost died on our wedding day because of him now he hurt me by bringing a third party into our lives our marriage.....this piece of sh!t cheated and got the side dish pregnant and now he wants to take her as the second wife knowing fully well that I can't carry a baby to full term because on our wedding day I was shot by his ex....well she wanted to shoot him and I stood in front of him....now I regret it she should've killed him instead this world would be a better place without him.....he confessed last night and ive just been in hell since then at first I thought its a prank but its not...im hurt beyond measure I feel like my heart will stop beating any minute now....i feel like im about to run mad....i raised my head and looked at him\*\*\*

Me: I'll never forgive you for this

Tarek: bambo lwam look we...we can make it work I promised you...we will

\*\*\*i cant believe this man\*\*\*

Me: I want a divorce

\*\*\*his eyes popped out and I saw his hands start to shake\*\*\*

Tarek: that will never happen....mina nawe sohlukani swa ukufa Shalate!!! ( only death will break us apart Shalate)

\*\*\*more tears gushed out\*\*\*

Me: I WANT A DIVORCE TAREK MTHEMBU....I WANT IT NOW....IM DONE....IM DONE....I ENDURED A LOT FOR YOU....YOUR MOTHER HATES ME SHE EVEN INSULTS MY LATE MOTHER EVERY CHANCE SHE GET JUST BECAUSE I FAIL TO

MAKE YOU A FATHER....IM DONE.....THERE'S NO COMING BACK FROM THIS....I  
GIVE UP....IM DONE!!!

\*\*\*i shouted at him\*\*\*

Tarek: NGEKE UYITHOLE KIMI....NGEKE!!! ( you'll never get from  
me...never!!!)...YOU ARE MY WIFE AND IT WILL REMAIN LIKE THAT UNTIL  
UMVELINQANGI ( GOD) REMEMBERS ONE OF US EVEN AT THAT YOU'LL STILL  
REMAIN MY WIFE EVEN IN DEATH!!!

Me: I HATE YOU....GET THE F#CK OUT....GET OUT NJA DINI....I'LL NEVER  
FORGIVE YOU FOR THIS....NEVER!!!

\*\*\*I said crying out loud and he just walked away looking angry leaving me crying my  
lungs out....he just hurt me beyond repair and he still has the guts to shout and look  
angry....f#ck him!....he hurt me deeply....i love him I gave him my all and I trusted him  
and now he's doing me like this....he's breaking me like this.....how dare he....after  
everything we've been through....after all the promises and pledges he made to me he  
breaks me like this\*\*\*

-----

## **MASAI NAIMA RAPULA**

\*\*\*my phone ring as Alphalette is busy talking to whomever on the phone and its Moera  
again so I answered\*\*\*

Me: twinnie

Moera: are you and AJ still ok

\*\*\*i sighed\*\*\*

Me: yeah

Moera: ok call me if something happens for now im going to see Hills she sounded a bit  
off over the phone

\*\*\*i just frowned....i hope its nothing serious\*\*\*

Me: ok keep me updated

Moera: sure

\*\*\*we ended the call\*\*\*

Alpha: sorry about that....

\*\*\*he said sitting down\*\*\*

Alpha: twins

\*\*\* ooh he's done with his phone call ....anyway I nodded\*\*\*

Alpha: who's the oldest

Me: her

\*\*\*he nodded\*\*\*

Alpha: I could tell....so does Stevens know

\*\*\*i swallowed hard looking down\*\*

Me: y...yeah

Alpha: mmhhh

\*\*\* then silence.....he then he got up again and put the bottle on top of the coffee table then came towards me....gosh my heart is even beating fast....he reached out his big hand to me and he indicated that I should take it and I swallowed nothing and slowly put my hand on his and he helped me up then out of the blue he pulled me into his broad and muscled chest and he held me and I just stood there shocked\*\*\*

Him: thank you for keeping the pregnancy...thank you for making me a father and im sorry for all the pain I caused you....i hope one day you'll forgive me

\*\*\*what the.....did he just.....ummm yho\*\*\*

-----

**TO BE CONTINUED....**

## CHAPTER 03

JABU

\*\*\* I can't believe Sbu did that I didn't even know he had it in him (sigh)...im just glad my brothers took care of everything and they even dealt with the police that were called by the noisy neighbors....After Ruslan wiped out the scene where Sbu shot Amo from her brain they took her to the hospital....What baffles me is that uSbu doesn't even show

remorse for what he did.....Heath talked to him and what he found out shocked everyone....he said Sbu said she deserves it and more for having Lile killed and that's when we knew that he heard us talking I even told my brothers that we should also wipe Sbu's memory about that shooting scene and Ruslan said even if he does it will turn my boy into an angry human being cause he's not remorseful and there's just too much anger in him so he needs to let go of that anger and see that what he did is wrong then he can wipe off that scene

Things are still bad on my side all I do is drink to numb the pain I still can't believe that my little girl is gone just like that....i can't seem to accept it in fact I know I never will she was killed in cold blood ( swallowed teary)....i wish I can turn back the hands of time and leave Amo like I was told to do....i wish I listened to everyone who warned me about her recent change of attitude\*\*\*

Heath: you know berve is not a solution right

\*\*\*he said walking in\*\*\*

Me: just let me mourn for my princess in peace joh

\*\*\*I heard him sigh....he's been there in fact all of them are there for me but all I want is to be on my own but hei these snamnams ( fools) don't care they are all up in my face saying they don't want me to be alone nxa\*\*\*

Heath: while you're busy mourning our princess don't forget about our prince he also needs his father more especially after what he did

Me: uzoba right (he'll be fine)....angithi he knows how to aim a gun and shoot in cold blood so uzoba right

\*\*\*I said dismissively\*\*\*

Heath: f#tsek....you're talking rubbish now msunu wakho nxa ( you cunt)

\*\*\*he walked away looking pissed mxm....i continued to drink my beer with my princess's face plastered in my mind....fuck.... tears gushed out of my eyes as my mind went to how I found her body covered in blood on her bed\*\*\*

-----

## NARRATION

\*\*\*Kenny slammed into her and filled the condom with his semen and he kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Kenny: thank you sthandwa sam ( my love)

\*\*\*he said smiling at her and she smiled back at him....he pulled out slowly and laid next to her and pulled her to his chest and held her\*\*\*

Kenny: do you have second thoughts about giving us a chance

\*\*\*She sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: im just scared of what people will say more especially your family

Kenny: well I don't care what people will say as long as I have you by my side nothing else matters

\*\*\*she snuggled closer feeling loved...she was still heartbroken by Jabu's words but she told herself that she wont dwell on what happened even though it hurt to hear him blaming her for her daughter's death...she still cant believe Jabulile is gone just like that\*\*\*

Lolly: you do know they gonna call me names right

Kenny: and people will lose their teeth

\*\*\*she laughed and he joined her\*\*\*

Lolly: you're crazy

Kenny: in love with you yeah

\*\*\*she blushed and he kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Lolly: why did I end up with him and not you

\*\*\*Kenny sighed\*\*\*

Kenny: because I was too much into making money and making uthaima ( father) proud that I forgot to live a little

\*\*\*He sighed\*\*\*

Kenny: im just sorry that I wasn't there to protect you.....

\*\*\*he kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Kenny: but im here now and I won't let anything happen to you

\*\*\*she sighed not saying anything then her phone rang she reached for it and it was Sbu calling her and she quickly answered sitting up\*\*\*

Lolly: Sbu hey

Sbu: h..hi sisLolly

Lolly: umm are you ok

\*\*\*he sounded a bit off\*\*\*

Sbu: umm....whe...when are you coming this side sisLolly

\*\*\*she frowned\*\*\*

Lolly: umm im not sure...what's wrong...are you ok....did something happen

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Lolly: Sbu??

Sbu: I need to talk to you and not over the phone...i....

\*\*\*He then sniffed\*\*\*

Sbu: please make time and come this side sisLolly

\*\*\*her heart is now beating fast\*\*\*

Lolly: ok I'll come this Friday how's that

Sbu: ok

Lolly: Sbu what's wrong....are you ok

Sbu: i....i did something bad

Lolly: ok ok I'll come on Friday and we ummm we will talk about it ok

Sbu: ok

Lolly: ok I'll check on you later ok

Sbu: ok

\*\*\*they ended the call and she breathed out\*\*\*

Kenny: what's wrong

Lolly: its Sbu Jabu's son....something happened and....he just sounded off

Kenny: why is he calling you....where is his father and other family members

\*\*\*she looked at him with a raised eyebrow\*\*\*

Lolly: maybe he chooses to trust me instead of them

Kenny: I don't feel comfortable with this Lorraine.....he knows you're far and now you gonna go there where else we should be spending time together this weekend....you know I planned this weekend for us to get to know each other some more

\*\*\*Lorraine breathed out getting off the bed\*\*\*

Kenny: uyaphi manje (where are you going now)

Lolly: my place

\*\*\*she said picking her clothes and getting dressed and Kenny sighed\*\*\*

Kenny: are you angry at me now



Lolly: nope I just....

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: Sbu is a good boy Kenny....respectful and kind....his family helped me a great deal....if it wasn't for them especially Jabu Heath and his grandmother we wouldn't have found my brother's body....and now Sbu wants help from me. I can't believe you somehow feel entitled to choose who I should help and who I shouldn't ....Sbu is family to me and if you don't get that then angazi ( I don't know)

\*\*\*Kenny sighed getting out of bed and he took off the condom on his now flaccid manhood and he reached for a tissue and wrapped it with it\*\*\*

Kenny: look I don't feel entitled or anything like that....my question is would you feel happy if I cancel on us and go help some boy or girl in another province...a boy that has a father and other family members who can help him

Lolly: he trusted me Kenneth

\*\*\*she said defensively\*\*\*

Kenny: then what about me...what about us...this weekend heh

\*\*\*he said getting pissed off\*\*\*

Kenny: I planned this weekend for us....everything is paid and now you're dropping everything to go help a boy that you are not even related to.....you wanted this to work...we promised that we will give this our all and already im being sidelined and not made a priority

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Kenny: you could've forced him to tell you over the phone and helped him resolve it over the phone or suggested to call his father or uncles or something but not what you just did as if I mean nothing to you

\*\*\*she swallowed looking at him....he looked angry she watched him picking his underwear and walking to the bathroom\*\*\*

Kenny: lock the door on your way out

\*\*\*she swallowed hard as tears filled her eyes then she picked her handbag and walked out....inside the bathroom Kenny clenched his jaws trying to calm himself down....he didn't have a problem with the boy but he has a problem with his father and uncle....what the grandmother said that time still stuck with him and he told himself that if she agrees to be his he'll make sure she stays away from them especially Jabu\*\*\*

Kenny: damn it

\*\*\*he said feeling frustrated and he got inside the shower\*\*\*

-----

## ALPHALETTE'S HOUSE

### NARRATION

\*\*\* At 3 in the morning he was already awake busy mixing herbs he's gonna use to help Kgosi his friend and patient with he finished mixing the herbs humming his favorite ancestral song and he went to the room Kgosi was sleeping in and he stood by the bed looking at him....he could see he was restless in his sleep and he felt sorry for him cause he's been through hell and back and still he's going through hell now\*\*\*

Kgosi: take a picture it lasts longer

Alpha: nx I thought you're sleeping

Kgosi: how can I sleep when all you smell like is ditlhare ( herbs)

\*\*\*Alphalette chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: get up and shower soon we will leave for the river to cleanse you

\*\*\*Kgosi sighed sitting up\*\*\*

Alpha: ooh and your brother is waiting outside the yard looking angry....he needs to chill and rest in peace this thing of him meddling in lovers quarrels is not on....why cant he behave like other ancestors

\*\*\*he shook his head heading for the door\*\*\*

Alpha: im still saying it again....vanhu va levukosini va karata na swipoko swakona ( royalty people are troublesome even their ghosts)

\*\*\*he walked out and Kgosi sighed...he got out of bed and went to the en-suite and took a shower\*\*\*

## AT THE RIVER

\*\*\* Alphalette mixed coins with muthi in a plastic bowl chanting then he threw them inside the flowing water then he stood there quietly....then out of the blue strong wind started blowing around them then they heard a defining sound coming from the bushes that surrounds the river...it was a swarm of bees flying towards them at high speed\*\*\*  
Alphalette: do not panic and don't I repeat.... don't let your other personalities take over or all this will be for nothing

\*\*\*Kgosi swallowed hard as the bees surrounded them making bone chilling noise....they surrounded them for some time until they flew away from them and Kgosi breathed out loud relieved and they waited....after a minute or so a huge snake slid out of the water and Kgosi held his pee tight as it was about to come out as fear crept in while Alphalette knelt on the ground with his head bowed ....it slithered towards Kgosi and that pee he was holding ran down his legs as he visibly shook\*\*\*

Kgosi: ooh God...ooh God...Alphalette.....

\*\*\*he whispered and tried to call Alphalette ....it surrounded him looking scary then it raised its head facing him and it opened its mouth wide right on his face and Kgosi fainted\*\*\*

-----

## SHALATE ( HILLS)

\*\*\*My heart is bleeding and I keep asking myself if im dreaming or what....i can't believe Tarek is doing this to me. I can't believe he chooses to break me like this

Sponsored

AD

I repeat.... don't let your other personalities take over or all this will be for nothing

\*\*\*Kgosi swallowed hard as the bees surrounded them making bone chilling noise....they surrounded them for some time until they flew away from them and Kgosi breathed out loud relieved and they waited....after a minute or so a huge snake slid out of the water and Kgosi held his pee tight as it was about to come out as fear crept in

while Alphalette knelt on the ground with his head bowed ....it slithered towards Kgosi and that pee he was holding ran down his legs as he visibly shook\*\*\*

Kgosi: ooh God...ooh God...Alphalette.....

\*\*\*he whispered and tried to call Alphalette ....it surrounded him looking scary then it raised its head facing him and it opened its mouth wide right on his face and Kgosi fainted\*\*\*

-----

## SHALATE ( HILLS)

\*\*\*My heart is bleeding and I keep asking myself if im dreaming or what....i can't believe Tarek is doing this to me. I can't believe he chooses to break me like this I have given this man my heart body and soul and he just hurts me like I mean nothing to him\*\*\*

Moera: ha'ah Hills....you won't kill yourself because of a man

\*\*\*she said walking from the kitchen and I wiped my tears off with my shirt she's been with me since I called her here....she's my best friend and sister along with her twin sister Masai well Masai is more like our younger sister since Moera is the eldest and im older than both them\*\*\*

Me: it hurts Mo

Moera: I know baby trust me I know...i just wish I can take away your pain

\*\*\*She said with a pained look on her face\*\*\*

Me: how can he do me like this Mo....all I've ever done is love him Mo....i gave him my whole heart and he do me like this

Moera: he's a selfish pig that's why....he's just lucky you still love him or else he would be Hitler's bitch in hell by now

\*\*\*trust me she means it...Moera is...yah I'll just leave it at that...anyway I just wiped my falling tears...Tarek has hurt me beyond repair...right then the door opened and the devil himself walked in I just felt my heart beating fast as anger filled me up....i heard Moera chuckling next to me....well she hates him....she always felt he's not good enough for me and I think he just proved her right\*\*\*

Tar: hi

Moera: a re nyai nxa ( he's saying nyai nxa)

\*\*\*she got up and went back to the kitchen....he sighed and came towards me\*\*\*

Tar: ofcourse you would call her when we are having problems in our marriage

\*\*\*I just chuckled nx.....this man is testing me for real\*\*\*

Me: problems Tarek???

Tar: look sthandwa sam

Me: don't call me that

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Tar: I know you don't see it now but im doing this for us....please just trust me

Me: leave my sight Tarek

\*\*\*I said not even looking at him and I heard him sighing\*\*\*

Tar: I love you mkami....kakhulu futhi ( I love you my wife...alot)

Me: mxm

Tar: I'll let all this disrespect go cause you're hurt but don't make it a habit cause next time I won't be this understanding

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone\*\*\*

Moera: kolobe ya no decid(a) go nona mo pelaka ( a pig just decided to get fatter in front of me)

\*\*\*she said standing by the kitchen entrance....she looks pissed\*\*\*

Tar: this is my house Moera in fact I think you should leave you have no business with my marital affairs

Moera: well tough cause this is my sister's house as much as its yours

\*\*\*she said with an attitude\*\*\*

Tar: she's not your f#ck#n sister!!!

\*\*\*he shouted\*\*

Moera: and you're not man enough...your point Mr manwhore???

\*\*\*she said with an attitude\*\*\*

Tar: what did you call me

\*\*\*he said walking towards her ready to do something he'll probably regret and I got up...i need to stop this before all hell break loose\*\*\*

Me: STOP...STOP IT YOU TWO!!!

\*\*\*Tar stopped walking looking angry while Mo just stood there unbothered\*\*\*

Moera: THE REASON SHE CANT GIVE YOU A CHILD IS BECAUSE SHE SAVED YOUR UNGRATEFUL A\$\$....O UNGRATEFUL WENA.....SHE SHOULD'VE LET YOU DIE I'M SURE SHE WOULD BE HAPPILY MARRIED WITH HER OWN KIDS AND A LOVING AND FAITHFUL HUSBAND BY NOW AND NOT DEALING WITH BOFEBE BA GAO ( with your whoring ways)

Tar: I want her out of my house Shalate right this minute!!!

\*\*\*he said pointing at her looking angry and I just breathed out...i don't need this...he walked away and I just sat down feeling overwhelmed and I heard Moera sigh\*\*\*

Moera: I'm sorry you're hurting but im not sorry for telling him the truth....you got shot and I kept quiet....her mother treats you like sh!t and I kept quiet cause they are your in laws but enough is enough Shalate....enough is enough....ga o chiwana ( you're not a orphan) you have a family and it kills me whenever I see you trying to hide your pain with your smile....it kills me Hills

\*\*\*tears ran down my cheeks and a loud sob left my mouth\*\*\*

Moera: I'll leave.... but I'll be back when he's not around

\*\*\*I just shook my head\*\*\*

Me: don't go....please

Moera: i keep on pissing him off Hills even though I hate him but you still love him so I cant punch him as of yet so its just a bad idea for me to stay here and FYI ma needs to know about whats going on

\*\*\*I just laid on the couch and closed my eyes....i have a terrible headache I have been betrayed and my sister wants to choke slam my husband...this is my life \*\*\*

-----

NARRATED

AT THE RIVER

\*\*\*Kgosi woke up when water was splashed on his face...he gasped for air and Alphalette pulled him up and he stumbled a bit and he finally found his balance\*\*\*

Kgosi: wh...what happened

Alpha: you fainted

\*\*\*Kgosi frowned then he remembered the snake\*\*\*

Kgosi: the..the huge snake

Alphalette: it went to feed....she permitted us to use the water while she goes to feed ...come

\*\*\*Kgosi looked around....he cant believe he's still alive it was about to eat him....anyway he followed Alphalette inside the water forgetting that he wet his pants\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*they are now in the woods and Kgosi is kneeling on the ground facing down as him and Alphalette pray...after praying Alphalette started chanting ancestral chants summoning Richard to join them then all of a sudden Kgosi felt the hair on the back of his head standing and his shoulders getting heavier and heavier and a sudden headache pounced on him and Alphalette stopped chanting\*\*\*

Alpha: he's here

\*\*\*Kgosi looked around but he didn't see him but he could feel someone or something standing behind him...his heart beat so fast he thought it would explode\*\*\*

Alpha: don't be scared...he's angry but he's your brother your blood....now talk to him....open up to him be free

\*\*\*Kgosi swallowed hard then he sighed\*\*\*

Kgosi: Tirelo.....

\*\*\*he then sighed again feeling emotional\*\*\*

Kgosi: I...i have a multiple personality disorder and its messing with my life....i have killed people to survive and now one of the personalities Saddam slept with Bothale and that's gonna hurt Dineo when she finds out...she's gonna leave me

\*\*\*he swallowed painfully\*\*\*

Kgosi: I love her Tirelo

\*\*\*wind started blowing around them violently\*\*\*

Alpha: don't stop

Kgosi: im sure you now know that she's my chosen one....but I made her angry and hurt her feelings cause I couldn't sleep with her.....i couldn't cause I felt guilty Tirelo....i wanted confirmation in a way that you are blessing our union....i felt like sleeping with her will be me spitting on your grave and memory...i wanted a sign that you're blessing us I didn't mean to make her angry I just....

\*\*\*he swallowed hard as tears gushed out falling on the ground\*\*\*

Kgosi: I miss you....i miss you so much....i wish I was the one that got killed and not you....i wish I can take your place.....Gauta will grow up without you.....you didn't deserve to die Tee....you didn't deserve to die

\*\*\*he said crying then the wind stopped\*\*\*

Kgosi: I act strong but im not bro.... im dying inside....i fought to come back to my family and you were killed before we can even reconnect....i feel empty at the same time im angry...im mad angry at our ancestors for letting you die like that

\*\*\*he continued to cry\*\*\*

Alpha: Richard

\*\*\*he said looking at him and Richie was crying too\*\*\*

Alpha: now you know what he's been through....he's not the same man anymore...he's broken....he survived death and he also had to fight to come home to you and the rest of your family....even now he's still trying to adjust to his new normal being having multiple personalities that mess up his life sometimes....dealing with your death and also being strong for everyone....he's only human man and the is so much he can take

\*\*\*Richie's ghost looked down\*\*\*

Alpha: forgive him for hurting...what's her name

Kgosi: Dineo

\*\*\*he said and sniffed wiping his face\*\*\*

Alpha: Dineo and give him a sign that you're blessing their union and continue protecting them

Kgosi: im sorry bro....i love Dineo with all my heart and I promise to love them unconditionally and also take care of her and Gauta

Alpha: and stop meddling in their affairs....couples fight all the time....after this talk you need to rest in peace and let Dineo go...your daughter is in safe hands and you know it so rest and let your brother handle things....when he needs help he'll call you



Kgosi: and im gonna find Collins and after im done dealing with him im gonna marry Dineo and we gonna raise Gauta together but I need your blessing bro...i don't wanna feel like im betraying you cause Cole told me how much you loved or love her....at the same time I don't wanna compete for her....i want her to be mine and mine alone  
\*\*\*then silence.....then Kgosi felt a hand or something that felt like a hand on his shoulder and he froze\*\*\*

Alpha: relax its him.... he says that's a sign that he's blessing your union and that...

Alpha: he's no longer angry at you....

Alpha: he says he loves you and that you should take care of his daughter and baby mama

\*\*\*Kgosi's tears gushed out and he cried painfully\*\*\*

Alpha: and he says about Collins...he says he's in plain sight....he said you should look at obvious places....he's right under your nose

\*\*\*Kgosi wiped his tears after he calmed down and he frowned as Richie pulled his hand back\*\*\*

Alpha: he's leaving...

\*\*\*Richard started walking towards the light but then he stopped but he didn't turn\*\*\*

Alpha: he says good luck with Dineo cause you're gonna need it...

\*\*\*Alpha looked at Kgosi frowning\*\*\*

Kgosi: what is it

Alpha: he's laughing busy saying you're gonna need it

\*\*\*then Richard disappeared into the light\*\*\*

Alpha: he's gone

\*\*\*Kgosi got up\*\*\*

Alpha: lets go....remember don't look back

\*\*\*they walked out of the woods and got inside the car and drove off\*\*\*

Alpha: ok what's wrong with Dineo....why was your brother laughing at you like that

\*\*\*Kgosi sighed brushing his head roughly\*\*\*

Kgosi: she's crazy...when she finds out about Botlhale all hell will break loose

\*\*\*Alphalette laughed his ass off\*\*\*

Alpha: well then good luck cause you're gonna need it

Kgosi: mxm

\*\*\*Alphalette chuckled\*\*\*

-----

TO BE CONTINUED....

## CHAPTER 04

AT JABU'S HOUSE

NARRATED

Jabu: you sure she won't remember that Sbu is the one that shot her  
\*\*\*its only now he's asking about her and whether erasing her mind worked or  
not....he's been dealing with his daughter's death that he never cared about anything  
else\*\*\*

Ray: Ruu said she won't.... she was told that fake Christian is the one that send people  
to shot her as soon as she woke up

\*\*\*Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: ok.... So how did her mother take the news

Ray: she just cried and emphasized on how much she warned her bla bla  
bla.....anyway you good

Jabu: aah I'll be fine....how is Mj I heard he broke his leg

Ray: mxm that mumu ( fool) he'll be fine....MJ is troublesome and dad can't handle him  
anymore... as soon as he finishes writing he's coming this side so I can keep a close  
eye on him

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: now on a serious note.... how are you doing

\*\*\*Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: taking it one day at a time

Ray: that's good...that's good and Sbu how is he

\*\*\*Jabu sighed again\*\*\*

Jabu: he's locking himself in his room and doesn't talk to anyone....i don't know what to do anymore Big Ray....he goes to see the therapist we got for him and he just sits there and say nothing until the session ends....i know I've been upset and sh!t but....

\*\*\*Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Ray: im worried about him man.....something needs to be done before he does something bad to himself

Jabu: yeah....i don't even wanna sit him down and talk to him cause it ends up in a fight so yah

Ray: you're also going through a lot man

Jabu: even Mshikaro has failed to make him talk or see that what he did was wrong

Ray: all will be well bros...

Jabu: yeah I'll believe it when I see it happening

\*\*\*Ray sighed....well they talked some more\*\*\*

-----

## AT ALPHALETTE'S HOUSE

\*\*\*They just finished eating and now Kgosi went to lie down a bit and Alphalette is in his Ndumba ( ancestral hut) meditating when it suddenly became quiet and he slowly opened his eyes cause he could feel he wasn't alone anymore\*\*\*

Alpha: Kokwana wa xinuna ( grandfather)

\*\*\*he said bowing his head\*\*\*

Granddad: U kwihi ntukulu wa mehe wa xinuna ( where is my grandson)

Alpha: wihi Kokwana ( which one grandfather)

Granddad: ngwana wa wehe (your child)

\*\*\*Alpha swallowed\*\*\*

Alpha: U na manana wa yehe ( he's with his mother)

\*\*\*the grandfather looked at him and shook his head\*\*\*

Granddad: Hikokwalaho ka yini u hlwerisa Ntsako heh? ( why are you delaying Ntsako)

Alpha: Ndzi ta ngutivisa Kokwana ( I'll introduce him granddad)

Granddad: U sinyu nkarhi man.....U lava ko vona yini!! ( you are wasting time...what do you want to see )

\*\*\*he said with a firm tone\*\*\*

Alpha: Na metwa Kokwana ndzi ta ngutivisa( I hear you granddad I'll introduce him )

Granddad: daas right yi sona ( alright)

\*\*\*then he disappeared and Alphalette sighed rubbing his face....he took his phone and made a call\*\*\*

Voice: Tivula rha mehe ( my first born)

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: Mhani (mom) how are you

Mother: ngiyaphila wena sthandwa sam ( im good and you my love)

Alpha: roku rixaku mhani ( im good mom)

\*\*\*he didn't sound convincing.....he sighed rubbing his head\*\*\*

Ma: wenzeni ( what did you do)

Alpha: I come bearing good and bad news Ma

\*\*\*she kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Ma: are you sick??

Alpha: I never get sick Ma you know that

Ma: then what is it

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: you remember I told you that the ancestors said i have a boy child out there

\*\*\*she kept quiet a bit\*\*

Ma: yes...tell me you have found him

Alpha: he actually found me

Ma: heh....how old is he for him to find you

Alpha: one year three months or four

Ma: heh

Alpha: you know the mother Ma

Ma: I do??? Who's that

\*\*\*Alphalette swallowed hard\*\*\*

Alpha: I met her two years ago and we ummm...

\*\*\*he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Alpha: yeah and I kicked her out like she meant nothing....i treated her like garbage  
Ma....i wasn't on the right state of mind it was that time I found out about Stevens and  
Helga so I just wanted to offload but I ended up leaving my seed in her

Ma: why are you beating around the bush...who is she Ntsako

Alpha: Masai

Ma: who's Masai....i only know the Masaai people in Kenya...or you impregnated a  
foreigner Ntsako

Alpha: im talking about Masai Steven's fiancé

Ma: ithi uyadlala ( say you are kidding)

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: im not... im just glad she didn't abort ma I mean she didn't even know where to  
find me and she still kept the baby makes her amazing in my eyes

\*\*\*his mother didn't say anything\*\*\*

Alpha: she's not playing us and she's not moving from one brother to the other so don't  
be hard on her

Ma: so thats why she ran away that day.....does Steve know

Alpha: yes

Ma: no wonder he's hardly home since the engagement party

Ma: what's his response...i hope you two didn't fight

Alpha: I don't know I haven't spoken to him

Ma: as if you would mxm....yazi you two will kill me with a heart attack....yho yaqala  
inkatazo manje ( now trouble has started)

Alpha: I didn't plan this Ma....i met her two years ago unlike him who slept and  
impregnated my then fiancée

Ma: now I see why you're telling me all this over the phone....mxm im too old for this

\*\*\*then she dropped the call and Alphalette breathed out\*\*\*

## IN KGOSI'S BEDROOM

Kgosi: what did she say...

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Kgosi: did she ask about me

\*\*\*Cole kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Kgosi: so she didn't

Cole: she's still a bit out of it and she was worried about Gauta

Kgosi: what did the doctor say

\*\*\*he said changing the topic\*\*\*

Cole: she's gonna be fine and so will the princess

Kgosi: that's good and how's Gorata

Cole: she's getting discharged tomorrow

Kgosi: that's good

Cole: and the paw-paw were here asking questions

Sponsored

AD

I mean she didn't even know where to find me and she still kept the baby makes her amazing in my eyes

\*\*\*his mother didn't say anything\*\*\*

Alpha: she's not playing us and she's not moving from one brother to the other so don't be hard on her

Ma: so that's why she ran away that day.....does Steve know

Alpha: yes

Ma: no wonder he's hardly home since the engagement party

Ma: what's his response...i hope you two didn't fight

Alpha: I don't know I haven't spoken to him

Ma: as if you would mxm....yazi you two will kill me with a heart attack....yho yaqala inkatazo manje ( now trouble has started)

Alpha: I didn't plan this Ma....i met her two years ago unlike him who slept and impregnated my then fiancée

Ma: now I see why you're telling me all this over the phone....mxm im too old for this

\*\*\*then she dropped the call and Alphalette breathed out\*\*\*

IN KGOSI'S BEDROOM

Kgosi: what did she say...

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Kgosi: did she ask about me

\*\*\*Cole kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Kgosi: so she didn't

Cole: she's still a bit out of it and she was worried about Gauta

Kgosi: what did the doctor say

\*\*\*he said changing the topic\*\*\*

Cole: she's gonna be fine and so will the princess

Kgosi: that's good and how's Gorata

Cole: she's getting discharged tomorrow

Kgosi: that's good

Cole: and the paw-paw were here asking questions they asked Gorata some questions and they said they'll come tomorrow to talk to Dee

Kgosi: mxm those stupid fools....they called me on my way here....nx as if they'll even search for Collins or find him

Cole: we will find him don't worry

Kgosi: Tirelo said he's in plain sight....we should look at obvious places

Cole: so you two talked

Kgosi: yeah sort of

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Kgosi: it was intense and scary man.....i'll tell you all about it when we meet

Cole: damn

Kgosi: I swear Alpha wa loya man...struu ( alpha is a wizard)

\*\*\*Cole laughed\*\*\*

Kgosi: I swear to you

Cole: I need to see this guy

Kgosi: you wouldn't tell he's a sangoma but the sh!t he does

\*\*\*he whistled and Cole laughed\*\*\*

Cole: so Richie blessed yall

\*\*\*Kgosi sighed\*\*\*

Kgosi: yeah

Cole: that's good...ooh before I forget the King was asking about you

Kgosi: I'll call him....how are things at the royal homestead

Cole: sad mfowethu....Mmapula's daughters are walking corpses

Kgosi: Motlalepula man not Mmapula

Cole: six no nine kuya fana ( same thing)

\*\*\*Kgosi chuckled....anyway they talked some more until they ended the call then Alpha knocked and walked in\*\*\*

Alpha: you need to start with meditation

Kgosi: heh...mediwhat?...i don't do those yoga things nna....im a straight dude

Alpha: eish yah neh....ignorant and foolish people of high status

\*\*\*he shook his head and walked in closing the door\*\*\*

Kgosi: se se salang im not doing yoga finish.... ga ke tlo donosa (im not about to stick my ass out) in questionable positions wearing tights

Alpha: o xedayela....xe namnam ( you're a fool)

Kgosi: tsek!!

\*\*\*Alpha laughed sitting on the bed so he can explain \*\*\*

-----

LORRAINE MPOFU

\*\*\*I took a deep breath as we approached Jabu's place cause I don't know what to expect not from Sbusiso but from Jabu....i just hope he doesn't kick me out cause that would be embarrassing and a bummer for Sbu cause he sounded like something big is bothering him....the car stopped and the uber driver turned and looked at me\*\*\*

Driver this is the address mam

Me: yeah ummm please wait a bit and let me check if there's someone inside

\*\*\*he nodded and I got out and went closer to the gate and pressed the intercom....rich peoples things in the township....mmmh\*\*\*

Voice: yah

\*\*\*ooh Lord he's home\*\*\*

Me: hi its Lorraine

Jabu: heh??

Me: umm its Lorraine



\*\*\*I saw the gate opening....ummm ohk....i went to the driver and thanked him whilst paying him and I took out my bag and walked in....as im approaching the door it opened and there he is....damn he looks like sh!t\*\*\*

Me: hi

\*\*\*you can see he's shocked to see me\*\*\*

Jabu: hey...come in

\*\*\*I walked in and we went to the lounge and I put my hand bag on my lap and my traveling bag on the floor\*\*\*

Jabu: you look good

\*\*\*ummm ohk\*\*\*

Me: thanks....well you look rough

\*\*\*he chuckled....wow I never thought we would ever be this awkward towards each other\*\*\*

Jabu: life happened

\*\*\*he shrugged his shoulders\*\*\*

Me: im... im sorry for your loss

\*\*\*I hope I don't open his healing wounds....well that's if they have started healing\*\*\*

Jabu: sho

\*\*\*then silence...ohk this is awkward yho\*\*\*

Me: ummm im here to see Sbu is he in

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Jabu: umm yeah...why...is everything ok

Me: im about to find out

\*\*\*he gave me a confused look\*\*\*

Me: he called me sounding hurt or sad....he asked me when im coming this side and since I won't be around by the weekend I thought I should come today instead

\*\*\*ok why am I explaining myself like this....his mother walked in from the backyard wiping her hands and when her eyes landed on me she smiled widely and I returned the smile getting up and we met half way and hugged\*\*\*

Ma: how are you ntombi

Me: ngiyaphila ma...nina ninjani ( im good ma...how are you)

Ma: mxm....

\*\*\*she said shaking her head looking sad\*\*\*

Ma: aah.... im taking it one day at a time

\*\*\*then she looked at Jabu\*\*\*

Ma: did you offer her something to drink Jabulani

Jabu: she knows where the kitchen is ma

\*\*\*wow...ohk....he said getting up\*\*\*

Jabu: you can go check on him in his room

Ma: Jabulani!!!

\*\*\*she warned him but he just walked away...ohk I need to see Sbu and leave this place\*\*\*

Me: let me go see Sbu ma

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Ma: don't mind him....he's..

Me: don't worry ma I understand...let me go see Sbu

\*\*\*I said stopping her and she nodded looking sad and I went up\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED

\*\*\* Lorraine knocked on the door and Sbu told her to come in thinking its his grandmother and when his eyes landed on Lorraine he quickly sat up looking at her surprised\*\*\*

Lolly: hi

\*\*\*she waved at him briefly with a smile on her face\*\*\*

Sbu: you....you're here

Lolly: yeah....you got me worried so I took the first flight available this morning

\*\*\*he swallowed hard getting emotional\*\*\*

Lolly: can I sit

\*\*\*he nodded and she did then she breathed out\*\*\*

Lolly: what's going papa....you sounded worrisome over the phone

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Sbu: I did something horrible sisi

Lolly: ok umm how far along is she

\*\*\*Sbu frowned\*\*\*

Sbu: huh

Lolly: the girl you impregnated...how far along is her pregnancy

\*\*\*Sbu frowned some more then his face relaxed\*\*\*

Sbu: I didn't impregnate anyone sis

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Lolly: ok then what did you do papa...please dont tell me you tried drugs Sbusiso

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Sbu: I almost killed someone

\*\*\*her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Lolly: ini? ( what)

Sbu: I was angry and I couldn't control my anger....all I saw was red sisi and I just wanted her dead

Lolly: her?

\*\*\*he nodded\*\*\*

Lolly: who is it Sbu

\*\*\*she said as calmly as possible\*\*\*

Sbu: ma....Amogelang....papa's wife

\*\*\*She froze a bit\*\*\*

Lolly: what did she do

\*\*\*he was pleased by her question instead of trying to reprimand or judge him\*\*\*

Sbu: she's the reason Lile died and she....she forced herself on papa when he was drunk

\*\*\*her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Lolly: please explain so I truly understand

\*\*\*Sbu sighed and he explained everything and by the time he was done he was a crying mess.....Lolly held him tight as she also cried until he was left with only hiccups....she wiped her tears off and kissed his forehead multiple times\*\*\*

Lolly: its ok papa....its ok....im here now and everything will be fine

-----

\*\*\* Lolly stayed with Sbu until he fell asleep then she went downstairs and found Jabu's mother watching tv while drinking tea\*\*\*

Ma: how is he

\*\*\*she sighed and sat down\*\*\*

Lolly: broken but uzobaright ( he'll be alright)

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Ma: but did he manage to talk....you know

\*\*\*Lolly nodded and Jabu's mother sighed\*\*\*

Ma: hai kunzima ( its tough)

Lolly: he's gonna be alright mama don't worry

Ma: hai I hope so...i cooked go and dish for yourself

\*\*\*Lolly got up and walked to the kitchen\*\*\*

-----

## SHALATE ( HILLS)

\*\*\*My life neh.....anyway I made an appointment with a lawyer Moera recommended to me and I hope he'll help me get out of this marriage even though she suggested I wait for Ma to come from her overseas trip before I make any decisions ....Well Moera and Masai are against me making decisions while im hurting like this cause they know I love Tar with my all but its not like he just cheated he also want to take his side chick as his second wife and I can't have that....i cant share him so since the dish is pregnant and I know I can't give him a child then I've rather remove myself from the equation.....im used to people hurting me so I should have known that he'll also hurt me....if my own mother can break and fail me dismally then why wouldn't Tar also do the same\*\*\*

Voice: hi

\*\*\*I jumped startled and my hand instantly went to my chest...sh!t this nikka nearly gave me a heart attack\*\*\*

Me: don't .... ever do that ok!!

\*\*\*I said not even looking at him and continued searching for affordable apartment since I stopped when I fell deep into my trail of thoughts\*\*\*

Tar: I just greeted you Shale

Me: hi...happy now

\*\*\*im still not looking at him....i need to start to learn to live without him straight....i need to\*\*\*

Tar: so things have gotten to this huh....you disrespecting me like this...im still your husband Shalate and will remain one till death

\*\*\* mxm I just ignored him\*\*\*

Tar: ngikhuluma nawe man Shalate!!! ( im talking to you man Shalate)

\*\*\* breathe Shale....deep breath\*\*\*

Me: respect is earned Tarek not demanded....you've lost all my respect so deal with it

\*\*\*I said still not looking at him....i love this man but he broke me....i don't think I'll ever recover\*\*\*

Tar: so you'll be like this until when....you do know sooner or later you have to accept the way things are and we need to find common ground and make things work

Me: you're delusional shem

\*\*\*I said turning my head to look at him\*\*\*

Tar: askies

Me: this....

\*\*\*I moved my hands between me and him\*\*\*

Me: died when you decided to cheat and get her pregnant and it got buried when you decided to take her as the second wife

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Me: I'll never forgive you Tarek...you just showed me how you really feel about me....i guess your mother was right all along....she did say you'll leave me for a woman who'll give you a child and it has happened

\*\*\*I said wiping my falling tears\*\*\*

Tar: we will never be over Shale....you are my wife and it shall remain like that until death do us apart

\*\*\*then he walked away....nx f3#k him...he can go to hell for all I care nx....i wiped my tears off and continued to search for an apartment\*\*\*

-----

AT JABU'S HOUSE

LORRAINE

\*\*\*im busy in the kitchen warming up my milk looking at my phone for the hundredth's time hoping and praying that Kenny calls me....i miss him but my pride wont allow me to call him....i hope and pray that me coming here will not break us up....i had to be here for Sbu and im glad I did cause I could see he trusted me.... I mean his grandmother said they send him to talk to some therapist they trusted and he just went there and said nothing so the fact that he opened up to me means he trusts me and im glad I didn't let him down....i turned when I felt a figure standing by the door and it's Jabu (sigh)\*\*\*

Jabu: what did you say to him...today was the first time he sat with us since....

Me: I just listened without being judgmental

\*\*\*I said shrugging my shoulders and took my cup as he walked further in...i walked passed him and I felt his hand stopping me\*\*\*

Jabu: I heard you're now dating your ex-husband's brother

\*\*\*he said letting go of my upper hand\*\*\*

Me: yeah...he's the best so far

Jabu: o bona go le xap wena ( do you think its appropriate)

\*\*\*sigh\*\*\*

Me: appropriate for who

Jabu: how sure are you that he's nothing like his brother

Me: im not sure but who knows maybe I got married to the wrong brother in the first place

Jabu: you didn't just say that

Me: what is it Jabu...yes Kenny is Bheki's brother and yes we are dating and yes I love him

Jabu: do you??

\*\*\*he said giving me an intense look\*\*\*

Me: yeah I do

\*\*\*he looked at me for some time\*\*\*

Jabu: mmmmh if you say so

\*\*\*then he went towards the fridge and I just walked out of the kitchen....mxm whats that  
“mmh if you say so” he just did....Jabu can be an a\$\$ sometimes nx...the intercom rang  
and I went to answer it\*\*\*

Me: ke mang?

Voice: Lorraine....baby???

\*\*\*my eyes popped out\*\*\*

Me: Kenny

\*\*\*he breathed out\*\*\*

Kenny: im sorry please let me in

Me: how....how did you...

Kenny: I booked us into a hotel I came to pick you up

\*\*\* “ say what now”\*\*\*

Jabu: o bloma hier...Sbu needs you so chaela dai moegoe a vaye....a gona ko o yang  
finish and klaar ( you are staying here....Sbu needs you so tell that fool to leave....you  
are going nowhere)

-----

TO BE CONTINUED....

## CHAPTER 05

AT JABU'S HOUSE

NARRATED

Lolly: askies??

Jabu: you're here for Sbusiso so your little boyfriend can wait

\*\*\*Lorraine just shook her head\*\*\*

Lolly: first of all you have no right....absolutely no right to tell me all that rubbish

Jabu....and secondly I dont have to sleep here to help Sbu

Jabu: so you'll choose him over Sbu mmmh...is that what it is

Lolly: dont do that....thats low even for you

Jabu: whats low is you fucking your ex's brother Lorraine...how desperate can you be huh

\*\*\*she slapped him hard on his cheek\*\*\*

Lolly: f#3k you

\*\*\*then she walked away going upstairs leaving him rubbing his cheek with a smirk on his face\*\*\*

Jabu: ey snai get away from my gate before I call the cops on you

Kenny: where's Lorraine

Jabu: ey kere f#3k off are you deaf

\*\*\*Kenny took his phone and called her then she answered\*\*\*

Lolly: im coming let me say goodbye to Sbu

Kenny: ok

\*\*\*Then he sighed and went back to his car and waited for her\*\*\*

## INSIDE THE HOUSE

Lolly: I'll come see you before I leave ok

Sbu: ok thanks for coming sisLolly

Lolly: you dont need to thank me papa...i'll always be there for you and remember whenever you want to talk to someone I'm just a phone call away.....it doesnt matter what time it is you call ok

\*\*\*Sbu nodded\*\*\*

Sbu: ok I will

\*\*\*They hugged again and she kissed his forehead and walked out with her bags....she walked passed Jabu sitting in the lounge and he frowned when he saw the bags\*\*\*

Jabu: Lorraine....

\*\*\*she ignored him and she opened the gate then she opened the door and he chuckled\*\*\*

Jabu: so o nyaka ko rapele mmh ( you want me to beg you mmh)

\*\*\*She ignored him and walked all the way to the gate \*\*\*



Jabu: LORRAINE!!!!

\*\*\*he shouted after her but she just walked outside the gate and Kenny took her bags and put them on the back seat and they got inside the car and Kenny drove off leaving Jabu standing there looking like he's about to bust out....he turned and found his mother standing by the door and she just shook her head and walked inside the house\*\*\*

-----

TWO WEEKS LATER

MASAI

\*\*\*I honestly don't know where Stevens and I stand....i haven't spoken to him since that day and he's hasn't even tried calling me....i really love him and I pray that we work things out and find common ground with Alphalette with concerns to Khai....Another thing im worried about Hills what's happening to her is pure selfishness from her husband and knowing how much she loves him I bet she's gonna stay in that marriage and take all the shit that comes with it....even though she says she wants a divorce I know deep down she doesn't she loves that bastard\*\*\*

Me: I still think she should call Ma

\*\*\*I say to Moera as we prepare ourselves for work in the morning\*\*\*

Moera: yeah I think she should too....knowing Hills Tar is gonna sweet talk her and manipulate her into agreeing to be in a polygamous marriage

Me: but if that's what she really want we have to support her whether we like it or not

Moera: I'll only support her if she really wants to be part of that circus and not because she's forced to or that she's scared to live without him....gape Tarek is manipulative and thinks the world revolves around him or it owes him something nxa

\*\*\*she doesn't like him...well she doesn't like anyone to be honest\*\*\*

Me: we both know Hills loves that man Mo

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Moera: yeah that's the sad part about the whole thing....i know she doesn't even mean it when she says she wants a divorce

Me: eish...love is a f#ck#d up thing neh

Moera: that's why after Alex I swore to never love again

\*\*\*I just rolled my eyes\*\*\*

Me: well love is a beautiful thing Mo if you meet the right person to share that love with

Moera: yeah right

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes then we heard a knock on the door and she walked out....i

finished up and went to see who it is its probably Alphalette....he's picking Khai he said

he wants to spend the day with him ( eye roll)\*\*\*

Moera: look who's here

Me: hi

Alpha: hey... you good

\*\*\*I just nodded....im still surprised that I have a child with a man like him im intimidated by him...he has that thing man...that bone chilling thing\*\*\*

Moera: let me bring AJ

\*\*\*I raised my brow at her why does she look happy to see Alphalette...he cleared his throat sitting down on the couch and I joined him\*\*\*

Alpha: I told my mother about AJ

\*\*\*I just looked at him surprised I didn't think he'll tell his parents about Khai so soon\*\*\*

Alpha: why do you looked surprised

Me: umm I thought you'll probably do a DNA test first before telling anyone

Alpha: why would I do that

\*\*\*ok why is he frowning like that...anyway I just shrug my shoulders I mean people do DNA tests when they find out they have kids out there they didn't know about\*\*\*

Alpha: look AJ is my son and I don't need DNA tests to prove that

\*\*\*probably his ancestors told him AJ is his...well im guessing they did\*\*\*

Me: ok....ummm have you talked to your brother

Alpha: why would i

\*\*\*yho bathong\*\*\*

Me: cause me and him are dating and I have a child with you

Moera: so what does you dating that rotten guava have to do with AJ's father

\*\*\*ooh Gosh...was she eavesdropping\*\*\*

Moera: he hasn't called you maybe because he has moved on so stop asking about his whereabouts from his brother....it's clear they don't get along jeez

Alpha: so you don't like him

\*\*\*he said taking a sleeping AJ from her\*\*\*

Moera: yeah that useless thing once beat her up and since then I started hating him

\*\*\*bathong Moera why is she telling him my business like that\*\*\*

Me: he slapped me once Moera...why are you making it seem like he's abusive

Moera: maybe you deserve to be slapped or even beaten to a pulp that you land in hospital....who talks like that Masai...abuse ke abuse....i can't believe you just said that

\*\*\*she threw Khai's bag roughly at me and walked away looking angry or is it hurt (sigh)....Alphalette just took the bag from me\*\*\*

Alpha: I'll bring him later

\*\*\*then he walked out looking pissed and leaving me feeling like sh!t....Moera then walked out of her bedroom and she picked her keys from the table\*\*\*

Me: Mo

Moera: f#tsek!!!

\*\*\*wow...then she walked out....i swallowed hard and went to my bedroom and took my phone and made a call\*\*\*

Stevens: wow and she remembers me.....done f#ck#ng my brother

\*\*\*what the actual f#!k\*\*\*

Me: wow Stevens....and what stopped you from calling me

\*\*\*im not gonna entertain his stupid and unfounded accusations nxa\*\*\*

Stevens: what do you want Masai

\*\*\*he said coldly and I swallowed...you know what...f#!k this shit\*\*\*

Me: I think we should....break up...i mean this thing between us....

Stevens: wait....you think we are still a thing.....I've long moved on to a woman without baggage ...you were never woman enough for me anyways and for your information....real women wear heels girly not pumps or all stars and sandals....why do you think I've never taken you to decent places cause you're not decent...in fact you and that Lechankane brother of mine deserve each other..... lose my numbers le di flaps ekare mogodu o ba reng morothwana!!

-----

MOERA

\*\*\*im busy on my office computer typing a report that is needed before the end of the day..... The thing is i dont hate my job but reporting to rich A-holes who sit their butts all day doing nothing while i work may a\$\$ off makes me detest my job....the only reason i haven't fallen victim to my bosses' lustful advances is because of my ghetto attitude and my vile mouth.....many girls here have fallen victim and im glad im not one of them cause that handsome rich A-hole is a snack truth be told....my phone rings and I hope its not my boss cause that handsome sh!ty A-hole like calling me to his office even for useless things he could've said over the phone mxm....i sigh when I see that its my twin Masai as much as im still pissed at her but i cant stay mad at her for long so receive her call\*\*\*

Me: Masai

\*\*\*I hear her sigh\*\*\*

Masai: im sorry

\*\*\*I just roll my eyes....i know she already has tears running down her cheeks she's a cry baby this one\*\*\*

Me: its ok

Masai: its not Mo....why do I always date abusive jerks and when I break up with them they insult me using things im insecure about....when im still dating them they pretend to like them but once I breakup with them for treating me like sh!t they say hurtful things to me

\*\*\*she said crying....ok what the hell happened\*\*\*

Me: are we talking about Stevens here

\*\*\*I heard her sniff\*\*\*

Me: Sai???

Masai: I broke up with him

\*\*\*f#!k..... thanks Gosh....yho shem he finally heard my prayers\*\*\*

Me: ok and what did he say to make you cry like this

Masai: a re my flaps o kare morothwana wa mogodu and that he long moved on....are I don't have class that's why he has never taken me to decent places.....he was mean Mo and he broke my heart

\*\*\*she sniffed again....i know how insecure she is about her flaps and the fact that Steven said what he said I know her confidence went down a whole lot of notches....i swear im gonna deal with that piece of sh!t....he's also gonna pay nxa\*\*\*

Me: m#r#tagae....w#nyela nxa....i swear he's gonna regret ever insulting you nxa

\*\*\*she cried over the phone...ooh my softy twin....i hate it when she's hurt like this\*\*\*

Me: don't cry Masa....i say good ridden to bad rubbish

\*\*\*she sniffed\*\*\*

Masai: im sorry about what I said...im sure even Alphalette thinks im some naïve girl who defends her abuser

Me: I told you to stop caring about what people say about you Masa....i long told you to embrace your imperfections.....no one is perfect

\*\*\*the door opened and in walked the A-hole\*\*\*

Me: bona Masa I have to go I'll check on you later and no depression this time around or else im gonna paint this town red with someone's blood

\*\*\*I said that looking at my boss\*\*\*

Masai: he's not worth it even though it hurts so bad

Me: that's my girl...ok later akere

Masai: yeah

Me: I love you my other half

Masai: I love you too twinnie

\*\*\*then I dropped the call and cleared my throat\*\*\*

Me: can I help you with something sir

Him: when I walk in you drop the call....i will not wait for you to finish gossiping with whoever you were gossiping with...time is money and I don't appreciate being kept waiting!!

\*\*\*he said all that with a serious face and tone and I sighed\*\*\*

Me: im sorry sir I promise it won't happen again

\*\*\* he clicked his tongue and walked out....mxm A-hole!!! if only he knew that I'm only here to gain experience that's all I'm here for....i took my phone and went to my contacts and I made an important call\*\*\*

Voice: mchana

Me: hi malome... ke tlo feta ko wena after work....ke batla go ova le wena ka something  
( I'll come by your place after work I need to talk to you about something important)

Voice: ok

\*\*\*then I dropped the call and popped my knuckles\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED ( ALPHALETTE)

Alpha: and nou....why are you looking like that

\*\*\*he said as Mpande sat down slowly looking pale with dry lips\*\*\*

Mpande: eish bafo I didnt sleep a wink last night

Alpha: why what happened

Mpande: after you told me about Masai being your baby mama.....i got mad at madlozi  
and I took isnuff chillies and hot water in a cup and ngayophahla ngazo ( and I went to  
talk to them using them)

\*\*\*Alpha's eyes popped out\*\*\*

Alpha: say you joking mfowethu...you didnt just do that

\*\*\*he looked freaked out cause he knows you dont do that...ever\*\*\*

Mpande: ehh ngabatshela udoti amadlozi....nga ba kgwela nge gala...e green e suur (   
ehh I told them sh!t the ancestors....I vomited gal ....a green and sour one)...i should've  
known they will retaliate mxm cowards

\*\*\* he groaned as his stomach made funny noises and Alphalette put his hand on his  
face shaking his head defeated\*\*\*

Mpande: I mean how can your ancestors make things happen for you mfowethu just like  
that mmmh....your baby mama is your chosen one while mina I have to slaughter a cow  
or a goat for them or to go bath in river that has iNkanyamba for them to do something  
simple for me

Alpha: this is not a competition Mpande

Mpande: I know...i know ok....im not in a competition with you and never will be I just  
have a problem with them nje..... im gatvol ( im done) with their slow pace mina....i  
want Moera....they should make her fall for me...ngifuna ukushada this year ( I want to

get married this year)...how can they let me have a threesum with sisters khanti isnt it their job to protect me aarg man

\*\*\*Alpha shook his head defeated...Mpande is a special case...he wanted to tell him that he's been made aware that he's backing at the wrong tree

Sponsored

AD

that he should take a step back with concerns to his love interest but then Mpande's mother suddenly appeared in front of them and she shook her head no\*\*\*

Woman: dont tell him....let him learn the hard way

\*\*\*then she disappeared and Alpha sighed looking down....he's used to seeing dead people appearing in front of him like this especially his ancestors\*\*\*

Alpha: so why do you look this pale...what happened last night

Mpande: isisu bafo...eish....kunini ngigooda ( my stomach bro....im having a runny stomach) ...i cant even feel my ass#le its burning strong mfowethu...i even see blood when I wipe

\*\*\*Alpha looked at him then he busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Mpande: eish

\*\*\*he said getting up and putting his hand on his ass as he ran to the toilet....when he got to the toilet he didnt even get a chance to close the door all Alphalette heard is him groaning loudly and other disturbing sounds and Alpha laughed standing up and he went to close the door for him\*\*\*

Mpande: iyhooo....iyhoooo....eish ngiyafa mfowethu ( im dying bro)

Alpha: apologize to the ancestors

Mpande: hai mfowethu I need to stand my ground for them to see that I mean business

Alpha: then gooda in peace mfo...i wonder how you even arrived here without sh!tting on yourself

Mpande: iyhoooo....iyhoooo....iyhoooo

\*\*\*Alphalette just laughed and he left to mix some herbs for him to drink that will stop the runny stomach....after he was done he went back and found him sitting on the stoop shirtless\*\*\*

Alpha: phuza ( drink)

\*\*\*Mpande took the cup and drank without even asking what he's drinking then he made a disgusted face cause the concussion is bitter\*\*\*

Alpha: are you ready to apologize

Mpande: eish...yah....i see they are angry...eish...my a\$\$ joh

Alpha: you'll never be bigger than God and your ancestors Mpande.....they always have a way of doing things and we need to accept that

Mpande: mxm they are lucky im not with them over there or else

Alpha: Mpande !!!

\*\*\*he warned him\*\*\*

Mpande: eish yah izwile indlebe bafo ( the ear has heard you)

Alpha: how can you insult your ancestors like that nawe....your late grandfather...the same man that left you all the fleet of taxis you now own all because of a woman

Mpande: I think I have fallen for her....she's my wife and its not about Moera nje bafo I always have to fight to get things.... always....Mkhulu left enemies that have made me now their target and he doesn't even make them at least forget about me so I can enjoy my inheritance in peace....i'm always looking over my shoulder and I don't even know where their beef started or what they were actually fighting for...ngifela izono zika Mkhulu...im not even enjoying my inheritance cause its bullets left right and center...dead bodies blah blah blah...ai ngikhathela bafo ( im tired bro)

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: I get you man and I understand but doing what you did is not the answer....remember everything happens for a reason Mpande and you must have faith on God and your ancestors....remember their delays are not their denials mfowethu....two years I've been tortured and punished for not listening and now I finally see light at the end of the tunnel

Mpande: lucky you

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: nawe the is light at the end of the tunnel but you're too blind to see it

Mpande: my light is Moera

Alpha: or your downfall

\*\*\*Mpande frowned\*\*\*

Alpha: I'm just saying....maybe you're attracted to her wild and dangerous personality and maybe that's not the kind of woman you need in your life but hey uthi you're sure about her then lets fix things with boGogo na boMkhulu by apologizing and cleansing ghandelo ra bona ( the sacred place where he phahla/talks to them)....im sure they have heard you....mati a ko bela na berebere a switlangi mfo....im sure ba te chachamela la bareko kona mara bakwate kofa ( hot water and chillies is not child play



bro...im sure they are feeling the heat wherever they are but also mad-angry)...and that's not good

\*\*\*Mpande chuckled then he quickly got up and ran inside the toilet\*\*\*

Alpha: dont worry this is the last time onya ( you'll sh!t)...when you done go and bath and we will leave for your place

Mpande: iyhooo...iyhoooo...iyhooo

Alpha: ongatlangeli vokokwana....o tatenyela bhut ( dont ever underestimate your ancestors....you'll shit yourself bro)

\*\*\*he laughed walking away\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED ( MOERA)

\*\*\* knock off time came and as she's busy packing her things her heart start beating fast all of a sudden then she feels pain in on her heart...she sits down a bit as the pain subsides right then her phone rings as her mind went to her twin sister Masai....before she can answer her heart skips a beat \*\*\*

Moera: he...hello

Woman: hi is this Moera...Masai's twin sister

Moera: yes....whats wrong with her....is she ok

\*\*\*she said panicking\*\*\*

Woman: this is Meisie I work with your sister....your sister was getting ready to leave as its knock off time when she suddenly held her chest and collapsed....we called an ambulance and they are busy with her

\*\*\*Moera just closed her eyes as her hands starts shaking and her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Moera: is...is she alive

Meisie: ye...yes the paramedics said she's still alive

Moera: ok...ummm tell them to take her to a private hospital and please go with her you'll send me your location

Meisie: ok

Moera: thank you

\*\*\*they ended the call and Moera quickly grabbed her things and left bumping into her boss by the corridor but she just rushed passed him leaving the building....She's now driving when her phone reports a message and she opens her WhatsApp its Meisie sending her her location... she just continued to drive....her phone rings and she quickly answers thinking its her\*\*\*

Moera: hello

Alphalette: hey its Alphalette where is your sister

\*\*\*he asked with a worried tone\*\*\*

Moera: I just got a call from one of her colleagues ba re she collapsed and she was taken to the hospital

Alphalette: shit...which hospital

\*\*\*Moera tells him and they end the call then she calls her uncle\*\*\*

Uncle: mchana

Moera: Lume Masai is rushed to the hospital so im rushing there I wont be able to come today

Uncle: what happened...is she ok

Moera: I suspect Lupus...she was hurt and crying so I think it got triggered

Uncle: damn it....who or what hurt her

Moera: that's the reason I was coming to see you....mpya engwe bareng ke Stevens broke her heart....a moroga ka mapele and even said some hurtful things....you know how soft and easily hurt Masai is Lume so she took everything to heart....Mpya ele was even cheating on her....i swear im gonna kill him....one of these days le ka se motlhabele....he once beat her up and I let it go cause ne a mo rata but this time im gonna make him taste my wrath

Uncle: calm down.....we will deal with him wena be there for her and when she's better come and see me

Moera: ok Malome

Uncle: shap

Moera: shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and she continued to drive with her jaws clenched \*\*\*

-----

## AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\*Moera is busy pacing up and down in the waiting area when Alphalette walks in and head straight to her \*\*\*

Alpha: She's gonna be ok calm down

Moera: you dont know that....she once suffered a mild heart attack Alphalette what if she doesnt make it this time

Alpha: trust me she will

\*\*\*she sighed and sat down feeling helpless and Alpha sat next to her\*\*\*

Moera: where's AJ

Alpha: with my mother

Moera: she's cool right....

Alpha: who

Moera: your mother

Alpha: yeah

\*\*\*then he chuckled lightly\*\*\*

Alpha: she even cried when she saw how much he look like me....like my late father

\*\*\*Moera nodded\*\*\*

Alpha: you said she once suffered a mild heart attack

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Alpha: what happened

\*\*\*Moera sighed\*\*\*

Moera: she has a chronic decease called Lupus

Alpha: huh?

\*\*\*he then kept quiet a bit...all he heard is chronic which means whatever she has is not curable\*\*\*

Alpha: what's...whats that

Moera: its an inflammatory decease..... it makes the immune system to attacks its own tissues

\*\*\*Alphalette frowned\*\*\*

Moera: its can affect the joints skin kidneys blood cells brain heart and lungs....its basically one of the dangerous deceases out there and most people don't know about it....its a silent killer Alphalette....its a chronic decease with no cure.... Yes there's treatment and that treatment can improve her symptoms but she might get flue and her immune system fights the virus and instead of stopping when the flue virus is gone it continues to fight and ends up attacking her tissues damaging her kidneys heart lungs and so forth and she dies....so basically everyday could be her last.... this is a fucked up world and we cant stop people from being mean rude to her....her boss might shout at her or she might fight with her colleagues or her boyfriend

\*\*\*she sighed calming herself down\*\*\*

Moera: she might watch a sad movie and cries her eyeballs out and it gets triggered....she might get upset at our government and how they are failing our country and our people and it gets triggered so basically everyday could be her last

\*\*\*Alpha sighed rubbing his hands together\*\*\*

Alpha: what upset her this time

Moera: your useless brother

\*\*\*she said breathing heavily\*\*\*

Moera: that son of.... That bastard insulted her and even swore at her using her insecurities....he called her all sorts of names and I swear to God he's gonna pay dearly for that

\*\*\*Alphalette clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Alpha: I know you're upset but im asking you to let me handle him....i'll deal with him my own way

\*\*\*She stood up shaking her head\*\*\*

Moera: nope...i need to teach that thing you call a brother a lesson to never ever mess with her.... I only got him roughed up when he hit her but this time around he's gonna learn the hard way

Alpha: Moera...

Moera: my mind is made up....i'll handle him myself.... you can warn him or not I dont care oksalayo I'll deal with him my way

\*\*\*Alpha looked at her and he could tell she means it....he sighed shaking his head... he could tell that this girl is dangerous....she's not just your average girl\*\*\*

Alpha: well he's my brother and I'll have to warn him for my mother's sake

Moera: do what you gotta do and I'll do what I gotta do

Alpha: just.... don't kill him.... Remember he's still your nephew's uncle

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes and sat down then she sighed loud\*\*\*

Moera: khanthe whats taking them this long

\*\*\*after some time a doctor and a nurse walked to them and they quickly got up\*\*\*

Doctor: Masai Rapula's family

Moera: she's my sister and he's her baby daddy

Alpha: her man not just baby daddy

\*\*\*Moera raised an eyebrow looking at him\*\*\*

Moera: since when abuti

Alpha: how is she Doctor

\*\*\*he asked the doctor ignoring her\*\*\*

Doctor: yes...uumm she's gonna be fine she just suffered a panic attack which led her to collapse and im glad the paramedics where told about her having Lupus cause that helped a lot into preventing a heart attack from happening

\*\*\*Moera sighed\*\*\*

Moera: so she's gonna be alright

Doctor: yes but she needs to take it easy....i know its not easy avoiding certain things that might trigger her Lupus because she's human after all and she's sharing this God forsaken world with other human who like to provoke other people but she should just avoid stressful situations take her medication and take her diet seriously and just avoid drama

Moera: I hear you Doc

Doctor: we cant discharge her now....I'd like to keep her for the night to monitor her Lupus to see if it will get triggered again or not

Moera: ok

Alpha: can we see her

Doctor: ofcourse nurse here will take you to her ward

Alpha: ok

Moera: thank you Doc

\*\*\*the Doctor smiled at her and he walked away\*\*\*

Nurse: this way

Moera: go on let me call my mother and sister I'll join you

\*\*\*Alpha nodded and he followed the nurse while Moera sighed and she sat down and made a call\*\*\*

-----  
TO BE CONTINUED...

## CHAPTER 06

### INSIDE HER WARD

\*\*\*Alphalette walked in and found her laying there on the bed with an oxygen mask on and a drip inserted in her left hand....she felt like someone was inside her room and she opened her eyes and found Alphalette standing next to her bed\*\*\*

Alpha: hi

\*\*\*she slowly took off her mask with her shaky hand and greeted him back\*\*\*

Alpha: what triggered your....Lupious decease

Masai: Lu...Lupus not Lu...Lupious

\*\*\*he didn't say anything he just kept a straight look on his face and she sighed biting her lower lip\*\*\*

Masai: Ste...Stevens send me a.... photo of him and his.... baby mama in bed naked..... and he typed... "this is what I call a real woman" but before that he.... insulted me using my.... insecurities

\*\*\*she said taking deep breaths while speaking she has shortness of breath.... Right now she's feeling ashamed that she let him get to her like that....Alphalette sighed and he bend to her level\*\*\*

Alpha: what insecurities

\*\*\*she didnt say anything she just looked away\*\*\*

Alpha: I asked you a question mama

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Masai: my....my flaps

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Alpha: what flaps

\*\*\*then his face relaxed as he caught on\*\*\*

Alpha: well I loved them and im damn sure I still love them so f#ck him....anything else

\*\*\*she swallowed and shook her head no...she wasn't comfortable with confiding in him about all her insecurities...even though they have a child together she fact remains she doesn't know him to trust him like that \*\*\*

Alpha: listen here and listen good mama....mourn your relationship and heal and you'll find me waiting for you...we still need to give AJ a sibling to play with aboStevens are confused small boys who still needs to f#ck around

\*\*\*he then kissed her slightly dry lips as she froze just staring at him with shock all over her face then someone cleared their throat\*\*\*

Alpha: I'll come see you tomorrow...get well mama

\*\*\* he kissed her forehead and he walked out and Moera walked to her twin's bed with a raised eyebrow and Masai cleared her throat and she put her oxygen mask back on and Moera took it off\*\*\*

Moera: explain

Masai: there's... nothing to explain... Mo

Moera: you were exchanging spit with him Masai

Masai: he kissed me.... not the other way... around

Moera: you didnt stop him akere

Masai: where's my son

\*\*\*she said trying to divert their conversation\*\*\*

Moera: with his grandmother

Masai: mama is... here

Moera: no but she's on her way

Masai: so... which grand... mother are you... talking about

Moera: your mother in law ausi

\*\*\*Masai frowned then her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Moera: apparently she even cried when she saw him for the first time

Masai: yho...akitsi ke reng...my life neh ( yho I don't know what to say....my life neh)

Moera: mmmh sbari wa ngaka neh ( mmh a brother in law who's a traditional healer neh)

Masai: mxm...wa gafa ( you are crazy)

\*\*\*she put her oxygen mask back on and Moera laughed....Moera was glad she's ok cause she cant imagine her life without her\*\*\*

-----

## HAMMANSKRAAL ( TEMBA)

Tshimologo: hi can I help you

\*\*\*She said to the man sitting by her gate looking down....he looks like a hobo....his clothes look dirty and the smell that comes from him is horrible\*\*\*

Tshimo: ooh God whats this now

\*\*\*she said to herself but the funny thing is she wasnt scared...she opened the door and got out\*\*\*

Tshimo: hi can I help you...why are you sitting here

\*\*\*the man raised his head and looked up at her and you could see sadness all over his face\*\*\*

Tshimo: do you need food

\*\*\*the man looked down again and said nothing\*\*\*

Voice: please help him

\*\*\*she quickly turned and found an old woman looking sad standing next to her car\*\*\*

Woman: please help him my daughter and God and his ancestors will bless you....please help him

\*\*\*she said as tears ran down her cheeks...Tshimo turned to look at the homeless man and he was now laying on the ground not moving\*\*\*

Tshimo: ooh my God...hey...abuti...Ooh God is he dead

\*\*\* as she's walking closer to him with her heart pounding hard against her chest....she's scared that he might die in front of her gate....she got closer about to touch him then she woke up panting with sweat all over her \*\*\*

Tshimo: F#3K!!!

\*\*\*she said moving back and she balanced her back with the headboard....she took off her now wet pyjama top and she wiped her face with it....she could still smell the guy's horrible smell.....she closed her eyes a bit then she opened them and sighed calming herself down....this was the fourth time she has this dream and its exactly the same



every time....Maybe she needs to go and consult somewhere “ she thought”....she got out of bed and wore another pyjama top and she knelt next to the bed and prayed \*\*\*

-----

## IN THE MORNING

\*\*\* She finished eating breakfast then she got up and went to the sink and washed her plate and cup then she left them on the dish rack and she wiped her hands and the sink then she sighed and got her things and walked to her car after she locked her door....her heart pounded as she reversed out of the yard and luckily what she thought she will find wasn't there then she closed the gate and drove away going to work\*\*\*

## LUNCH TIME

\*\*\*Shes eating her lunch when her phone rings....she sighed and answered it\*\*\*

Tshimo: hello Mmamogolo ( aunt)

Aunty: Tshimologo

Tshimo: golo (aunt)

Aunty: so it has gotten to this now

\*\*\*She sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: what are you talking about Golo

Aunty: Jokobete asked to come live with you to help you around the house while you go to work and you refused...why

Tshimo: Golo I dont need a helper ko ga me ( in my house) I'm actually fine alone

Aunty: ga gao ( your house)...heh I helped your mother find that stand ngwanyana ( girly)....if it wasnt for me nkebe o sena legae ( you wouldnt have a home)

\*\*\*she said bitterly\*\*\*

Tshimo: well thank you for helping her but title deed says that's her house akere

\*\*\*The aunt laughed\*\*\*

Aunty: you forgot that I was the one taking care of your mother when she was sick... now that my daughter needs help ompotsa masepa Tshimologo....ke dankie yona ee...ongleboga ka plate ya masepa!!! ( you're telling me sh!t...is this the thanks I get....you thanking me with a plate full of sh!t)

\*\*\*Tshimologo sighed as tears filled her eyes...it pained her that ever since her mother and brother passed on she's been alone...her close family members turned their backs on her just because she refused to be controlled by them..... they changed when they found out that her mother and brother left everything they own to her and none of the close family members got anything \*\*\*

Tshimo: I paid you to look after her while I go to work Mmamogolo ....you didnt do it for free

Aunty: you even know how to talk back at me Tshimologo....my sister must be turning in her grave shame

Tshimo: yes she's turning in her grave because of your evil heart and treatment towards her child!!!

Aunty: o reng.... ( what did you say)

\*\*\*Tshimo dropped the call and breathed out with a shaky breath...her phone rang again it was the aunt and she just let it ring \*\*\*

Tshimo: mama why did you leave me all alone to deal with your family.... Abuti im all alone and im trying so hard to be strong like you taught me to but it gets too much abuti....please fight for me like you always did when you were still alive

\*\*\*she wiped her now falling tears and continued to eat her lunch with a heavy heart\*\*\*

-----

JABU

\*\*\*I cant believe Lorraine right now....she blocked my numbers ( huffs)....its official I hate that piece of shit Kenny she has turned Lolly against me and I hate it....Well at least Sbu is better now he can interact with us now and even laugh here and

there...whatever she said to him worked cause my boy is back... yes he's not full back to his old self but slowly but surely I believe he's gonna be alright...my office door opens and its Heath\*\*\*

Heath: ola

Me: sho...wa moizela vroeg so dintshang ( why are smiling like this so early in the morning)

\*\*\*He chuckled\*\*\*

Heath: nna ke troile bosso and my mamiwata makes sure papiwata is always happy

Me: mxm

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Me: can you believe Lolly blocked me

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Heath: blocked you where

Me: she blocked my numbers

Heath: and why would she do that

\*\*\*he said sitting down\*\*\*

Me: o bethile draai ko nna daar go ova le Sbu and mpya ele le ntswitswi came by and took her ( she came to my house to talk to Sbu and that dog with a small dick came by and took her)

\*\*\*Heath looked at me confused...eish he can be slow this one when he wants to\*\*\*

Me: dai moerskond e mo jang....eish....yeer ne ke bethile top bra yaka....ne ke bela straight....nxa ya ntlwaela bari ele ( that bastard thats f#ck#ng her...eish....i was mad-angry bro...i was boiling straight....nxa that fool doesnt know me)

\*\*\*this fool laughed\*\*

Me: o lagang ( why are you laughing)

Heath: why are you angry gore boyfriend ya Lolly fetched her

\*\*\*he didnt just ask me that this fool\*\*\*

Me: o nyakoreng ( what are you trying to say)

Heath: he's her boyfriend

Me: your point

Heath: hebaan

\*\*\*he gave me a confused look\*\*\*

Me: he had the nerve mfo....sebeta....the liver to come to my house and demand her....he's not even married to her kamo o busy o kuka mar#te a go shoshobana o tla

ko nna go tlo mo claima... ( and he comes to my house with his wrinkling balls to claim her)

\*\*\*why is he looking at me like this\*\*\*

Me: keng? ( what)

Heath: mh mh nex ( nope nothing)

\*\*\*he said shaking his head\*\*\*

Me: so wa vrostana gore why kele suur so ( so you understand why im this sour/mad)

Heath: yeah...o nyoko ragiwa blaen ( yeah he wants to be beaten)

Me: re mo kgaole le m#rete nxa ( and cut off his balls)

Heath: anyway the trucks arrived safely

\*\*\*i breathed out loud....what a relief\*\*\*

Me: eish thats a relief man....yeer

Heath: yeah those packages were expensive...if you know what I mean so losing them more especially to cops....

\*\*\*he whistled shaking his head\*\*\*

Heath: mathata ( trouble)

Me: yeah

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Heath: eish ever since Thandi put to bed Ruu is scarce

\*\*\*i chuckled\*\*\*

Me: we all were scarce Mshikaro

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Heath: yeah mara Ruu is worse...you'd swear its his first child....anyway let me pass by Ruu's place then go see Naledi

Me: you just saw her before you came here man....no man hemisa aram skepsel sa batho haw (let the poor girl breath)

Heath: tsek!! ( piss off)

\*\*\* He said getting up and walked out leaving me laughing....these two f3ck like rabbits hai man\*\*\*

-----

## HILLS

\*\*\*The last time I saw Tarek was yesterday when he came back from work....he received a call and panicked then he rushed out... he didnt say anything he just rushed out and I havent seen or heard from him again....all I heard when he was on the phone was dont panic and I'll call your gyna and he rushed out ( sigh) I know I despise him now and I cant stand him but I still love him and its hurts so bad that he's now giving his full attention to the side chick....maybe I should just count my loses and leave....i cant compete with his child....he'll always chose them over me cause I cant give him a child and his evil mother will make sure everyday I know that im no longer a priority ( sigh)....

Maybe this is it for us...this whole marriage was build on an unstable foundation and maybe we shouldnt have gotten married in the first place....Maybe if he said " baby I messed up and had a one night stand with some chick and now she's telling me she's pregnant" i would consider forgiving him as time went by but for him to say he also want to marry her too is just a stab in the back...he literally took my heart and shred it to pieces...My phone rings and its him calling mxm I just dropped the call and switched my phone off then I got up and went to get ready to leave for the hospital....mama is coming back today and I need to prepare myself mentally for her outburst when she learns of my failed marriage ( sigh)\*\*\*

-----

## NARRATED

\*\*\*Tarek tried her numbers again and it send him to voicemail\*\*\*

Tar: damn it!!

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws then he walked inside Samke's ward\*\*\*

Tar: mamakhe

Samke: hey

\*\*\*she said after she opened her eyes\*\*\*

Tar: I have an important meeting I have to get to...ill see you later ok

Samke: ok

\*\*\*he kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Tar: take care of him ok

\*\*\*he said brushing her belly and the baby kicked and he smiled widely\*\*\*

Tar: I love you boy

\*\*\*he kissed her belly\*\*\*

Samke: I love you daddy

Tar: me too mamakhe

\*\*\*he kissed her forehead again then he walked out trying Hills numbers again and like before it send him to voicemail again\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED

\*\*\*Jabu dialed her numbers using a new simcard\*\*\*

Lolly: Lorraine Mpofu hello

Jabu: why did you block my numbers

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: Jabulani

Jabu: why

\*\*\*she sighed again\*\*\*

Jabu: what if Sbu needs

Lolly: he has my numbers Jabu

Jabu: and what if his phone dies or something

Lolly: yho Jabu ufunani ( what do you want)

Jabu: o jola le dai bari nou and wa dema...oipotsa gore o Queen Elizabeth heh ( you're now dating that fool and you suddenly think so highly of yourself...you think you're Queen Elizabeth heh)

Lolly: did you call to insult me now

Jabu: Lorraine o tsene keng mmh...o dronka ke pipi ya stlaela sele sa le Zulu ya le shobore heh ( Lorraine what has gotten into you mmh....that uncut dick of that Zulu fool is driving you crazy heh)

Lolly: Jabu you havent told me why you called me

\*\*\*she said defeated ignoring his insult towards her man\*\*\*

Jabu: ngithe ongiblokelani ( I said why did you block me)

Lolly: cause you're harassing me Jabu...i dont even understand why you're mad...my boyfriend came to fetch me...my boyfriend!!

\*\*\*she said raising her voice\*\*\*

Jabu: at whose house heh....at whose house and o tseya kae sebetse sa tsuane ya go tagwa ke ditshotshwane tsa tshukiri to come claim you heh...are you his wife!!! ( and where did he get the guts of a chick that is intoxicated by sugar ants to come and claim you heh...are you his wife)

Lolly: yho....you know what if it happens Jabu neh I come to your house again which I doubt I ever will he wont park outside your yard when he comes to fetch me....how's that

Jabu: o reng (what did you say)

\*\*\*she dropped the call\*\*\*

Jabu: LORRAINE!!!...NX!!!!

\*\*\*he squeezed his phone a bit then he threw it on top of the table\*\*\*

Jabu: SABS!!

\*\*\*he called one of the guys that work for him\*\*\*

Sabelo: bozza ka zwakala... ( boss im coming)

-----

AT THE HOSPITAL

NARRATED

Moera: I just hope she doesnt cause ruckus when she gets here

Masai: oho...

\*\*\*she took a deep breath...she was still having difficulty with breathing\*\*\*

Masai: as if

\*\*\*they laughed but they could see Shalate wasnt herself\*\*\*

Moera: Hills are you ok

\*\*\*Hills sighed\*\*\*

Hills: he didnt come home last night

\*\*\*she said and tears ran down her cheeks and Moera clenched her jaws\*\*\*

Moera: that piece of....

Masai: MO no

Masai: im sorry Hills...

\*\*\*she breathed in and she released he breath as Moera went closer to comfort her\*\*\*

Masai: I know how much.... you love him

\*\*\*she breathed in and released her breath again\*\*\*

Masai: I cant...i cant believe.... he's the one doing this

Hills: I...i think he loves her....i cant compete with her....she's giving him what I cant...i should just cut my loses and leave

\*\*\*she said between her sobs\*\*\*

Moera: i know it hurts and im sorry you're going through this babes

\*\*\*Hills sobbed until she came down...she wiped her tears and took a deep breath\*\*\*

Hills: ive decided to move out and go see that lawyer you recommended for me

Masai: Hills...

Hills: depression is knocking on my door Masa and I dont wanna go back to that place again...it took a lot from me to move on from Mhlaba's death

\*\*\* the twins swallowed hard\*\*\*

Moera: whatever decision you make we will support you 100 percent mntase

\*\*\*Hills nodded\*\*\*



Hills: ok enough about my problems....Masa Mo told me about you and Mkhulu  
Alphalette

\*\*\*Masai rolled her eyes and Moera and Hills laughed\*\*\*

Masai: there's nothing.... there....

\*\*\*she took a deep breath\*\*\*

Masai: he's still Stevens.... blood brother and im not that kind of lady

Moera: oho busy acting like mother Theresa

\*\*\*Masai showed her the middle finger...right then they heard commotion in the corridor  
then the she stood\*\*\*

Doris: ooh my baby....ngwanaka bathong

\*\*\*she rushed to Masai and hugged her then she broke the hug and kissed all over her  
face\*\*\*

Masai: Maaa stop

Doris: hai suka....you'll always be my baby

\*\*\*she fixed her blankets then kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Doris: how are you feeling

Masai: better than maa...bane ( yesterday)

\*\*\*then she turned and went to Moera and hugged her and kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Doris: hi baby

Moera: mama

Doris: how are you feeling my baby....i know it must be hard seeing Masa laying there

\*\*\*Moera just shrug\*\*\*

Moera: im just glad it was just a panic attack

\*\*\*she brushed her cheek gently with an emotional look on her face\*\*\*

Doris: go tlo loka baby ok ( everything will be fine baby ok)

\*\*\*Moera nodded then she went to Hills and hugged her longer and Hills blinked fast  
fighting her tears back then Doris broke the hug and she cupped her face\*\*\*

Doris: what did that big headed Zulu boy do this time around

\*\*\*she asked with a stern voice and the twins looked at each other while Hills tears ran  
down her cheeks\*\*\*

Doris: ooh someone is gonna pay dearly....

\*\*\*She said pulling her into another hug and Hills just sobbed\*\*\*

Moera: eyeye

\*\*\*she whispered to Masai\*\*\*

-----

TO BE CONTINUED....

(SEE YOU ON MONDAY....GOOD NIGHT!!!!)

## CHAPTER 07

Hills: he cheated and got the woman pregnant and he said he wants to take her as the second wife

Doris: this fool...i knew he was like his father but polygamy...even his father couldn't handle it

Moera: what do you mean mama

Doris: do you want to be part of that circus Shalate

\*\*\*Hills swallowed hard\*\*\*

Hills: I still love him mama...alot but....he hurt me...he broke my heart....i gave him my all and he stabbed me in the back and brought a third party who's pregnant for his child in our marriage

\*\*\*she said sobbing\*\*\*

Doris: ooh my baby

\*\*\*she said pulling her into an embrace and she cried in her arms which led to the twins' tears ran down their cheeks too....after sometime Hills calmed down and Doris wiped her tears off with her designer scarf\*\*\*

Doris: mama is here now and she'll take care of everything ok

\*\*\*Hills nodded and she kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Doris: Mrs LULU no crying assomblief ( please)

\*\*\*Masai wiped her tears off laughing lightly and Moera and Hills laughed....ever since Masai got diagnosed with Lupus Doris calls her Mrs LULU as an inside joke and Masai doesnt take offense to it....anyway Doris took out her phone and made a call\*\*\*

Voice: I didn't know until recently Darrin

Doris: my name is Doris Mazwakhe....Doris!!!

\*\*\*Mazwakhe sighed\*\*\*

Mazwakhe: before you shout and curse at me I didnt know ok

Doris: how dare he hurt and embarrass my baby like this Mazwakhe....does this big headed boy know who the hell I am....does he know what im capable of huh....i can ruin him and everything he holds dear...how dare he hurt my baby

Mazwakhe: calm down Dar...i mean Dorin

Doris: ITS DORIS...DORIS...WHATS SO HARD ABOUT CALLING ME THAT!!!

Mazwakhe: you were my Darrin before you changed your name and you'll always be my Darrin

Doris: F#ck you....you failed me Mazwakhe so dont tell me nonsense and never tell me that rubbish nonsense again or I'll tell that vasplanka ( ass less) you call a wife the truth

Mazwakhe: uyangithuka manje Doris ( you're insulting me now Doris)

Doris: ungitshela udodi nawe angithi ( you're also telling me rubbish)

\*\*\*Mazwakhe breathed in and out trying to calm himself down....Doris is the only person that can tick him off like this and he doesnt do anything about it...well he can do something about it but circumstances wont let him \*\*\*

Mazwakhe: if I didnt still love you I would deal with that rotten and disrespectful mouth of yours!!!

Doris: as if...o wele mapanta ( you became weak) the day you failed me.....anyway you're not the one who deserves my insults.... Tomorrow there's a meeting at your son's house at 3 pm and Mazwakhe....he better make it to that meeting or I'll search for him and embarrass him in public and the media will know about his whoring ways...think about your reputation so he better not push me to my limits ....he better not!!!

\*\*\*then she dropped the call\*\*\*

Doris: nxa...nonsense....like father like son...wasteful sperm....condom nkebe e thibetse masepa aa...nxa ( a condom would have stopped all this sh!t nxa)

\*\*\*the sisters looked at her shocked\*\*\*

Hills: mama was that....Tarek's fa...father

Doris: mmmh mxm o tletse ka masepa le ene ( yes mxm he's also full of sh!t)...bloody swine

\*\*\*the sisters looked at each other with their eyes popped out\*\*\*

Doris: there's a meeting with your husband and in laws tomorrow

\*\*\*Hills swallowed hard\*\*\*

Moera: mama isn't it too soon...

Doris: o nyaka Shalate a luzu weight first ka stress ( you want Shalate to lose weight first with stress) for it to be the right time

Moera: no I mean...

\*\*\*she said looking at Hills who looked spooked....a meeting with the in laws tomorrow was just too soon for her\*\*\*

Doris: Moera

Moera: ma

Doris: never question me when it comes to serious matters or else o tlo swela dikano tsa dimpya tse dingwe ok ( you'll die for other people's mistakes/sins)

Moera: yes mam

Doris: good girl

Doris: kane doctor ya gao ke mang ( who's your doctor)

Masai: Doctor Van Niekerk

Doris: ke le buru? ( he's white)

\*\*\*she asked with a disgusting face\*\*\*

Masai: eya mama

Moera: bathong ma you were married to a white man

Doris: and your point baby girl

Moera: why that face when your surname is Johnson

Doris: he was a white English man and this doctor ke le buru ( is a white Afrikaner)... nkoko ( grandma) made my late father wear roko le tuku ( a dress and a head cover)to hide that he's a boy during apartheid so the police doesnt take him when they went around taking black boys from their homes for God knows what

\*\*\*she clicked her tongue\*\*\*

Doris: who knows maybe that's why I ended up as a transgender woman.... maybe it affected him psychologically and mentally and that also mutated his genes and I inherited it when I was conceived

\*\*\*the girls wanted to laugh so badly cause she always says this whenever she has an encounter with an Afrikaner person but they couldnt because they didn't want to be insulted at\*\*\*

Doris: mxm anyway let me go find him Mrs Lulu....mara a re k#ff#r mo nna ko mo kgaola m#rete....wait ke monna?? ( but if he calls me a k#ff#r I'll rip his balls off...wait he's a man??)

Moera: mmh

Doris mxm im sure o pale ekare vampire.... mo a leng o nkga e kare mafofa a a thapile a kgogo ya sesotho...im sure o apere le masepa le meno a ma yellowish mxm....im sure o mfa di fake smile tsa maburu towards black people especially when he learns of my surname nxa bloody racists ( mxm im sure he's as pale as a vampire... I'm sure he's eve smelling like a wet hard body chicken...I'm sure he's even wearing sh!tty clothes with yellowish teeth...mxm.... I'm sure he's

gonna give me those fake smiles white people give towards black people especially when he learns of my surname nxa bloody racists)

\*\*\*she went to Masai and kissed her forehead and she walked out calling out for a nurse and the girls busted out with laughter \*\*\*

Moera: yho mma lona ke drama queen bathong ( yho your mother is a drama queen)

Hills: you mean drag-Queen

\*\*\*more laughter\*\*\*

Masai: stop guys stop

\*\*\*she switched her oxygen tank on and put her oxygen mask on her face\*\*\*

Hills: le tla be la swa Masai le busy le tshega batho ba ba golo ( you'll die Masai busy laughing at old people)

\*\*\*more laughter\*\*\*

-----

## TSHIMOLOGO

\*\*\*Im coming from work driving home and I'm tired as hell....today was a busy day and I hardly had time to rest my feet well right now for some unknown reason my heart keeps skipping a beat every now and then....and not in a romantic way no....more like something bad will happen or is about to happen....I'm driving carefully on the road cause maybe the feeling I'm having might be because of an accident...i just breathed out loud cause I just drove in my street safely....when I got by the gate my heart almost stopped when I see a homeless man sitting by the gate....I'm slowly driving towards the gate and stop by the gate and I opened the car window half \*\*\*

Me: h...hi

\*\*\*the guy doesnt move or lift his head just like in my dreams or visions and my nerves decide to hit roof top \*\*\*

Me: hello...abuti??

\*\*\*Still nothing\*\*\*

Me: dont do this Tshimo...please don't do this I'm begging you

\*\*\*i say to myself...i decide to sit inside the car for a bit then then my stupid self decides to open my car door\*\*\*

Me: sh#!

\*\*\*i said as i got out of the car and took a step closer to the homeless hobo looking man...F3#k the smell coming from him is horrible\*\*\*

Me: ashee ( hi)...are you ok....ummm

\*\*\*i looked around then looked back at him\*\*\*

Me: are you hungry

\*\*\*the man didnt answer me he just slowly raised his head and looked up at me and dear Lord i almost fainted....this is the same guy i saw in my dreams or visions....the guy made gestures people make when they ask for food and i swallowed hard\*\*\*

Me: umm ohh ok let me...umm

\*\*\*i went to the car and opened the back seat and took my empty lunch box and opened the box of pizza and took out slices of pizza and put them on my lunch box and turned and went to give it to him....he quickly took it and started eating fast shame...after he was done he gave me the lunch box and he got up and walked away....no dankienyana vele mxm \*\*\*

Me: hey....sorry...abuti

\*\*\*he just kept walking limping a bit...damn he's huge like a giant...i swear its like he's from Nigeria Ghana Congo etc...yeah his height and body structure belongs there\*\*\*

Me: Gosh...

Voice: help my son...please help him

\*\*\*a shaky voice said and i quickly turned around to see who said that but there is no one....i quickly turned to look at the direction the man went and he's not in site\*\*\*

Me: ok he was here right....he ate my pizza....i mean im still holding my now empty lunch box....my ancestors you saw him right...im not losing my mind right....

\*\*\*i said to myself feeling like im about to lose my mind\*\*\*

-----

AT THE HOSPITAL

NARRATED

\*\*\*Alphalette walked inside Masai's ward and found her asleep....AJ is now with Moera it took a lot of convincing from Alphalette to take AJ from his mother ....she tried all the tricks to make him let her have him for a few days but Alphalette couldnt but he promised to bring him to her again....He stood next to the bed and looked at her sleeping looking so innocent\*\*\*

Masai: you're being creepy you know

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: I thought you're asleep

Sponsored

AD

serif; mso-bidi-font-family:"Times New Roman";mso-bidi-theme-font:minor-latin">Masai: your perfume gave you away

Alpha: its nice to be recognized not only by your handsome looks

\*\*\*she smiled rolling her eyes\*\*\*

Masai: who said you're handsome

Alpha: my mother

Masai: oho its her duty to lie to her child to boost his self esteem and confidence

\*\*\*Alphalette laughed showing his beautiful white teeth\*\*\*

Masai: e le gore where do Tsonga guys get such beautiful teeth ( where do Tsonga guys get such beautiful teeth)

\*\*\*she said to herself and Alphalette laughed again\*\*\*

Masai: sh#t I said that out loud??

\*\*\*he nodded...then his face became serious...he couldn't believe that this is the same woman he treated like trash\*\*\*

Alphalette: will you ever forgive me

Masai: huh?

\*\*\*she was confused\*\*\*

Alphalette: what I did to you back then will you ever forgive me

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Masai: why...why did you treat me like that

\*\*\*he sighed and sat down then he rubbed his hands together looking down\*\*\*

Alphalette: all I can say is we met at the wrong place and at the wrong time...i went there to release stress...my brother... Stevens....f#ck#d my then fiancée and got her pregnant....i wasnt in the right state of mind and my aim was to meet a slay queen or even a prostitute to release and offload on her then pay her afterwards

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Masai: so I looked like a prostitute

Alphalette: what.... no no...

\*\*\*he said looking up at her then the door opened and her doctor walked in\*\*\*

Alphalette: sh!t...

\*\*\*his phone rang and he looked at Masai and she was looking away from him\*\*\*

Doctor: afternoon

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed\*\*\*

Alphalette: doc

\*\*\*he looked at Masai again\*\*\*

Alphalette: I'll call you later...please answer your phone so we can finish this talk before that misunderstanding ruin us

\*\*\* then he walked out answering his phone\*\*\*

-----

## THE FOLLOWING DAY

\*\*\*Hills didnt sleep a wink last night and to make things worse Doris made her sleep at the apartment with her phone off....right now she's tired sleepy and nervous...she wonders how the meeting will go knowing how much Doris and her mother in law hate each other....She sighed deeply as the car drove inside her yard and there are two more cars parked inside\*\*\*

Hills: "God please take control"

\*\*\*she silently said with her eyes closed briefly then she opened the door and walked out then she followed Moera and Doris to the door....Doris didn't even knock she just walked in followed by her daughters\*\*\*

MmaTarek: look what the cat dragged in...nxa

\*\*\*Hills looked down when her eyes met with her husband's and Doris frowned looking at Mma Tarek\*\*\*

Doris: those without ass should just shut it...nxa

\*\*\*she walked further in then Hills and Moera greeted the elders but only Tarek's father and his uncle from his mother's side greeted\*\*\*

Doris: come sit here

\*\*\*they went and sat next to their mother\*\*\*

Doris: The Mthembus

\*\*\*the men greeted her back\*\*\*

Doris: im gonna go straight to the matter since I have places to be....im here concerning my daughter Shalate...your daughter in law....she told me about her husband's shenanigans and im here to hear from the horses mouth about what he told my daughter

MmaTarek: askies

Doris: Mazwakhe im not here to fight or exchange words with your wife...please reprimand her cause you know how rotten my mouth is

\*\*\*Mazwakhe sighed\*\*\*



Mazwakhe: Tarek we are here because of you and what you did so answer her

MmaTarek: my son doesnt have to answer to them Mazwakhe...she failed to give him a child and he went to look for a second wife to do so...simple

Doris: is it

MmaTarek: yes

Doris: ok

\*\*\*she looked at Tarek\*\*\*

Doris: and you still stand by your decision of taking your pregnant side chick as your second wife

\*\*\*Tarek sighed\*\*\*

Tarek: can I talk to my wife in private first...i need to talk to my wife first

Doris: ok...Shale go talk to your husband ntomboo

\*\*\*Shalate looked at Doris confused and she got up slowly just as Tarek did and they went outside through the siding door\*\*\*

Tarek: so you told her huh

\*\*\*she didnt say anything she just folded her arms and looked away\*\*\*

Tarek: do you even love me Shalate

Hills: look at who's talking....

Tarek: whats that supposed to mean huh....you didnt sleep at home last night...i was worried sick calling you and your phone was sending me straight to voicemail

Hills: and its ok for you to sleep outside akere.... Its ok for you to run to your hoe and leave me all alone in the house

Tarek: she had cramps and...

Hills: I dont care if she even died along with that bastard she's carrying...i dont care....im done with this sham of a marriage....im done Tarek...done!!!

\*\*\*she said with tears running down her cheeks and he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Tarek: you're calling my child a bastard Shalate

Hills: you'll hear from my lawyer....

\*\*\*she walked away but Tarek grabbed her arm and tightened the grip\*\*\*

Tarek: so you wanted me to stay faithful to a barren woman and miss a chance of being a father....you're here calling my son a bastard but you failed to give me one....she's not even married to me but she's giving me something I long to have....instead of making this work you're here throwing tantrums and acting childish

\*\*\*he said angrily and she looked at him with more tears gushing out...she couldnt believe he just called her barren...that broke her heart even more\*\*\*

Hills: then let this barren woman go....this marriage is over....now get your hands off me

\*\*\*Tarek chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Tarek: who do you think will love you other than me Shalate

Voice: her family

\*\*\*they turned and it was Moera...she's angry....mad-angry\*\*\*

Moera: lets go Hills....

\*\*\*she looked at Tarek with an angry look on her face\*\*\*

Moera: if I were you I would let her arm go

\*\*\*Tarek chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Tarek: you gonna come back....you love me Shalate....i own your heart the same way you own mine....this is home for you

\*\*\*he said hitting his chest\*\*\*

Tarek: and you know it

\*\*\*he let her go and she walked inside\*\*\*

Moera: watch your back wena

\*\*\*then she followed Hills inside\*\*\*

Doris: baby

Hills: im...going to...pack my things

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice and tears running down her cheeks\*\*\*

MmaTarek: mxm

Moera: lets go

\*\*\*they walked away\*\*\*

MmaTarek: she better not take anything that belongs to my son

Mazwakhe: Khethiwe!!

Uncle: sisi this is not how you behave in front of the in laws

MmaTarek: I never liked this girl for my son so why should I pretend now

\*\*\*Doris laughed\*\*\*

Doris: says a cheating whore

MmaTarek: uthini wena ( what did you say)

Doris: maybe you should get down from your high horse and tell your husband who fathered you two youngest children....i mean your twins

\*\*\*she got up and picked her hand bag as the room became tense..... Khethiwe froze and became pale instantly\*\*\*

Doris: Max Khoza....rings a bell ntomboo???

\*\*\*Khethiwe swallowed hard trying to keep calm\*\*\*

MmaTarek: I...i...i dont know what you're talking about

Doris: mxm....i have all your files ntomboo....continue treating my daughter like trash and I'll end this sham of a marriage nxa

\*\*\*She followed the girls\*\*\*

## CHAPTER 08

NARRATED

TWO DAYS LATER

\*\*\*Well Masai got discharged and she's now back at the apartment....As for Hills ever since they left her house she hasn't been herself and Doris suggested that she leaves with her to keep a close eye on her until she's sure she's back to her usual self again....They are all worried about her and the fact that she has closed everyone out isn't helping....Anyway Masai and Moera walked inside Doris's bedroom and they find her repacking her clothes nicely inside her traveling bag...she's neat like that\*\*\*

Doris: keng ( what)

Moera: ummm ma...there's something we....i mean Masai wants to talk to you about

\*\*\*Doris frowned while Masai swallowed hard\*\*\*

Doris: I hope you're not pregnant again Masai

Masai: bathong mama no im not

Doris: good now keng ( what is it)

\*\*\*Masai sighed and looked down biting her lower lip\*\*\*

Moera: she found her baby daddy

\*\*\*she said quickly and Masai gave her the "wtf" look and Moera just shrugged\*\*\*

Doris: found him where

\*\*\*Masai breathed out loud....it was now or never\*\*\*

Masai: we bumped into him at the grocery store and Khai cried for him

\*\*\*Doris put her scarf down with a confused frown on her face\*\*\*

Doris: explain further cause im confused

Moera: ke Ngaka mama ( he's a Traditional Healer mama) and I dont know how but

Khai recognized him....he cried for him

Doris: Modimo wa kgotso ...Ngaka Masai ( Lord or mercy....a Traditional Healer Masai)

Masai: I didnt know he was one mama

\*\*\*she said looking scared\*\*\*

Moera: he doesn't look like one mama

Doris: you know what I dont care if he's a sangoma moloi or mmamogashwa ( a traditional healer

Sponsored

AD

witch or even a water spirit)...tell him that he needs to be here within an hour or I'll go find him myself and rip his balls off with my own two hands for what he did to my daughter

\*\*\*the girls swallowed hard\*\*\*

Moera: thats not all mama

Doris: what is it now

Masai: he's Stevens elder brother....well half brother

Doris: yho Amen!!!...go and call him....now!

\*\*\*Masai sighed and walked out then Moera bit her lower lip\*\*\*

Moera: dont be too harsh on him mama....remember he didn't abandon or reject the pregnancy

Doris: what did I say about getting involved in things that doesn't concern you

Moera: she's my twin mama

Doris: do you two share kuku ( a pussy) and a womb

Moera: bathong mama

Doris: did this boy f#ck you too and get you pregnant

\*\*\*Moera raised her hands in defeat\*\*\*

Moera: yho mama I was just saying

Doris: what I want to hear from you is you telling me when you're leaving that useless job of yours then I'll listen

Moera: in two months time mama....renovations at my company will be done by then

Doris: now you're talking.....and di clients

Moera: I got it under control don't worry

Doris: good now go and check on Shalate....i dont want her being left alone for a long time....she's on a suicide stage and im not taking any chances

Moera: bathong mama

Doris: I was once there so I know what im talking about girly

\*\*\*Moera walked out shaking her head\*\*\*

Moera: did you call him

\*\*\*Masai shook her head no\*\*\*

Masai: im scared...you know mama Mo...yho she's gonna grill the poor guy

Moera: you have no choice...let me go check on Hills

\*\*\*she walked way leaving Masai busy contemplating on whether to call Alphalette or not\*\*\*

-----

## AT ALPHALETTE'S HOUSE

Alpha: how's your stomach

Mpande: much better but its still feels funny

\*\*\*he said rubbing it\*\*\*

Mpande: nginenkinga nomsuzo nje (im having trouble with intense farting )

\*\*\*Alpha laughed\*\*\*

Mpande: angisuzi angisuzi ngiyenza umrivithi bafo ( I cant stop farting bro)

\*\*\*more laughter from Alphalette\*\*\*

Alpha: wooh ok

\*\*\*Mpande whistled dramatically shaking his head\*\*\*

Mpande: if I fart now you'll faint bafo im telling you

Alpha: the farting will stop don't worry

Mpande: eh I hope so cause yeer the smell is horrible

\*\*\*Alphalette just shook his head\*\*\*

Alpha: I want to do a welcoming ceremony for Junior and to also introduce him to my ancestors

Mpande: that's good...that's good

\*\*\*he said nodding with a serious look n his face\*\*\*

Alpha: yeah its time but before that I have to pay for damages and make things right with Masai and her family

Mapande: yeah and try and ask if he can use your surname

\*\*\*Alpha sighed brushing his head\*\*\*

Alpha: yeah...ive been thinking about that a lot lately....i just hope they'll agree  
Mpande: if they love the boy they will...you're not just like any ordinary man Alpha....  
And your ancestors are savage and stubborn

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: I just wish Gazankulu was here with us...eish I dont know what to do anymore  
mfowethu....i've tried everything and the results are the same....he'll come back

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Mpande: eish yah neh...but kuzolunga have faith ( all will be well have faith)

\*\*\*Tshepo walked to them....he's the boy Alphaette took in and took care of\*\*\*

Tshepo: Uncle

\*\*\*he said as they did their weird handshake\*\*\*

Mpande: aow boyza....how was nyuvesi (university)

\*\*\*Tshepo laughed\*\*\*

Tshepo: it was ok...baba unjani ( how are you baba)

Alpha: boyza

\*\*\*he sat down\*\*\*

Alpha: you look sad....whats wrong

\*\*\*Tshepo sighed\*\*\*

Tshepo: nyaopes have taken over ma's yard baba

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Mpande: ai those addicted leeches nxa...dont worry we will take care of it ok

\*\*\*he nodded\*\*\*

Alpha: talk...i can see you want to say something

\*\*\*he brushed his head looking down\*\*\*

Mpande: umithisile mfana ( did you impregnate someone boy)

Tshepo: huh....ummm no ofcourse not uncle

Mpande: then what is it

\*\*\*Tshepo sighed\*\*\*

Tshepo: I was thinking

Mpande: hai ucabanga ka khulu these days neh ( you think a lot these days neh)

Tshepo: uncle...

Mpande: sorry ngiyadlala...khuluma ke ( sorry im kidding...talk then)

\*\*\*Tshepo sighed\*\*\*

Tshepo: ive been saving up some money from my allowance to erect a tombstone for ma

Alpha: ok....thats good my boy...thats good

Tshepo: umm I saw a cheaper one for like R5000

Alpha: ok I know a place where they sell nice ones and they are cheap as well so we will go tomorrow after your classes how's that

\*\*\* Tshepo smiled widely\*\*\*

Tshepo: ok...thank you baba

Alpha: now go and eat then rest

Tshepo: ok

\*\*\*he got up and walked away smiling...this meant a lot for him\*\*\*

Mpande: he's a good boy with a good head on his shoulders

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: I already bought her a good tombstone the only thing thats left is for it to be erected....i want to see his face when he sees it

\*\*\*Mpande smiled\*\*\*

Mpande: ncooh you have a good heart shems

Alpha: tsek

\*\*\*Mpande laughed\*\*\*

Mpande: so how much did the tombstone cost

Alpha: 40 grand

\*\*\*Mpande whistled\*\*\*

Mpande: yah neh some dead people are lucky shem

Alpha: mxm

Mpande: its the truth...i mean you're not even related to her or her son but you're spending 40 grand for her tombstone

Alpha: blood makes you related Mpande but loyalty makes you family...that should be your motto in life more especially cause you're in the taxi industry....it should be loyalty or nothing....this boy ever since I took him in has been nothing but loyal to me....he has had my back even though he shouldn't.... He sees a father in me and that's what I intend to be to him

Mpande: ok I understand but be careful bafo....as for me even if you're loyal to me I wont trust you....i've been betrayed a lot of times before so trust to me expensive

Alpha: and I understand

\*\*\*Alpha's phone rang and it was Masai...his heart skipped a beat then he cleared his throat and he answered\*\*\*

Alpha: mama

\*\*\*Mpande wiggled his eyebrows smiling at him\*\*\*

Masai: hey Phalette

Alpha: are you ok

Masai: yeah umm I told mama about you....that you're AJ's father and stuff

Alpha: ok...how did she take the news

Masai: lets just say you have about an hour to make it here....she wants to see you as in now

\*\*\*Alphalette breathed out\*\*\*

Alpha: ok im not my way

Masai: and Phalette???

Alpha: yeah

Masai: be prepared for anything....she's crazy

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: thanks for the heads up

Masai: ok shap

Alpha: shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and Alphalette rubbed his face\*\*\*

Mpande: what

Alpha: mother in law wants to see me

\*\*\*Mpande laughed\*\*\*

Mpande: ayeye

Alpha: Masai says she's crazy

Mpande: can I come with....i need to see Moera

Alpha: really Mpande

Mpande: what

Alpha: mxm

\*\*\*he got up and walked away\*\*\*

Mpande: you cant got there alone what if she attacks you...you need my protection and plus I need to see Moera man

\*\*\*he said also getting up and following him to the house\*\*\*



-----

NARRATED

TSHIMOLOGO

\*\*\* She closed the door and locked it and automatically opened her gate rushing to the garage....she's late ...she slept late last night binge watching a series on Netflix and now the repercussions are gonna get her a warning at work....As soon as she walks past the gate rushing to open the garage door something outside the gate catches her eye....she stops on her tracks and moves towards the gate and yep its that hobo guy laying on the pavement\*\*\*

Tshimo: no...no ....no

\*\*\*she said shaking her head\*\*\*

Tshimo: hello.....hellooo

\*\*\*the guy doesnt move then her heart starts beating fast....what if he's dead "she thought"\*\*\*

Tshimo: abuti....hello

\*\*\*she said moving closer to him and still the guy doesnt move ....she reaches for her cellphone inside her bag and quickly looked up when she heard a voice of a woman speaking in front of her\*\*\*

Woman: please save him....im begging you please save my son

\*\*\*it was a woman begged crying.....she looked sad....you could see hurt all over her face\*\*\*

Woman: please don't call an ambulance....he wont make it if they inject him with their medicine....please save him....heal him my daughter and his ancestors and myself we will bless you....please my daughter....he doesnt have much time....nako kombela ( im begging you)

\*\*\*she pleaded with Tshimo getting on her knees and Tshimo swallowed hard....she looked around and for some odd reason there were no people on the street....its just too quiet for her liking\*\*\*

Tshimo: im not a nurse....yes I work at the hospital but im not a nurse mama

Woman: please help him my daughter....im begging you he doesn't have much time

Tshimo: don't do it Tshimo....please don't do it....

\*\*\*she said to herself\*\*\*

Tshimo: AAARGGG....F#CK!!!.....i don't know why this is happening to me but you have some explaining to do my ancestors....i cant take this anymore

\*\*\*She then rushed to the guy and the smell coming from him was horrible....she closed her eyes and held her breath and put her two fingers on the side of his neck to feel his pulse and luckily its there\*\*\*

Tshimo: pheeewww

\*\*\*she said as she moved back to catch her breath\*\*\*

Tshimo: how the hell am I gonna help him....how am I gonna drag him inside....he's a giant bathong

\*\*\*she said to herself feeling frustrated....she looked at the woman but she was just looking at her son crying\*\*\*

Tshimo: think Tshimo...think....ummm right....ok I hope it works

\*\*\* She turns him around and grabs him under his armpits and dragged him inside the yard\*\*\*

-----

MASAI

\*\*\* There's a knock on the door and my heart starts beating fast cause that might be Alphalette....Moera gets up and goes to check who it is....after a few seconds she walked in with him....damn he looks hot....gosh stop it Masa...stop it\*\*\*

Moera: are you ready baby daddy

\*\*\*she whispered to him\*\*\*

Me: Mo

Moera: keng ( what)

\*\*\*i gave the "wtf" look and she just shrugged\*\*\*

Moera: Ma Khai's dad is here!!!

\*\*\*she shouted \*\*\*

Me: you biatch!!!

\*\*\*i whispered to her giving her a mean look\*\*\*

Moera: s#ck my d#ck biatch

\*\*\* she stuck her tongue out at me and laughed walking away...nxa....Alpha sat down....gosh I didnt even offer him a seat...yho Masai\*\*\*

Alpha: why didnt you tell me you were discharged

Me: umm there's a lot going on....my sister Hills is not ok so everything just happened so fast and we were all worried about her that it slipped my mind

\*\*\*gosh why am I rumbling like this\*\*\*

Alpha: did something happen to her

Me: ummm problems in her marriage

\*\*\*i hope he gets its cause thats all I can share\*\*\*

Alpha: ooh I get it....dont worry with time she'll be fine

\*\*\*i just nodded and mama graced us with her presence holding Khai in her arms and as soon as this betrayer sees his father he screamed and wiggled out of ma's hold and rushed to him....Alphalette picks him up and hugs him smiling widely....ncooh this is cute but that look on ma's face is deadly\*\*\*

Alpha: Mrs Rapu...

Me: Mrs Johnson...

\*\*\*i corrected him quickly\*\*\*

Alpha: right...Mrs Johnson its nice to finally meet you

Doris: mmmh I hope you didn't use witchcraft on my grandson

Me: mama

Doris: keng wena ( what)

\*\*\*yho I kept quiet...God please take control I'm begging you\*\*\*

Doris: I mean he's known you for like two seconds and already he's screaming papa as if ne o mo tiisa phuwana when Masa I was still pregnant ( as if you were sleeping with Masai when she was still pregnant )

\*\*\*Gosh let me die this instance....please...let me...yho this woman.... Alphalette just cleared his throat I'm sure he doesn't even know how to respond to that\*\*\*

Doris: bana ba di one night stand tsa go tlhoka condom....bona o tshwana byang le wena e kare ne o gana molato ( one night stand babies without a condom....look at how he looks like you as if you denied him)

Me: mama

Doris: keng Masai ( what Masai)

Me: please don't...

Doris: don't what

\*\*\*i just kept quiet embarrassed to the core....Alphalette cleared his throat...you can now see he's uncomfortable\*\*\*

Alpha: ummm firstly I would like to apologize for how I treated your daughter Mrs Johnson....i wish I did things differently and I humbly apologize

Doris: what I want to know is why

\*\*\*yho\*\*\*

NARRATED

Alpha: the truth is I found out that my brother slept with my then fiance and got her pregnant so I went to Cape town to unwind and offload....

\*\*\*he looked at Masai who was looking down\*\*\*

Alpha: the truth is I was looking for slay queens to have fun with but I got hooked to Masai...i could see she's innocent and not the kind of woman I should do what I want to do with but I couldn't help myself....i got dragged to her and her personality....i regretted what I did to her but my mistake was my reaction.....i should've been nicer but I panicked and kicked her out which I'll forever regret

Doris: mmmh

Alpha: the thing is im willing to wait for her to heal ma....from what I did to her and what my brother did to her....i wanna make her mine and by that I mean my wife

\*\*\*Masai's eyes popped out and Doris raised an eyebrow looking at him\*\*\*

Alpha: I dont care what my family will say or what people will say since she was engaged to Stevens....i saw her first and this time around im not letting her go

\*\*\*Moera is eavesdropping smiling....she fans herself blushing taken by Alpha's words\*\*\*

Doris: mmmh

\*\*\*she got up\*\*\*

Doris: come here Masai

\*\*\*Masai got up slowly and went closer to her mother and Doris balanced with her and got on top of the couch and stood there\*\*\*

Masai: mama what are you doing

Doris: shhhh...don't move

\*\*\*Alphalette is confused\*\*\*

Doris: etla mo ( come here)

\*\*\*Alphalette got up and went closer to Doris looking freaked out a bit\*\*\*

Doris: closer boy

\*\*\*Alphalette got closer....Doris was a bit taller than him now that she was standing on top of the couch....she's a short woman by nature...not too short but short\*\*\*

Doris: look me in the eyes....ditaba di matlhong boy

\*\*\*Alpha did while Masai wished for the ground to open and she just dives in and hide forever....Doris looked at her with a scary look on her face\*\*\*

Doris: if you hurt my daughter and precious grandson I will put a bullet between your eyes looking at you like this until you take your last breath....

\*\*\*she said pointing at her area between her eyes with her index finger looking scary\*\*\*

Masai: ooh GOD take me now

\*\*\*she said to herself looking down ready to die from embarrassment \*\*\*

Alpha: ye...yes mam

Doris: I dont care if your father is Mamogashwa ( a water spirit) and you got initiated for 12 years under water you hurt my babies I'll come after you guns blazing ok

\*\*\*Alpha swallowed\*\*\*

Alpha: yes mam

Doris: no witchcraft on my babies boy

Alpha: yes mam

Doris: and I know relationships will have ups and downs and fights and so forth...im not talking about that....im sure you know what im talking about right boy

Alpha: yes mam I know what you're talking about

Doris: good glad we on the same page....help me down from here

\*\*\*Alphalette helped her down and she smiled looking at him\*\*\*

Doris: I like you...take care of my babies ok

Alpha: I will I promise

Doris: good....Masai give him something to drink

\*\*\*Masai held her head feeling dizzy all of a sudden and she threw herself on the couch...Alpha rushed to her\*\*\*

Alpha: are you ok mama

Doris: Miss LuLu???

Masai: mama

\*\*\*she said trying to calm herself down\*\*\*

Doris: im done threatening your man now calm down haw....Moera!!!

Moera: mama

Doris: bring Masai's medication

\*\*\*She looked at Masai\*\*\*

Doris: o jola le ngaka bo weak a bo fele my skat....go moerskond nou....o futhisa byang dikulane le go di peita o tatazela so ( you're dating a traditional healer now so being weak must end my love....things are no longer the same....how are you gonna help his patients when you're this weak).....no man hold the bull by its horns and show this Lupus masepa( sh!t)

\*\*\*Alphalette wanted to laugh so bad but he held himself.....Anyway Masai drank her medication and they left them alone....Alpha shook his head not believing what just happened....a laugh escaped his mouth as he shook his head....Masai ended up joining him and they laughed together\*\*\*

Alpha: yho

\*\*\*he said wiping his tears off\*\*\*

Alpha: yho ku famba yi ku vona straight ( seeing is believing straight)

Masai: im sorry about all that....i did tell you she's crazy

-----  
TO BE CONTINUED....

## CHAPTER 09

### TSHIMOLOGO

\*\*\*I'm sitting here looking at this man and asking myself what the hell am i doing....what has gotten to me...who the hell do I think I am....I mean yes I do prophesy people here and there but that's where it ends bathong not this....As for this man I have tried pouring water on his face thinking he will wake up but dololo...nothing....all I know is he's still alive.... Well i took off his baggy dirty and stinking clothes and what I saw has left me traumatized to the core the guy's d#ck was standing firm in fact its still standing firm...mmmh yep you heard me right...I know I shouldn't be saying this but he's alive if you know what I mean and its huge....these are the kind of guys that would rip your nana apart during sex im tell you....Its an anaconda that thing and I have never seen it before let me just say I have never dated anyone with that kind of anaconda before....Im still traumatized...like who walks around with that kind of heavy machine bathong....like isn't it heavy...umthwalo wakhe awumsindi yini like MaZulu would say...yho (clap once)...yho hai Tshimo stop talking about another child's private parts mahn....

Anyway im now cleaning his body and the water im using to clean him e kare seretse now (clay)....i took the dirty water outside and went to dispose of it and poured another clean warm one and went back to him and I continued to wash his body again...Shem yena he's not dark as in like dark he was just dirty bathong...his color looks nice on him and the tattoos compliment his skin color nicely....ok Tshimo concentrate....concentrate mogirl....yho even this face mask I'm wearing is not helping kganthe when last did this guy bath bathong....anyway I know once he's thoroughly clean he'll smell better....

Phweew Im now done with the front so I turn him so he lays on his front and the huge tattoo of a tiger covering his whole back catches my eye...ok the tattoos on his arms and neck didn't shock

me but this one...nope....even its eyes looks real like its looking into your soul....ok I'm exaggerating but no man.... Anyway its nice shem but creepy at the same time....Ok I'm done now so I'm putting lotion on his body and his d#ck is getting harder and harder and harder...yho this is not on bathong I know another woman doing this would like seeing all this but yho hae not me....wait... what if he's pretending to be passed out....what if....out of the blue his hand grips mine tight and he opens his eyes and looks at me with a scary frown on his face.....the scream that comes out of my mouth people.....i'm screaming trying to get out of his hold with my heart ready to stop pumping blood when his grip loosens and he passes out again\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED

JABU

\*\*\*He's on his way to KZN....he's restless with what's been happening between him and Lolly....its not sitting well with him.... after sitting down and analyzing the situation he now sees that he messed up pretty bad....The treatment he's been giving her is wrong him and Lorraine have had a good friendship for a very long time and one time they even gave the relationship thing a chance and again he was the one that messed things up thinking his not good enough for her and now he has done it again and this time around he crossed the line pretty bad....he doesn't know how she'll receive him and how serious her relationship with that guy Kenny is....Yes he's not ready for any romantic relationship and even though it was hard to accept that Lolly has moved on and she's even distant but she cant move on with Kenny...Never!!! " he thought".... After Heath told him the kind of business this Kenny guy is into he knew he needs to save Lolly again from harms way like he did years back....His phone rings and its Ruu...he frowns but answers anyway\*\*\*

Jabu: did you call me by mistake wizzy (wizard)

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: what are trying to do Jabs



Jabu: what are you talking about now Ruu

Ruu: go back home

\*\*\*Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: I cant

Ruu: you gonna mess things up more than they already are

Jabu: I need to try at least man....not him...i refuse

Ruu: if not him then who.....you and him are the same

Jabu: ha eh hey ha eh....dont compare me with that son of b#tch Ruslan

Ruu: you do the same work

Jabu: mfowethu...don't compare me with that fool

\*\*\*He said with a firm voice and Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: you gonna put her in a bad situation Jabs....you about to mess up her life and you don't know what that guy is capable of....for once cant you put her first huh....can you just let her enjoy this while it last

\*\*\*Jabu clenched his jaws....there's no way in hell " he thought"\*\*\*

Jabu: I may not be ready for her now....but the ancestors said she's mine to have...forever

Ruu: I don't like this chosen one bullshit anymore cause it makes fools like you think you own your chosen ones....you don't....just because she's your chosen one doesn't mean she's gonna fall on your lap and you'll live happily ever and after....others don't even end up with their chosen ones because they behave like you.....you had a chance and you treated her like sh!t and now that another man has taken over you wanna act like Rambo

Jabu: futsek nxa

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and his phone rang again and he ignored it....it rang again and he still ignored it and continued to drive then an sms pinged and he read it\*\*\*

Ruu: " you better answer that damn phone or I'll send La Parca or Saint to you right now and im not playing"

Jabu: AAAAHHHH...MOTETAO RUSLAN MAN NXA!!!

\*\*His phone rang again and he breathed out and answered\*\*\*

Jabu: keng ( what)

Ruu: apologize

Jabu: for what

Ruu: im looking at you now and I know you swore at me now apologize

Jabu: looking at me from where....how

\*\*\*he said looking around and he couldnt see him\*\*\*

Jabu: Ruslan

Ruu: apologize!!!

\*\*\*he said with a firm voice that gave Jabu the chills\*\*\*

Jabu: eish...shap ge (ok)...Im sorry for swearing at you man....im sorry

\*\*\*silence\*\*\*

Jabu: haarde man....stop being like that I'm apologizing bosso

Ruu: mxm

\*\*\*Jabu breathed out then silence\*\*\*

Jabu: for real im sorry man

Ruu: why are you afraid to love her and make her yours

\*\*\*Jabu swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruu: you cant stand her with another man no matter how good or bad the man is but at the same time you dont want her....tell me how does that work man

Jabu: im gonna hurt her man

Ruu: and who said you're perfect....of course you will

\*\*\*Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: your life is messed up man....and yes you're in no state to start a romantic relationship now....you're still in a healing process and your divorce with Amo is still being processed...i get it ok I totally get it but that doesnt mean you should hurt the poor girl and treat her like trash and also mess up her life and love life

Jabu: he's not good for her man I can feel it

Ruu: no man will ever be

\*\*\*Jabu swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruu: fix things between you two...make her trust you again....heal her broken heart the one you broke and make yourself her safe space not all this Rambo bullsh!t you've been doing....be better than the guy she's now dating and watch cracks from their relationship start showing while you heal and fix yourself for her arrival

\*\*\*Jabu swallowed hard speechless\*\*\*

Ruu: don't fight the fool and don't fight her....I'll be watching you closely

\*\*\*then he dropped the call\*\*\*

Jabu: eish

\*\*\*he brushed his hair and beard feeling hot all of a sudden....his phone rang again and this time it was Heath\*\*\*

Jabu: eish Mshikaro

Heath: where are you...i just got your message

Jabu: on my way to KZN

Heath: his territory Jabu...are you crazy

Jabu: relax

Heath: hey futsek...dont tell me nonsense....i get it you're going through sh!t but suicide

Jabu...really

Jabu: eban suicide ya eng nou ( what suicide now)....do I look like I qualify go nna sf#be sa satane ( to be satan's b#tch)....

Heath: etsena kae eo byanong ( what does that got to do with anything)

Jabu: akere o bolela ka di suicide ( you're busy talking about suicides)

Heath: what the f#ck are you going to do there

Jabu: to see Lolly and also do some besigheid ( business)

\*\*\*Heath sighed\*\*\*

Heath: ive already concluded that guy doesnt like you

Jabu: and ka mo nyanya lenna ( I hate him too)...wanyontsha ( he makes me sick)...o mferola dibete....wanshishimisa ( he disgusts me)....ontlatsa phinya ( he makes me angry)

Heath: and you're going there to poke a snake in its hole Mjava

Jabu: dai man ga nyala Lorraine ( that man is not married to Lorraine)

Heath: you keep saying that as if you are the one married to her

Jabu: madlozi are ( ancestors say) she's my wife

Heath: now i see gore waikutlwisa ka ( its your first time with) this chosen one thing and you're going overboard now

Jabu: tsek....take care of my son until I get back....shap

Heath: be safe and call for help

Jabu: a ke snai joh ( im not a fool)...i can take care of myself...shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and Jabu sighed and continued to drive\*\*\*

-----

THE REINEKE HOUSEHOLD

NARRATED

\*\*\*Stevens walks in whistling\*\*\*

MrsReineke: hey hey not inside my house jou bleksem!!!!

\*\*\*he chuckled and followed his mother's voice to the kitchen and he saw some baby toys by the lounge he frowned and got inside the kitchen and he found her baking\*\*\*

Stevens: the household queen

\*\*\*he kissed her cheek\*\*\*

Ma: hey baby

Stevens: I saw baby toys in there was Nka here

\*\*\*he said opening the fridge and taking out bottled water\*\*\*

Ma: nope....you know Helga will never bring Nka here herself

\*\*\* he sighed\*\*\*

Stevens: then who's toys are those

Ma: Alpha's son

Stevens: what..

\*\*\* he stopped drinking water from the bottle and he frowned looking at his mother\*\*\*

Ma: yep....he brought him here...gosh he looks like him....he reminded me of Alpha when he was still a baby...i cant believe it....Alpha is a father....finally

\*\*\*she said smiling busy mixing her dough\*\*\*

Stevens: you brought that bastard inside my father's house ma....how can you disrespect my father like that!!!

\*\*\*Mrs Reineke stopped what she was doing with a frown on her face and faced Stevens\*\*\*

Ma: what did you just call my grandson Letlamoreng

Stevens: a son of a bastard is a bastard and....

\*\*\*a hard slap landed on his cheek leaving his cheek covered with flour....then she took the bowl with eggs vanilla and milk mixture inside and threw it at his face\*\*\*

Stevens: MA!!!!

Ma: GET OUT OF MY HOUSE NOW BEFORE I MOURN YOUR STUPID DEATH....STUPID BOY!!!

Stevens: you hitting me because of him ma

Ma: Stevens I said get THE F#CK OUT OF MY HOUSE!!!

\*\*\*Stevens chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Stevens: dad will know about this

Ma: and you think im scared of your father....let me tell you something about me boy....you see all this...this money and all this sh!t doesn't move me....even if I leave your father empty handed I have a son that has worked hard for every sh!t he owns...i'll never lack anything

Sponsored

AD

a son who's not a trust fund baby....now im sick and tired of always taking sh!t from you and your father thinking ukuthi I cant make it without him....both you and Ntsako are my babies....i gave birth to you two....i raised you two.... your hate towards him is uncalled for Letlamoreng.... You treat him like I didn't give birth to him...what did he ever do to you huh....why do you hate him this much....you came from the same womb for God's sake....you sucked on the same breasts!!!

Stevens: he shouldn't exist....i should be your first son and not that useless Shangaan....you always take his side!!!! you jump through hoops for him and I hate it....he's a witch and he shouldn't exist on this world....you should've aborted him and I would be your only son

\*\*\*another slap landed on his face and tears ran down his cheeks\*\*\*

Ma: get out of my house...

\*\*\*she said with tears running down her cheeks\*\*\*

Stevens: this is my father's house so I'm not going anywhere and that bastard's child should never step foot here again!!!

\*\*\*she chuckled wiping her tears off and she went to wash her hands and walked to the door\*\*\*

Ma: fine I'll leave cause I cant stay in the same house as you....its your father's house angisho and knowing your father he'll justify your behavior and hurtful words so I'll leave mtwana ka Stevens

\*\*\*she walked out and Stevens swallowed hard...he held on to the counter with his jaws clenched....he has never exchanged words like this with his mother and seeing her hurt like that because of him hurt him but he cant help it....he hates Alphalette \*\*\*

-----

NARRATED

## TSHIMOLOGO

\*\*\* She's sitting outside still shaken by what transpired earlier on....after the whole grabbing scene she ran outside screaming and the next door neighbor asked whats wrong ready to use his whistle to call for help but Tshimo lied and told her that it was a spider that freaked her out and it looks like she believed her....she hasn't gone inside since then and now she's afraid.....why did she help him she even called in sick from work for a homeless man that might harm her....She swallowed hard still feeling freaked out now she can see she just shot herself on the foot....now she doesn't know how to handle this situation she just gotten herself into.... She helped clean him up and now she's asking herself how is she gonna help him cause the ghost said he doesn't have much time and she doesn't want him to die inside her house....

She got up and slowly went to peep inside the boys-room ( backyard room) she put him in and he was still in that position and his member is now asleep too.... She stood by the door looking at him scared to approach him...she bit her lower lip shaking with fear and she put her forehead by the door frame closing her eyes to calm her racing heart so she can go and cover him with something\*\*\*

Voice: I...i wont hurt you I promise

\*\*\*she jumped screaming again when she realized the deep scary voice is coming from him and she ran outside\*\*\*

-----

## AT THE HOTEL

## NARRATED

\*\*\*Stevens and Alphalette's mother decided to book herself into a hotel to calm down...she didnt go to Alphalette's house cause she doesnt want him involved in this cause she knows her son and how he can get when it comes to her....she's heart broken by her fight with Stevens and the hurtful words he said about Alphalette and his son....She blames her husband for turning Stevens against Alphalette she hates to admit it but she's aware that her husband has never accepted Alphalette since they started dating....he has always been reserved towards him and never really tried to bond or create some sort of relationship with him...The truth is he has never treated him like a son and it breaks her heart everyday that her son has been going through all this and she's still with the same man even after so many years.....Alphalette stayed with his uncle before he got married cause the atmosphere in their house was just too much for a child to bear so she decided to let him stay with his uncle and the uncle took good care of him until she suggested that he goes and stays at a boarding school when the uncle got married and she could see the woman didn't like Alphalette.....

The uncle never changed towards Alpha and he's a been a father figure since even today and she's grateful for that.....she's hurt that things have escalated to this between the brothers....She has tried to bring them closer but only Alpha was the one willing but as for Stevens ( she shook her head as more tears ran down her cheeks)...why did she stay with that man....she blames him cause he also makes distasteful remarks about Alphalette every now and then and who knows the kind of poison he fill their son with when its just the two of them cause no child can say all those despicable things without his mind being poisoned at a young age.... Her phone rings and its her husband and she dropped the call and clicks her tongue.....then it rings again and its a number she doesn't know and something tells her to answer it...she wipes her tears off and takes a deep breath and answers it\*\*\*

Bahle: Bahle Reineke hello

Doris: hello this is Doris Johnson....may I please speak to Alphalette's mother

\*\*\*Bahle frowns\*\*\*

Bahle: this is her

Doris: good...wakhuluma...wa bolabola or wa buwa or wa amba

\*\*\*she frowned some more\*\*\*

Bahle: how can I help you...Doris right

Doris: you haven't answered me mogirl

Bahle: ngiyakhuluma

Doris: good but im sure you understand Setswana neh

Bahle: yeah....what is this about

Doris: im Masai's mother and I got your numbers from your son....well he gave them to my daughter and she gave them to me

Bahle: ooh ok....how is she and my grandson doing

Doris: good....look my skat im gonna go straight to the point....we or should I say your son need to pay damages and introduce my grandson to his ancestors....i dont want problems le Badimo ( with ancestors) since his father ke Thokoza Mkhulu ( is a traditional healer)

Bahle: umm ok

Doris: I also spoke to my daughter and she agreed gore after the whole damages thing her son should take her father's surname so he doesn't encounter problems when he's older....remember di ancestors tsa bo Thokoza di a lapisa my skat and I dont want stress for my babies

\*\*\*Mrs Reineke is shocked\*\*\*

Bahle: ummm yeah I agree

Doris: so please contact relevant people and I'll be waiting for you at my house...I'll send you my live location

Bahle: ok ummm I'll call his uncle and let him know

Doris: great and my skat I don't want people who'll come with drama to my house....we doing this for the boy not to buttheads and show gore who's superior and sh!t.....i have a very foul mouth and le go moer(a) ka moer(a).....nna ke kgaola poo diballs ka manicure skat....a ke tshamekelwe ( and I can fight also....i rip a bull's balls off using my manicures love....im bad like that) so only come with people who wants to help our grandson and we will have a good day and enjoy ourselves and be merry man...go ba monate man wa bona so yah ( its gonna be nice)

Bahle: wow... ummm ok I hear you...i'll call his uncle..he's a good man and a father figure to him

Doris: good and I like the fact that you're not giving me attitude it shows gore we gonna get along just fine and be great grandmothers to our grandson....alright my skat re tla bua akere ( alright my love we will talk ok)

Bahle: umm ok bye

Doris: shap lala



\*\*\*they ended the call and Mrs Reineke just looked at her phone still shocked.....then she laughed shaking her head\*\*\*

Bahle: yho!!!

-----

TAREK MTHEMBU

\*\*\*I have been trying to get hold of Shalate and I cant....she blocked me everywhere.....i dont know if she's ok wherever she is or not.... I cant even call her sisters cause I know by now they hate me more than they already did.....Stress is killing me and ngapha Samke is busy reminding me every f#ck#n seconds about doing right by her....she told her family and those people showed up at my parents house and you guessed it right mama welcomed them and assured them and promised them sh!t ( sigh).....my plan has failed and I don't know what to do anymore....The only thing I'm grateful for is the fact that Shalate hasn't served me with divorce papers maybe she just needs to calm down and realize that we can actually make this work that I love her so much and she loves me as much....yeah she'll come around but eish I didn't wanna pay lobola for Samke without her permission or her presence there....

I wanted everyone to see a united front between me and her.....to see her supporting me as her husband...i cant imagine life without her...i need to fight for her with everything I got....I know people will say but I have Samkelo well she's a means to an end....what I need from her are babies nje that's all....yes she's beautiful and sexy and she comes from a wealthy polygamous family which is a bonus but my heart beats for one woman and one woman only and that's Shalate while Samkelo is a woman that's gonna make me a father and that's a reason I wanna marry her cause she knows the concept of a polygamous marriage she grew up in one and I know she wont cause problems for me and Shalate...she'll know her place and her purpose in this marriage...His phone rang and it's his mother he sighed before answering\*\*\*

Tar: Ma

Khethi: baba ka boy how are you

Tar: good and you

Khethi: im ok....when did you last hear from your father my boy

Tar: ummm at the meeting ma...why

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tar: when last did you see him ma

Khethi: aagr maybe he forgot to tell me he's going on one of his business trips

\*\*\*she chuckled nervously\*\*\*

Tar: really ma....has he done that before

Khethi: let me call him again maybe he's in a meeting...say hi to Samke for me

\*\*\* she ended the call and Tarek looked at his phone with a frown then he dialed his father's numbers and they rang until he answered\*\*\*

Mazwakhe: Dumakude

\*\*\*ok its been a while since he called him by that name "he thought"\*\*\*

Tar: baba how are you

Mazwakhe: good

\*\*\*then Tarek cleared his throat\*\*\*

Tar: ummm uma says she hasnt heard from you in a while now....is everything ok between you

Mazwakhe: concentrate on your marriage...or whats left of it and leave mine alone boy

\*\*\*he frowned then he swallowed hard\*\*\*

Tar: baba ma is worried

Mazwakhe: and Shalate is broken

Tar: wow...so you're worried about someone who's nothing to you at the expense of your own wife...my mother

Mazwakhe: I don't know what you know about marriage and uniting two families boy but let me school you....when you decided to married that girl you united two families meaning she became a daughter in our family her family trusted us with her that we will take care of her and treat her well.... as for your mother she knows her shenanigans and whats to come so if you still want to look at her the same way then mind your own business....I cant believe how much of a mama's boy you are....such disappointment nxa

\*\*\*then he dropped the call leaving Tarek more confused\*\*\*

Tar: what the hell is going on

-----

NARRATED

\*\*\*Jabu knocked on the door and waited...after a few second the door opened and there she stood\*\*\*

Lolly: Ja...Jabu

\*\*\*she said shocked\*\*\*

Jabu: ntwana

\*\*\*she looked at him confused now\*\*\*

Lolly: what are you doing here

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Jabu: ok I deserve that.....can I come in

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: I dont want trouble Jabu

Jabu: im not here to cause trouble...I'm here to make peace and apologize

\*\*\*she raised an eyebrow looking at him\*\*\*

Jabu: ka jaja I've been as a\$s ( I know I've been an a\$s)

\*\*\*she sighed then made way for him to enter and he got in with the shopping bags in his hands...she closed the door and went to join him\*\*\*

Jabu: I bought what I hope is still your favourite

\*\*\*he sighed when he saw she wasn't even smiling\*\*\*

Jabu: I f#ck#d up didn't I

Lolly: you hurt me

\*\*\*he nodded swallowing hard\*\*\*

Jabu: what should I do to make things right

Lolly: I don't think there's anything you can do

\*\*\*he shook his head not agreeing with her\*\*\*

Jabu: re tswa kgole Lolly ( we've come far Lolly)...we've been through sh!t together this cant be it

\*\*\*She sighed and moved to the shopping bags and unpacked what he brought\*\*\*

Jabu: Lorraine

Lolly: Jabu please

Jabu: ke flopile haarde ( I messed up im sorry)

\*\*\*he said getting close to her...too close\*\*\*

Lolly: Jabu

Jabu: im not leaving until you forgive me

\*\*\*she looked up at him and swallowed as their eyes locked\*\*\*

Lolly: my man wont like how close you are now to me

Jabu: I can bend you here and now and take you from behind and fuck your brains out and there's nothing he can do about it

\*\*\*she swallowed hard as her heart started beating faster and she looked away\*\*\*

Jabu: but thats not why im here...im here to fix my mess and get your forgiveness

\*\*\*he said taking a step back with his hands inside his chino pants....right then the door bell rang and Lolly cleared her throat\*\*\*

Lolly: ummm let me....get that

\*\*\*she quickly went to the door taking a deep breath and exhaling....she opened the door\*\*\*

Lolly: babe

\*\*\*Kenny gave her a fake smile\*\*\*

Kenny: sthandwa sam

\*\*\*he perked her lips and walked in leaving Lorraine frozen by the door...she snapped out of it and closed the door and when she turned she found the two bulls facing each other ready to pounce on each other\*\*\*

-----

TO BE CONTINUED....

NARRATED ( TSHIMO)

\*\*\* She walked back inside the room\*\*\*

Tshimo: I have a gun and I know how to use it

Man: good to know

\*\*\*He can speak English and his Barry White's voice is amazing " she thought"\*\*\*

Tshimo: who...who are you

\*\*\*the guy kept quiet a bit making a face as if he's trying to think\*\*\*

Man: i...i don't know

\*\*\*Tshimo sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: where are you from

Man: I don't know

Tshimo: do you remember anything about yourself

\*\*\*he thought for a bit\*\*\*

Man: a name.... Ntsako....i don't know if its mine or someone else's and you

Tshimo: me???

\*\*\*she asked shocked and he nodded\*\*\*

Man: I feel naked

\*\*\*her eyes quickly went to his privates and she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Tshimo: i...i was bathing you and I ran out when I realized that you're actually awake

\*\*\*she walked in then stopped midway\*\*\*

Tshimo: if you're a serial killer know that I saved you and bathed you so before you think of killing me remember I'll torment you as a ghost and if you're a rapist know that I'll rip your huge dick off and feed it to my neighbour's dog and if uthwele I'll make sure you are the one to be sacrificed

Man: I don't even know who I am so relax I wont hurt you

Tshimo: im just saying

\*\*\*she proceeded to grab the blanket and covered him\*\*\*

Tshimo: are you comfortable

Man: can I have a pillow...please

Tshimo: umm sure

\*\*\*she went to get pillows and helped put one of them under his neck and head while still careful around him and she pulled a chair and sat down\*\*\*

Tshimo: you said you remember me...how when I've never met you before

Man: I don't know but you're in my mind like....like I've known you my whole life

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: that's just...creepy

\*\*\*she sighed again\*\*\*

Tshimo: I had a dream about you and a woman...old woman crying asking me to help you....it looks like she's your mother because she kept saying "help my son"

\*\*\*the man swallowed looking up at the roof \*\*\*

Tshimo: eish ok ummm let me go make you something to eat

Man: I cant feel my body from my neck down

\*\*\* he said with a pained voice and she froze then she frowned\*\*\*

Tshimo: but you grabbed me and even just now your hand moved

Man: I can only feel and use my right hand and also use or feel my....private part that's it

\*\*\*yep your dick can work perfectly fine " she thought" then she shook her head snapping out of it and she got up\*\*\*

Tshimo: I'll be back...let me go make you something to eat

\*\*\*she walked out and breathed out as soon as she got outside\*\*\*

Tshimo: what the hell are you doing Tshimo...yho you're a risk taker shem

\*\*\*she said to herself\*\*\*

Voice: yes what are you doing Tee

\*\*\*she jumped with her hand on her chest looking around but there's no one in sight....she knew that voice very well cause only one person called her that....her late brother\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED (LORRAINE)

\*\*\*Jabu turned and faced Lolly then he smiled taking a step back....he then walked towards Lolly still smiling\*\*\*

Jabu: I'll call you so we finish that talk

\*\*\*he kissed her cheek and walked out \*\*\*

Kenny: how could you

\*\*\*she frowned\*\*\*

Lolly: how could I what

Kenny: HOW COULD YOU LET THAT BASTARD INSIDE YOUR HOUSE  
LORRAINE....ARE YOU NOW TALKING TO HIM...YOU PLAYING ME FOR A FOOL  
NOW HUH

\*\*\*she took a step back from him looking scared\*\*\*

Kenny: IM TALKING TO YOU DAMN IT!!!

\*\*\*she moved back until she's by the door and she opened it\*\*\*

Loll: I...i think you should leave...im...im not comfortable with your behaviour right now  
im actually scared so please leave

\*\*\*Kenny stopped moving towards her and he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Kenny: so now you're scared of me because of him

\*\*\*she closed her eyes a bit\*\*\*

Lolly: are...are you the possessive type Kenneth cause this behaviour right now is not  
normal...are you one of those guys that don't care about an explanation but conclude  
things in their head based on what they think they saw or see

Kenny: excuse me...dont play mind games with me woman

Lolly: you don't even care about my reasons of allowing him in...you could've just sat  
down and said "explain" but no you're here looking like you're ready to beat the shit out  
of me

Kenny: so you think im abusive now

\*\*\*she just shook her head defeated now\*\*\*

Lolly: please leave Kenneth

Kenny: no I want to know what you mean about all that sh!t you just said

Lolly: this is my place not ours and when I say leave you should actually leave!!!

\*\*\*he looked at her with an angry look on his face and he walked towards her and she  
closed her eyes ready to receive any beating but then he just walked out...she slowly

opened her eyes and he was gone then she quickly closed the door and locked it then she leaned on it with her back as she shook vigorously with pee running down her legs she slid down as tears burned her eyes then eventually ran down her cheeks as she started sobbing....her mind went to her ex-husband and she swore she just saw him through Kenny's eyes when he moved closer to her looking that angry what would follow after that would be slaps kicks and punches from him....then she heard a knock by the door that nearly made her heart to almost stop beating\*\*\*

Jabu: Lolly

\*\*\*she breathed out then a loud sob escaped her mouth and she cried uncontrollably \*\*\*

Jabu: Lorraine!!!

\*\*\*he said knocking on the door and moving the door handle roughly \*\*\*

Jabu: Lorraine bula ( open) or im breaking the door now

\*\*\*she tried to calm down and wiped her face with her t-shirt\*\*\*

Lolly: ke shap Jabu (im ok)....just go

Jabu: im sure a wa nkutlwa pila ( im sure you didn't hear me properly)....i said open this door or im breaking it down this instant

\*\*\*she sniffed and got up from the floor still visibly shaking....the physical mental and psychological trauma of what Bheki her ex-husband put her through hit her unexpectedly and now its like she's reliving that phase in her life again....Yes Kenny didn't hit her or attempt to but the way he was angry and moving towards her shouting brought back memories she thought she dealt with....Anyway she opened her door with her shaky hands and peeped out at him\*\*\*

Lolly: ke shap Jabu ( im ok Jabu)

Jabu: did he hit you

\*\*\*he asked looking angry ready to murder someone and she shook her head no\*\*\*

Jabu: don't protects him Lorraine Thando Mpofu ...dont

Lolly: I'm not I swear....he didn't hit me...i just....he was shouting and I got triggered nje...I'll be fine

\*\*\*she said sniffing\*\*\*

Jabu: then let me in and let me see for myself ukuthi you're ok

Lolly: Jabu

\*\*\*she said sighing and closing her eyes a bit\*\*\*

Jabu: let me see for myself

\*\*\*she thought about her messed up leggings and pee on the floor\*\*\*



Lolly: I'll be fine Jabu...i promise

\*\*\*she tried to close the door but Jabu pushed it open and walked in...he looked around the room then back at her and she looked down embarrassed and a sob escaped her mouth as she shook trying to stretch and pull her shirt down to cover her drenched leggings which was an impossible task to do\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED (MOERA)

Uncle: so what is it that you want me to deal with

Moera: some fool who has been getting away with way too much towards Masai

\*\*\*The uncle sat back and crossed his legs listening\*\*\*

Uncle: im listening

Moera: Masai's ex boyfriend Stevens Reineke.... he once hit her and now he's been cheating on her and also said some hurtful words to her

\*\*\*the uncle sighed taking a sip from his drink\*\*\*

Uncle: tell me here....so you gonna hurt each and every man that hurts Masai

\*\*\*Moera frowned\*\*\*

Uncle: Moera....Masai is not married so in this world she's gonna meet fools who are still boys or just fuck boys...who are not the committed types....who pretend to love you but they know all they want from you is pussy

Moera: he asked her to marry him so he wasn't just passing time...i think

Uncle: I engaged my now girlfriend so she stays faithful and loyal to me for some time but I know I'll never make her my wife....she's not the kind of woman I would want to spend the rest of my life with

\*\*\*her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Moera: Uncle!!!

Uncle: it's the truth....she eats my money and I eat her pussy...uyanginika ngiyamunika everyone is happy....the day I'll meet the one trust me I'll engage her today and the following week im marrying her

Moera: how long have you engaged Bathabile for...its Bathabile right

Uncle: yeah....its been eight months now....i only went go kokota and that's all she's gonna get

Moera: uncle no disrespect neh but you're trash

\*\*\*the uncle laughed\*\*\*

Uncle: tsek....im not trash I've cheated on her multiple times and she's still holding on for masepa ( for sh!t)....she doesn't love herself enough to walk away now what would this kind of woman teach my kids...gore o kgotlella masepa ( that you take sh!t) just for love....hai wena emanyana....ake kgotlhelle masepa ( wait a minute...i don't take sh!t from anyone) so why would I want my wife and kids gore ba kgotlhelle masepa ( to take sh!t from anyone)....i want a woman with a backbone...who stands her ground....who doesn't take shit from anyone....a woman who I know will leave me if I cheat or hit her...i can do anything to Bathabile and I know she'll stay because she doesn't love herself enough to walk away just because of financial dependence more especially the kind of lifestyle im giving her

\*\*\*Moera sighed\*\*\*

Moera: well I feel sorry for her shem...i mean you're wasting her time Lume

Uncle: she's wasting her own time....i mean this woman has a degree and she cant find a job she studied for so instead of working at a retail store or something she says she's not that desperate but she's broke like what the f#ck its my money and not hers and she aint gonna get even a cent from it even if I die or we break up....if I decide to leave her tomorrow she'll commit suicide cause she doesn't even save the money she gets from me....she's too comfortable and one of these days the fat lady is gonna sing like nakana e tlo lla straight

Moera: yho hai shem mojola wanyesa ( relationships hurts)....wait but Stevens never blessed Masa with money...well he bought her things like gifts that I'll admit but I don't remember her saying that he gave her money

Uncle: then Masai was a fool....dai moegoe ate for free and now he's gone....its good to get sick from your cheating boyfriend who blesses you with money 'THAT YOU SAVE' than to get sick from a broke or stingy a\$s boyfriend....

Moera: well true

\*\*\*she said raising her glass\*\*\*

Uncle: yah it's the truth...do you know how long queues at a public clinic are and how rude nurses are...i don't even wanna touch the public hospital topic

\*\*\* Moera busted out with loud laughter and people inside the kasi restaurant they are in looked at them\*\*\*

Moera: Lume o savage

\*\*\*the uncle laughed\*\*\*

Uncle: im just telling the truth...but bona that fool will pay for hitting Masai

\*\*\*Moera sighed\*\*\*

Moera: yeah I don't want him dead cause he's AJ's uncle after all

Uncle: my boys will roughen him up and he will never lay a hand on another defenceless woman again

Moera: dankie Lume

Uncle: tell me about AJ's father

Moera: but I told you over the phone moes

Uncle: more like you praised him

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Moera: I didn't

Uncle: do you have a crush on this guy Moera

Moera: bathong Mal...

Uncle: don't lie to me!

\*\*\*he said interrupting her\*\*\*

Moera: its...its not a crime to

Uncle: Moera

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Moera: I wont act on it malome I promise....it looks like he's into Masa

Uncle: you shouldn't have a crush on him period....he's your twin's baby daddy

Moera: I know

Uncle: then why

Moera: I don't know...it just happened....he's handsome.....he has a good heart and there's just something about him....all in all he's just my kind of man....he reminds me of Alex well without the gift

\*\*\*the uncle sighed shaking his head\*\*\*

Uncle: all I can say is it's wrong to see you sister's man or baby daddy that way....it will cause problems between you two

Moera: I said I won't act on it

Uncle: for now....feelings grow girly and sometimes you fail to control them then you act on them and all hell breaks loose

\*\*\*Moera didn't say anything she just sipped her drink\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED ( MASAI)

\*\*\*Im at Alphalette's house... yes you heard me right im at baby daddy's house and I must say its beautiful shem....even the deco is really nice I must say he has taste cause I mean I didn't picture him living in a house this beautiful not that im undermining him or looking down on him nope just that I had this mentality that sangomas put all their focus and money on their gifts...yeah something like that....all I can say is this house doesn't belong in this kind of neighbourhood\*\*\*

Alpha: you good

\*\*\*he said giving me my drink and sitting next to me while Khai played on the carpet....he just got here and asked for his "toys" mxm little betrayer\*\*\*

Me: yeah just my joins are painful today and I think im coming down with flue but I'll be fine...im used to all this

Alpha: should I take you to the hospital

Me: I thought you'd say let me mix some herbs for you

\*\*\*I said smiling looking at him and he chuckled lightly\*\*\*

Alpha: many people don't trust natural herbs from sangomas especially if they are really not into traditional healers and stuff they only trust science medicines made in the lap not the medicines from nature given to us by God and discovered and studied by our ancestors

\*\*\*well true\*\*\*

Me: for me its not like that....the thing is just like scientists or pharmacists let people know about traditional herbs that cures or helps manage a certain deceases more especially incurable deceases traditional healers don't let it known to the public unless you go visit them sometimes they don't even tell you they just give you an already

mixed bottle with no info of what's inside and tell you to go drink twice or three times a day ....I knew from a work colleague that there's a herb that helps manage better diabetes its called Shino....something and its helping her diabetic brother alot

\*\*\*I saw him smiling like he's impressed or something\*\*\*

Me: yeah yeah yeah its Shenongomafi or something like that

Alpha: im impressed

Me: so yah you'll find that there are herbs that helps with Lupus decease and you traditional healers with much knowledge know about them but you keeping quiet

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: well there are herbs on the shelves but people hardly buy them....you'll find out that the bottle of muti helps with different ailments or deceases on your body but they prefer to drink ten pills per day and be injected with substances into their body that helps for that small period of that time there's some not soo good stereotype around traditional healers and people are wary and afraid of them because of that some even visit them at night cause they don't want to be judged

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Alpha: its just sad but hey this is not our world we are all here to visit and soon we gonna go join the same ancestors most call demons....imagine calling your own late mother father siblings infact your whole family lineage demons while you have their DNA running through your veins but hey we are not there and we not gonna go there or start a topic about it....Anyway I hardly get sick that's why I don't have a medical aid....i always drink mere (muti) always...i guess that's why my sperms are this strong

\*\*\*he said looking at Khai and I frowned at him...its too soon way too soon\*\*\*

Alpha: come on mama we need to talk about how junior was conceived it wasn't in a pleasant way but he's not a mistake....i shouldn't have treated you like how I did two years back and I'll forever regret it so we need to talk about it until we no longer feel awkward talking about it or you not reliving that painful experience...we need to move from it one way or thee other

\*\*\*I sighed\*\*\*

Me: I think its too soon

Alpha: ok but think about what I just said alright

\*\*\*I just nodded\*\*\*

Voice: THOKOZA MKHULU

Alpha: ey ey warasa mahn ( you're making noise man)

\*\*\*the guy he was with at the engagement party walks in with another young man\*\*\*

Youngman: dumelang ( hello)

\*\*\*he said humbly in a respectable manner and I smiled at him\*\*\*

Me: hi okae ( hi how are you)

Youngman: ke teng ( im good)

Youngman: baba

Alpha: boyza....where did this fool find you

Youngman: down the road at the kota joint

Alpha: umm mama this is Tshepo he's my boy my first born not biologically but yeah you get it...i learned fatherhood through him by taking care of him....let's just say I stopped being a boy and grew up and became a man because of him....

\*\*\*ok wow...alright at least he's respectful and he looks like a good boy\*\*\*

Alpha: and Boyza this is Masai Junior's mother and soon to be the woman of this house

\*\*\*the hell\*\*\*

Tshepo: nice to finally meet you...ummm

Mpande: you can call her mama too

\*\*\*someone get me the hell out of here....i see Tshepo smiling\*\*\*

Tshepo: nice to finally meet you mama

Me: nice to meet you too Tshepo

\*\*\*I smiled at him then he looked and smiled at Khai\*\*\*

Youngman: hey young one

\*\*\*he said picking him up and he walked away with him...they went towards the kitchen area\*\*\*

Alpha: why are you looking at my woman like that

\*\*\*why is he saying im his woman like that\*\*\*

Mpande: cause she looks like my woman...well she has some features my woman has

\*\*\*wait he's interested in Moera...yho the sebeta ( nerve/liver) this guy has....Moera as in Moera my twin....how the hell is he gonna handle her....yho ( clap one)\*\*\*

Mpande: im Mpande by the way....so how is she

Me: ummm she's good

Mpande: mmh...so Masai do you think she'll agree to be mine when I approach her

\*\*\*yho he said when not if \*\*\*

Me: ummm

Alpha: don't answer that mama

Mpande: ijelousy yani Thokozani

Alpha: tsek

Mpande: mxm...so mama ka boy will she

\*\*\* why is this guy putting me on the spot like this\*\*\*

Me: do you want the truth or for me to boost your ego

\*\*\*Alphalette laughs...i give him a reprimanding look and he keeps quiet but you could see he wants to laugh\*\*\*

Mpande: the truth mama ka boy and also how to get her

\*\*\*he said sitting moving to the edge of the couch with his hands clamped together.... ok\*\*\*

Me: she's crazy but protective over her loved ones....she can use a gun and also fight more like defend herself.... no offence but she has never dated someone like you and by that I mean someone who dresses like you or talks like you...she has dated corporate guys you know and she loves a certain lifestyle other than that she's amazing has a good heart and she's a loving person with a mean temper....just don't cross her

Alpha: yep

\*\*\*i frowned at him\*\*\*

Alpha: at the hospital she was furious so I got a glimpse of who she is when she's pissed

Mpande: that's all....i thought you'll tell me yisfebe or something....

\*\*\*so this nikka thought I'll tell him my twin started dating married man after her ex died...wa gafa oo ( he's crazy)...he'll see for himself the kind of monied guys Moera dates....if she wants to go to the Maldives tomorrow she will go and she won't use even a cent of her money that's the kind of men she f@cks with...but hey she might like him you'll never know with a betrayer called a heart\*\*\*

Alpha: really man...you had to use that word

Mpande: eish haarde mahn mama ka boy...i tend to forget that im not supposed to swear around important women and children in our lives

\*\*\*what...not women in general?\*\*\*

Me: its ok

\*\*\*its not\*\*\*

Mpande: yah man haarde neh

\*\*\*I just nodded...Tshepo and Khai walked back in laughing \*\*\*

Khai: mama bona

\*\*\*he's showing me a fancy baby cup\*\*\*

Tshepo: its juice inside I hope you don't mind

Me: nope its still a bit early so he'll be fine

Tshepo: ok....ummm we gonna chill outside while we eat

Mpande: don't forget to call that boy and tell him I want to see him tomorrow morning

Tshepo: ok uncle

\*\*\*he walked out with Khai..ok they seem to be getting along just fine...ai this baby is just something else shem\*\*\*

Mpande: so when are you sleeping over mama ka boy

\*\*\*what\*\*\*

Alpha: Mpande Mpande mahn

Mpande: what im just asking haw so that I wont come...phela I also need you attention

\*\*\*wow I just giggled...this guy is just...yah\*\*\*

Mpande: plus im sure you two will be f#cking like rabbits....this one

\*\*\*he said pointing at Alphalette\*\*\*

Alpha: I wont reprimand you again

Mpande: he f#cks....once he starts with you...he'll even f#ck you when you even taking a sh!t

\*\*\*Modimo\*\*\*

Alpha: o ta konnyelene manjeni ( you gonna sh!t yourself now)

Mpande: sorry for swearing mama ka boy but don't worry he's a good man and he's gonna treat you good spoil you and treats you like an egg...shem yena he's a softy when he wants to

\*\*\*he said scratching his goatee beard\*\*\*

Mpande: but mdavaso (sex)

\*\*\*he whistled\*\*\*

Mpande: uyalidla imomozi...kakhulu futhi ( he eats p#ssy and a lot)

\*\*\*Alpha is looking down probably embarrassed and im embarrassed too...then he gets up and stretches\*\*\*

Mpande: stop this thing of playing it safe...playing hard to get and being awkward around each other....you have a child together...he has seen you naked...jolani ( date) and f@ck then get married and make more babies man....life is too short haw

\*\*\*he walks away then stops and turns to look at us\*\*\*



Mpande: bazokthathela unye nyi and its directed to the both of you....nyasabana ingathi you are still in school even kids in school these day bayashela straight ( they'll ask you out straight)....ukbona manje ushela manje and nijola manje ( he sees you now asks you out now and you date now) and he f#cks you tomorrow if you're lucky the same day not what you two are doing...jolani ( date) you're making things awkward for us man haw

\*\*\*he walked away towards the kitchen\*\*\*

Alpha: im sorry about that...i think he forgot to take his medicine

-----

TO BE CONTINUED....

Chapter 11

LORRAINE

\*\*\* let me die this instant....this embarrassment is gonna stay with me for the rest of my life \*\*\*

Jabu: im gonna ask you one last time.....what did that bastard do

\*\*\*he looks livid\*\*\*

Me: he just scared me by coming towards me shouting....i thought he'll hit me but he didn't he walked out when I told him to

\*\*\* I said sobbing....he clenched his jaws looking down then he walked to me and out of the blue he picked me up and walked to the bathroom with me....we got there and he put me down and filled the bathtub with water and foam bath\*\*\*

Jabu: take off your clothes

Me: huh

Jabu: I've seen you naked before Lolly so take off your clothes

\*\*\*yes but that was years back....bathong this guy....i just sighed and waited for the bathtub to fill up then took off my clothes and I got inside the bathtub while he picked my clothes and left the bathroom with them....i took a deep breath and relaxed in the water....my life will never know peace and I don't think this love thing is for me\*\*\*

NARRATED

\*\*\* Jabu put her clothes inside her washing machine and he went back to the bathroom\*\*\*

Jabu: eish that machine of yours is complicated

\*\*\*Lorraine opened her eyes and told him what to press and he went back then soon came back and he sat on the edge of the bathtub and sighed popping his knuckles\*\*\*

Jabu: I know his brother abused you but what I want to know is how much damage was done to you for you to react like that

\*\*\*Lorraine swallowed hard\*\*\*

Jabu: ka jaja( I know) its not easy to talk about it but I want to know

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: he used to slap punch and kick me whenever he felt like it

\*\*\* Jabu swallowed hard\*\*\*

Lolly: I did get help but some situations just trigger you and you start reliving that traumatizing time of your life again but I'll be fine

\*\*\*Jabu didn't say anything he just kept quiet looking down for some time\*\*\*

Jabu: im sorry for how I treated you

\*\*\*Lolly didn't say anything\*\*\*

Jabu: I was in denial and I messed up pretty bad Lorraine...i don't know what to do to make it up to you and to make you forgive me

\*\*\*Lolly sniffed\*\*\*

Lolly: why...what did I do to you to get that treatment from you and to get blamed for your daughter's death

\*\*\*Jabu clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Lolly: I want to know Jabu cause that broke my heart to the core

Jabu: I was wrong to say all that....it was pain and regret talking and im sorry

Lolly: that's not what I want to know

Jabu: im not ready to talk about it

Lolly: then leave...the day you'll be ready you know where to find me

\*\*\*he raised his head and looked at her frowning\*\*\*

Lolly: tsamaya Jabu ( leave Jabu)

\*\*\*he sighed and he got up and left the bathroom and Lorraine's tears gushed out and she sobbed\*\*\*

-----

HILLS (SHALATE)

\*\*\*Im sitting in mama's beautiful garden taking in its beauty and the fresh smell that has filled the air....she's into flowers and this garden looks amazing and the gardener she hired knows his job shem. Im back home and I must say it's been tough im taking every day as it comes and I can say some days are better than others and im glad mama is not pushy...My marriage neh or should I say my dead marriage...i still can't believe Tar

did and said that to me I was hurt and broken that he cheated but him calling me barren just broke me more that I already was.....He called me barren I still cant believe it\*\*\*

Voice: I hope o planner a vacation you'll have after your divorce is final not di suicide or staying in a polygamy marriage Shalate

\*\*\*It's the house help....we call her aus'Vee her name is Velemina...She's crazy like mama and we don't treat her like a house help....she's like family and she treats us good and we give her the respect she deserves....She's loyal to mama shem no lies....you should find them gossiping about someone yho you'll feel sorry for that person \*\*\*

Me: bathong aus'Vee suicide vele

Vee: gape lona ma2000 ga le tshepisi ( you 2000 generation cant be trusted)

Me: me le2000

Vee: hai suka...you may not be one but you look like one

\*\*\*she said sitting down next to me and I laughed lightly\*\*\*

Vee: Paulos ke bosso...garden e e smart man ( Paulos is the boss...this garden is beautiful)

Me: mmmmh

\*\*\*I said smiling then I sighed\*\*\*

Vee: everything will be fine you'll see....o kgonne go mover on from Mhlaba's death something that brought you down to your knees so monna ke eng ( so what is a man)...worst part was le Zulu le mmagwe wa s#febe ( worst part a Zulu one with a wh#re of a mother)

Me: haai aus'Vee

Vee: keng...ke sona vele ( what...she is).... anyway do you remember the promise you made to your sister

\*\*\*I swallowed hard and looked down\*\*\*

Vee: don't do what she did....even after Doris brought that fool down to his knees and made life miserable for him but he's still alive....his mother still sees him and Mhlaba is gone so no man is worth you killing yourself for

\*\*\*I sniffed as tears ran down my cheeks\*\*\*

Vee: even if you kill yourself or stress yourself to death he will move on and marry that girl and live happily le family ya gagwe wena o tla be o le busy o imelwa ke mmu lala( with his family and you'll be the one dead)....so accept that he hurt you and start healing

form that pain then divorce if you cant share him then mourn your marriage and move on....Life is too short rato laka

Me: I don't know how to move on and accept that its over

Vee: don't force things....take your time....i also took my time

\*\*\*I looked at her wiping my tears off\*\*\*

Vee: I was once married

Me: noo

Vee: yep and I loved him shem in fact I worshiped the ground her walked on and that was my first mistake.... you see we were once happy he treated me good and made me happy shem but ka bati i started having problems with my uterus...sekgowa lala ( English lala) uterus wenaanaaa

\*\*\*She said the last part dramatically and I found myself laughing\*\*\*

Vee: my discharge was smelling really bad and it got worse when I couldn't hold my pee anymore and I was always in pain ne ke nkga ( I smelled really bad) Shalate even after bathing still ne go tshwana ( I would still smell) I used to wear an adult diaper....so one day I went to see another doctor to know what I can do cause I was in and out of hospital and the doctor that helped at the hospital told me one thing and I just couldn't accept what he told me....after some tests he also said I need to remove it...Yho...

\*\*\*she clapped her hands dramatically\*\*\*

Vee: he said I either remove it or live like this for the rest of my life and that it will get to a point where it will turn into cancer so the second opinion and the pain I felt made me speak with the now ex and we agreed that im removing it

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Vee: the surgery went well and with time I healed and that's when masepa ( sh#t) started happening....tonki ele ( that donkey) started changing and I knew he's cheating....i used to beg him asking him why he's treating me like that why he doesn't sleep at home anymore why he doesn't look at me like he used to why he doesn't touch me anymore but he would get mad and hit me but I would still forgive him shem.... the only time he would touch me is if he's drunk and he'd become rough....he would turn into an animal and when he's done I'll be left with bruises and an aching body and bleeding nunu and hurtful words he can never take back

\*\*\*yho\*\*\*

Vee: but I would still cook for him clean the house respect him and even wash his clothes....

\*\*\*she chuckled shaking her head\*\*\*

Vee: ne keke bari yong ( I was a fool)....anyway when he started calling me mosadi wa Modimo deep down I knew I lost him but I was in denial shem I continued to be the good wife until one day he came home with a woman and told me to go sleep in the guest bedroom cause he want to sleep with her on our matrimonial bed....i fought Shalate but he was stronger than me so he beat me up black and blue and he locked me in the guest bedroom and I could hear them having sex in my bedroom my bed  
\*\*\*tears are running down my cheeks.....men are trash....wow I cant believe this\*\*\*

Vee: I tried multiple times to take my life but God and my Ancestors would say...jy is mal ( you're crazy)

\*\*\*she laughed... she's strong shem\*\*\*

Vee: one day he back home and he kicked me out insulting me and for the first time since he started changing he called me a she-man a re ke nnyomba (he said im barren)...he said im not woman enough since I don't have a womb....he said I should become gay now since im womb less and he said all that in front of the neighbours kicking and dragging me out

\*\*\*she took a deep breath \*\*\*

Vee: long story short I picked myself up with the help of my aunt may her soul rest in peace and I must say it wasn't easy at all....its never easy.....and I found a job here and your mother neh that woman ke starring sa di ghumghedlela....she saw the pain in my eyes and said that whenever I want to talk she's there.... Then one day it became too much when I bumped into my ex and the woman he cheated with and she was pregnant while the ex was holding a baby girl in his arms....i opened up to Dee and she got me help and here I am today

\*\*\*wow...im here crying my eyeballs out and she's cool like a cucumber.....i guess she has healed\*\*\*

Vee: so I survived all that and so will you....dont rush things and don't wait for his karma to visit him wena focus on you and heal and leave everything to God and... Doris

\*\*\*I found myself laughing with tears all over my face\*\*\*

Vee: all I want from you is to allow yourself to feel the pain then start healing and you'll see everything will be fine....Mhlaba allowed depression to take over and she killed herself for tonki ela .....wa bona depression ke masepa dai deng....o tla ipotsa gore motho o shap cause wa tshega and o pila o be o ipotse gore was glower khante o glower depression mmh....depression e le yona e mo glowisang so we are not waiting

for depression now we gonna go get drunk cause Doris is not coming back today o sa ilo jewa moghele..... ( Mhlaba allowed depression to take over and she killed herself for that donkey....you see depression is sh#tty...you'll think the person is fine because she's laughing and she looks beautiful and you'll even think she's glowing but you'll find out she's glowing depression...depression will be the culprit so we are not waiting for depression...now we gonna go and get drunk cause Doris is not coming back today the girl is going to get f#ck#d)

Me: ausVee that's my mom

Vee: hai suka...your mom wa jewa vele

\*\*\*I give up with her shem\*\*\*

Vee: as I was saying...we gonna get drunk dance cry then pass out and wena tomorrow you'll contact that therapist Dee found for you and you'll go get help...askere lala

\*\*\*I nodded then breathed out and she stood up\*\*\*

Vee: ooh I also have some weed....e betha strong so a re ye ( its strong so lets go)

\*\*\*you heard right.....she's over 40 with a banger body and she drinks and smokes weed like crazy but the face says ngiyaphuza and kakhulu futhi ( I drink a lot) but we love her like that\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED ( Tshimologo)

\*\*\*Tshimo walked in with food and she put the plate down looking at the mystery man\*\*\*

Tshimo: you cant eat lying like that...ok I'll be back

\*\*\*she walked out again and the guy breathed out....he doesn't understand why she's helping him out like this she doesn't even know him to be helping him like this....it kills him that besides not having control over his body he also doesn't know who he is.....he doesn't even know that the name he remembers is his or someone else's....he closed his eyes for a brief second and he saw numbers on a phone....like someone was dialling

them....He quickly opened his eyes and suddenly developed a headache....he closed his eyes again and the headache went away slowly and he opened his eyes when Tshimo walked in\*\*\*

Tshimo: right you need to get dressed and I need to help you to sit up so you'll brush your teeth and eat

\*\*\*he swallowed hard\*\*\*

Tshimo: sa wara ( don't worry) I've already seen you naked

\*\*\*he sighed..."this girl is weird" he thought....anyway she helped him get dressed and his member betrayed him....he stood firm and Tshimo tried by all means to ignore it while the guy is just embarrassed \*\*\*

Tshimo: there we go so I have to put you on the floor so I'll turn the mattress this side and I'll be able to put pillows on the wall so you'll sit up ok

\*\*\*he just nodded...he hated this....he's twice her size and on top of that she's short...." why didn't I just die" he thought....anyway she dragged him from the mattress and she changed its position and pushed it to the wall then she pulled him back on the mattress and put pillows on the wall and helped him sit up with his back against the wall then she sat down breathing heavily....he was impressed by her strength\*\*\*

Man: you ok

Tshimo: o boima yeer ( you're heavy)

Man: why are you doing this

\*\*\*she sighed and shrugged her shoulders\*\*\*

Tshimo: because I trust my gift and I have a good heart

Man: you could be putting your life in danger mama....what you're doing is risky

\*\*\*she ignored that "mama" part\*\*\*

Tshimo: like I said I trust the gift I have I trust God and I trust my Ancestors

Man: even at that you shouldn't be too trusting remember the devil is sly and he can pretend to be your guides so you help and he strikes

\*\*\*Tshimo swallowed hard looking at him\*\*\*

Man: im not trying to scare you but just be careful

\*\*\*she nodded and she got up and walked out\*\*\*

Man: shit...i can give advices about the devil but I fail to remember who I am

\*\*\*he said to himself sitting there then she walked back in and put a washing basin with water inside and put toothpaste on a toothbrush she's holding and she gave it to him\*\*\*

Tshimo: this you can do yourself



\*\*\*he nodded looking at her and she didn't look happy....he slowly brushed his teeth and after he was done she took the dirty water and walked out\*\*\*

Man: eish

\*\*\*she came back and gave him a face cloths and he wiped his mouth and hand and she gave him his food then he grabbed her hand and her eyes popped out as she looked at him tensed and he slowly let go of her hand and she moved away from him with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Man: im sorry.... I just wanted to say im sorry about what I said

\*\*\*she frowned\*\*\*

Man: after I said that about the devil you changed and im sorry

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: you shouldn't apologize....im not mad at you....im mad cause you're right....im too trusting and I always get hurt...always but I never learn...my kind heart is to be blamed

\*\*\*he sighed and took the spoon and started eating slowly as she walked out\*\*\*

-----

LATER ON

JABU

\*\*\*I know she told me to leave but I cant...she's not ok and im not about to leave her like this.....i know she's mad cause I cant tell her why I treated her like that and why I said its her fault Lile is gone but I cant tell her she's my chosen one and my daughter is gone cause I didn't listen to their warning....As for that bastard one day is one day for now Ruu's advice is working in my favour but if it stops working im doing things my way....my phone rings and it's a number I don't recognize\*\*\*

Me: sho

Voice: h...hi Jabu its me Amogelang

\*\*\*I felt my insides turn and my hands start shaking as anger takes over\*\*\*

Me: o nyakang ( what do you want)

Amo: im sorry Jabu please forgive me

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Jabu: I SAID WHAT DO YOU WANT MAHN!!!

\*\*\*he said shouting standing up which made Lorraine to startle inside the bedroom\*\*\*

Amo: to meet and talk....please

Jabu: im sure baoloya wena....in fact baloi bao berekisa wena ( im sure you're bewitched...in fact the witches are using you)

Amo: baby im....

Jabu: hei hei hei....baby mo mang....wa tshwarega neh...ke baby ya gao nna

\*\*\*Amo kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Amo: I want to fix things Jabu please just...for Sbu Jabu lets fix things for him he needs both his parents

Jabu: askies

Amo: im his mother and nothing will change that...i love that boy Jabu and im sure its killing him that things between us are like this and im willing to fall pregnant again to replace what we lost....im willing to do anything to have you forgive me Jabu

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled not believing that that's what he married....he asked himself if he was that blind to have fallen to her...he was confused cause the Amo he dated and married is nothing like this Amo....something must be wrong cause nobody changes like this or she was pretending all along " he asked himself " \*\*\*

Jabu: I would say tsamo thwasa cause ekare o gafisa ke badimo but no wena o no tlhoka weskoppies fela...stop calling me ompotsa masepa...infact ompotsa nnyw#n# ....mot## fela nxa you should've been the one who's dead not Jabulile....O RE YOU WANT TO REPLACE MY DAUGHTER THE ONE YOU AND YOUR CULT BOYFRIEND KILLED HEH....YOU WANNA REPLACE HER WITH YOUR BEWITCHED WOMB....O NTLWAELA NNYW#N# AMOGELANG....WANNYELA MSUNU....WANTLWAELA WENA NXA....never call me wankutlwa....never ever

Amo: Jabu

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Jabu: FOTSEK!!!!

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and threw his phone against the wall screaming which made Lolly to jump frightened she's been standing there listening and looking at him as

he insulted his wife ....he paced up and down trying to calm down and tears ran down his cheeks.....he's even shaking\*\*\*

Jabu: ko healer byang heh....ko healer byang Lorraine sf#be se sele busy seng founela....ko healer byang Lolly mpotse ( how am I gonna heal....how am I gonna heal Lorraine when that b#tch is busy calling me....how am I gonna heal Lolly tell me)

\*\*\*Lorraine stood there not knowing what to say or do\*\*\*

Jabu: she killed my daughter Lolly...my only daughter....na e sale ncosi Lolly but o bodile bothoko....bothoko Lolly ( she was still a baby and she died a painful death...a painful death Lolly)

\*\*\*she rushed to him as her own tears betrayed her and she hugged him and he held on to her tight breaking down crying\*\*\*

-----

AFTER SOME TIME

Jabu: I need to lie down a bit

Lolly: ok lets go you'll sleep in the bedroom

\*\*\*they went to the bedroom and she looked at him surprised when he took off his clothes and remained with only his briefs then he sat at the edge of the bed\*\*\*

Jabu: don't you have painkillers for this headache im having le sleeping pillsnyana

Lolly: ummm let me go get them

\*\*\*she walked out and soon came back with a glass of water and gave him the pills and the glass\*\*\*

Jabu: Thaa ( thanks)

\*\*\*he drank the pills and she took the now empty glass and put it away and he laid down on the bed facing the ceiling....her eyes went to his d#ck print and she swallowed hard and looked away quickly\*\*\*

Lolly: will you be ok

Jabu: yeah let me shut eye for a bit and I'll fine

Lolly: ok

\*\*\*she took the glass and walked out\*\*\*

FOUR HOURS LATER

\*\*\*Lorraine is watching TV eating snacks and also reading her favourite novel on Facebook\*\*\*

Jabu: come and sleep its late

\*\*\*Jabu's sleepy voice startles her\*\*\*

Lolly: eish Jabu you scared me

Jabu: askies tla o tlo robala ( sorry come and sleep)

\*\*\*she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Lolly: its ok I'll sleep here on the couch

\*\*\*he walked further in and took the remote and switched off the TV then went to check if the door is locked and took the glass and bowl of snacks she was feasting on and he took them to the kitchen and he switched off the lights\*\*\*

Lolly: Jabu...

Jabu: lets go

\*\*\*he said helping her up and she sighed as she followed him to the bedroom....she got in and took off her gown as he got undercovers\*\*\*

Jabu: what

Lolly: nothing....

Jabu: ok then tla o robale ( ok then come and sleep)

\*\*\*Lolly sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: you do know its inappropriate right....you still married and I have a boyfriend

Jabu: and I don't care...come to bed tuu

\*\*\*he said opening the covers on her side yawning and she slowly went to the bed and got in and Jabu fixed the covers for her...he pulled her closer and she rested her head on his chest and he held her tight and closed his eyes\*\*\*

Jabu: don't over think it...we are not f#cking were just sharing a bed

\*\*\*she sighed and relaxed a bit\*\*\*

Lolly: im still angry at you

Jabu: mmmmh I know

\*\*\*he said with a sexy sleepy voice\*\*\*

Lolly: and im not ready to forgive you

Jabu: I know and I wont give up until you do

Lolly: you hurt me Jabu

\*\*\*he kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Jabu: im sorry and im gonna be sorry for the rest of our lives

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Jabu: and please don't be too angry at me....Sbu and I need you

\*\*\*she cleared her throat and kept quiet...."what the hell am I doing" she thought\*\*\*

Jabu: good night

\*\*\*he said with a tired and sleepy voice\*\*\*

-----

TAREK

\*\*\*Im busy hitting it from behind sp#nking her jelly b#tt as Im drilling in her deeper...she moans out loud holding tight to the bed sheets while I groan....I must say her p#ssy is sweet or is it because she's pregnant anyway i continued to go in and out of her groaning enjoying myself when my phone rang....i just took a peek on the screen still f#ck#ng her from behind with sweat all over me and when I saw who the caller is my heart nearly stopped beating....i don't even know when I pulled out of Samke and rushed to my phone but I did....i quickly answered it trying to control my breathing\*\*\*

Me: stha...sthandwa sam...baby is that you

\*\*\*I can feel Samke's eyes on me and im sure she's livid by now mxm tsek!\*\*\*

Hills: yes wena le mar## a mannyane

\*\*\*then she giggled...what the....\*\*\*

Me: Shalate are you....are you high

Hills: I just...i just wanted to tell you that im divorcing you and that I've just realized gore I've been missing out...i got f#cked by a man with a huge d#ck and I must say im a happy woman...he gave it to me good and he made my toes curl

\*\*\*then she giggled again and I felt my heart shutter to pieces\*\*\*

Hills: damn this sh#t is good

Me: Shalate don't play like this ok...please hurt me any how you want but not like this

Hills: who said im playing....banna ba ja kuku ka montle ka mo ka di bazooka wena o busy o cheata ka ntswitswi eo ( men are busy eating the cookie out there with bazookas and you're busy cheating with a small d#ck)... so you can give that average d#ck of yours to your baby mama cause nna I've got myself a new bazooka and he's loaded and handsome too....thank you for cheating skat

\*\*\*then she laughed and dropped the call and I looked at my phone with my hands shaking and my heart beating at an abnormal rate....f#ck I think im gonna have a heart attack\*\*\*

Samke: are you ok

\*\*\*I just shook my head and slowly sat down with my hand on my chest\*\*\*

Samke: Tarek...

\*\*\*I hope she's playing with me....i hope what she said is not true...no she cant...she loves me she wont do that to me\*\*\*

Smake: ooh my Gosh im calling an ambulance ok hold on...

-----

NARRATED

\*\*\*Meanwhile ausVee and Hills are busy laughing their b#tts off\*\*\*

Vee: yho Shalate you got him good

\*\*\*Hills continued to laugh until she chocked on her own saliva and she coughed uncontrollably until she stopped then she took another puff and released and continued to laugh which made ausVee to join her and they laughed their b#tts off\*\*\*

-----

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

## Chapter 12

NARRATE ( TSHIMOLOGO)

\*\*\* She's busy praying trying to connect with God and her guides about the situation she's in....she's deep in her prayer when a chilling demon-like scream fills her bedroom and a chill ran down her spine she freezes but then snaps out of it and she continues to pray harder\*\*\*

Voice: stop

\*\*\*she stops praying with her heart pounding hard...she knows this voice every time she tries to help someone and she doesn't know how to go about it it gives her instructions....so she quickly stood up and went to switch on the lights and scans her bedroom\*\*\*

Tshimo: God and my Ancestors please be with me...please protect me....what's going on...talk to me please what's going on

Voice: red and white candles...take red and white candles

\*\*\*she quickly reaches for them and as she tries to light the red one since only the white one was lit the voice spoke\*\*\*

Voice: help him...take them and go and help him

\*\*\*she frowned then it clicked that she's not alone in her home there's a man she's supposed to help ...alarm bells rang in her head as panic took over and she got up and gathered her things and rushed out praying\*\*\*

Tshimo: Modimo waka wena mongadi wa go loka wena Kgoshi ya di Kgoshi wena Tau ya ba Juta wena Modimo wa Badimo baka kao rapela papa ke kgopela tshireletso...e ba le nna le monna yo o mo rometseng gore ke mo thuse ka o rapela mon'gadi wa go loka

\*\*\*she opened his door and what she saw made her shake in her boots\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED ( ALPHALETTE)

\*\*\*He's sleeping peacefully dreaming standing on top of a mountain with his father by his side talking\*\*\*

Alpha: baba but why do I have to be the one to pay off the debt....i love her baba and I cant hurt her....she's sick and her mother is crazy

\*\*\*he said pleading with his father\*\*\*

Father: its either you or your son Ntsako

\*\*\*Alphalette swallowed hard\*\*\*

Father: don't be like me....do what you are asked and remember there's a reason why they are pushing for this to happen....

Alpha: why me

Father: cause you're the one besides Gazankulu who can pull it off and plus Gaza is not on the right state of mine.....what he went through messed him up....he'll pull through but he wont be same anymore so they cant let him do this

\*\*\*Alphalette brushed his face\*\*\*

Father: not everything is at it seem with this request just trust us and pay off this debt that's gonna be clear off you and the entire generation going forward....not only your sons will suffer but Gazankulu's too cause you're the chosen ones

\*\*\*then the father frowned\*\*\*

Father: they now know he's alive....go and help him....HELP HIM NTSAKO

\*\*\*then he pushed him off the mountain and he fell to the bottom screaming his lungs out scared and he woke up gasping for air\*\*\*

Voice: help him

\*\*\*as he's trying to calm his breathing down his mind went to Gazankulu and he quickly got out of bed and he rushed out....He got inside his Ndomba barefoot and quickly reached for his Ancestral cloth and wrapped it around his waist and he reached for mpepho and lit it then he reached for his Ancestral bones and snuff and he poured the snuff on top of his goat skin small mat and he spoke to the bones and emptied the bag filled with them and he looked at them frowning\*\*\*



Alpha: ok mpherefere...thwadima ya mabona ish...setlhako ok....legwame la magudusha...mmmh ok I see

\*\*\*he picked the bones and put them inside the bag and put it away then he reached for a huge clay pot and lit another bunch of mpepho and put it inside then he reached for his muthi mixed with Lion's fat/oil and rubbed it on his hands and face and then he reached for another one and he poured inside the pot chanting things....he reached for another one and did the same thing ....he reached for a 2 litre bottle of petrol and poured two drops inside the pot and blue flame rose up as he chanted then he reached for his steel spear and chanted some words looking up and his body started shaking as sweat covered his whole body... his eyes turned all white and his voice changed as he chanted calling out all his Ancestors telling them to go and protect Gazankulu then he changed languages and started chanting in a foreign language for some time\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED (TSHIMO)

\*\*\*With two lit up candles Tshimo is praying hard as the guy is screaming painfully with his eyes shut.... he's lying on his back in a cross position facing up even his arms are spread out on his sides with his entire body shaking....he's bleeding on his forehead but you can't see the wound\*\*\*

Tshimo: wena Konyana ya go loka kao bitsa Tau ya baJuta ke re theoga le Mangeloi a gao a ma kgethwa...e tlang le tlo re lwanela....ngwana wa gao ashu o tlhoka thuso Modimo waka

Sponsored

AD

o tlhasetswe ke dira Kgoshi ya di Kgoshi....ke re tloo Mongadi wa go loka o theoge ka bogolo ba gao le Mangeloi a gao ama kgethwa o tlo molwanela....Tloo o mmeye letsogo la gao le le halalelang ....thibela moleko Modimo waka...thibela moleko Kgoshi ya di Kgoshi....thibela moleko Tau ya baJuta....Thibela moleko wena Modimo wa Badimo baka....kao bitsa ka lebitso la Jeso Krete ke re

bontsha bogolo ba gao ka monna oo...bontsha matla a gao Tau ya baJuta ka ene...kgalemela lenyatso Modimo waka

\*\*\*she prayed hard crying and shouting to a point that her body started shaking...the candles flicked violently as she prayed...she could feel some sort of presence behind her as she prayed hard....As for the guy ( Mr D) his screams died down \*\*\*

Man: plea....pleas....pleas...please....ne tshikete ni famba ( let me go)...pleas...

\*\*\*he said sounding like he's begging and Tshimo didn't stop she continued to pray then he kept quiet but his body still shook\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED

\*\*\*Alphalette then stabbed inside the clay pot still chanting in a foreign language and the flames changed colour to red like the colour of blood and screaming sounds came out of the pot....he pulled the spear out and stabbed again and again and again then he stopped when the screaming sounds died and his eyes changed back to normal and he looked at the flames\*\*\*

Alpha: die mbyana ( die dog)

\*\*\*he said breathing heavily with a scary frown on his face...he then pulled out the spear and the tip of it was covered with blood and he put it on top of the pot then he got up and walked out....he came back with a bucket filled with water and he took a bottle with watery liquid inside and he opened it and poured inside the pot then he filled the pot with water and you can see that the water is now red in colour....he chanted some words and he got up and he walked out closing and locking the door\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED ( TSHIMO)

Tshimo: thank you God...thank you Mangeloi a makgethwa...thank you Jesus....thank you our Ancestors....my Guides thank you....thank you so much...

\*\*\*she said wiping her face and he got closer and touched his arms and moved them to lay on top of his stomach and she closed her eyes with her hands on top of his\*\*\*

Tshimo: a Mohau wa Modimo kabelo le matshidiso di be le rona ka nako tsothe... Amen

\*\*\*then she opened her eyes and she looked at him....she got up and got his face cloth and tissue and she wiped the blood off with the tissue then she wiped his face and sat there looking at him with a sad look on her face.....she got up and went to lock the main house and she came back and locked the door then she sat on the edge of the mattress the man is sleeping on and she sighed\*\*\*

-----

## THE FOLLOWING DAY

NARRATED ( TSHIMO)

Man: mama....mama....

\*\*\*Tshimo quickly woke up and shook him\*\*\*

Tshimo: Ntsako...Ntsako wake up....wake up

\*\*\*he quickly opened his eyes and you could see panic on his face\*\*\*

Tshimo: its ok...its ok

\*\*\*he pulled her to his body and held her tight using both arms with his heart beating fast and Tshimo let him...after some time he loosened his grip and she moved from his body and looked at him and he wiped sweat off his face with both hands\*\*\*

Tshimo: your other hand

\*\*\*he looked at his left hand and sighed\*\*\*

Man: I guess so

\*\*\*he sighed again\*\*\*

Man: you don't look good....what's wrong

Tshimo: you don't remember what happened to you

Man: what do you mean

\*\*\*she sighed and told him what happened\*\*\*

Man: so I wasn't dreaming

Tshimo: what do you mean

Man: I was in a hut filled with smoke and there was this man...ugly looking man...he kept saying I escaped from him thinking he won't find me again...he kept saying I cost him a lot and that I'm precious to him...he cut my forehead and two humanoid things were holding my wrists on both sides and I couldn't move them...he said he knows my brother is not the one helping me and that he will find out who challenged him and deal with him or her

\*\*\*Tshimo swallowed hard\*\*\*

Man: he said him and his things have been searching for me since I escaped

Tshimo: this is bad...really bad

Man: you should just let me go mama...i don't want to put your life in danger

Voice: no

\*\*\*Tshimo got startled and she looked around then she sighed as she calms down\*\*\*

Tshimo: no....there's a reason why you came here Ntsako

Man: but that man

Tshimo: I managed to defeat him last night so he can't bring it on....my mother when she was still alive used to tell me that moloi tshwanetse a tshabe wena not gore when o tshabe yena ( a witch is supposed to be scared of you not for you to be scared of him or her)...you're light and he or she is darkness and light always wins at the end

\*\*\*the man sighed\*\*\*

Man: you didn't get hurt right

\*\*\*she shook her head no\*\*\*

Tshimo: just have a headache I hardly slept

Man: you should go and sleep I'll be fine

\*\*\*she shook her head no\*\*\*

Tshimo: you need to bath and eat then I need to go see a doctor for a letter for my boss...i don't wanna lose my job

\*\*\*he closed his eyes a bit with a heavy heart\*\*\*

Man: you should go to work then I'll be fine

\*\*\*she shook her head no\*\*\*

Tshimo: I need a few days off anyways

\*\*\*she got up\*\*\*

Tshimo: let me prepare you bathing water....wait...can you feel your whole body now

\*\*\*He moved his left arm tried to twist his body and his body agreed ....he twisted it to the sides and both his eyes and Tshimo's popped out\*\*\*

Tshimo: ooh my God

\*\*\*he tried to move his body so he sits up and slowly he managed with his heart beating fast \*\*\*

Tshimo: good Lord!!!...move your legs

\*\*\*he tried then groaned with pain and he stopped\*\*\*

Tshimo: you're healing

\*\*\*she said smiling\*\*\*

Tshimo: let me bring you water so you bath

-----

NARRATED (TAREK)

\*\*\*His mother is in his ward being dramatic and Tarek is annoyed like crazy all his mind is thinking about is Hills....if she said what she said to hurt him or if what she said is true....His heart started beating fast as he pictured her being f#ck#d by another man....The machines started beeping loud\*\*\*

Khethiwe: ooh my God my baby

\*\*\*he took deep breaths as he tried to calm down and they stopped beeping\*\*\*

Khethiwe: boyza are you ok

\*\*\*he almost rolled his eyes at her\*\*\*

Tar: yeah im ok

Khethiwe: don't scare me like that again

Tar: its nothing hectic and I'll be fine you don't have to worry

Khethiwe: don't tell me that nonsense ....you're my son I will always worry about you

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Khethiwe: umama ka boy said you had this panic attack right after you talked to that useless girl

Tar: leave my wife out of this ma and can you stop calling her useless cause believe me she's not

Khethiwe: yes she is...she failed as a woman...she failed to give you a child because of her useless womb

Tar: enough!!! ...that's my wife and I love her with everything in me....now I see that everyone was right about you....that woman can't give me children because she saved my life....i could be dead or paralyzed now but because of her im ok

\*\*\*Khethiwe rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Khethiwe: I told you I don't approve of her and she doesn't fit to be your wife but you didn't listen...look now you're having panic attacks....useless illnesses for weak fools...all because of that girl

Tar: leave mother

Khethiwe: angizwanga ( what did you just say)

Tar: I need to rest...please

\*\*\*she chuckled bitterly\*\*\*

Khethiwe: all because I told you the truth you don't want to hear nxa

\*\*\*she picked her bag and kissed his cheek then she walked out mumbling things and he sighed\*\*\*

Tar: I hope you were only trying to hurt me Shalate cause if you did cheat on me all hell will break loose

\*\*\*he said to himself looking angry\*\*\*

-----

MOERA

\*\*\*Before Masai left for work she asked that I take AJ from day care to baby daddy's place after work cause baby daddy is busy so he wont be able to fetch him and she's gonna have a busy day today and she'll knock off late so im about to knock off when my phone rings and its Alex's brother\*\*\*

Me: hello

Drench: Mo how are you

Me: im good and you

Drench: im good....i was just checking up on you

Me: ooh ok thanks

\*\*\*he cleared his throat \*\*\*

Drench: so how have you been

Me: I've been good...work stress nje

Drench: ok so tell me why you're still working again

\*\*\*I laughed\*\*\*

Me: experience Dre...experience

Drench: well if you were mine I'd make sure you get that experience while you're the boss

\*\*\*he said seriously....mmmh ok.... anyway I just laughed\*\*\*

Me: well I have everything planned out...this way when I leave I'll leave with some clients so Im not just slaving away for that arrogant fool for nothing

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Drench: I love your way of thinking and analysing things

Me: you have to be smart if you're a hustler

Drench: true

Me: so how you doing...how's everything

Drench: im making money so im happy

\*\*\*I laughed\*\*\*

Drench: look im coming that side in three weeks' time so lets do lunch

Me: ok I'll see you then

Drench: great....enjoy the rest of your day and greet your sisters

Me: will do...bye

\*\*\*he ended the call\*\*\*

Me: ok!

\*\*\*I got up and packed my things and as im walking to the door it opened and in walked Mr arrogant

Boss: going home already

Me: yep its knock off time

Boss: mmmmh....Mr Smith is happy with you I wonder what you fed him cause he's never happy with anything that one

Me: I just know how to do my job sir

Boss: mmh so there's a work function on Saturday so I was thinking that we go together

Me: im sorry sir but I cant make it

\*\*\*he frowned and cleared his throat...mxm stupid fool\*\*\*

Boss: I did say it's a work function and we might get more clientele

Me: and my family comes first....im sure Susan she's also good

\*\*\*and easily f#ck#ble\*\*\*

Boss: don't tell me about Susan I want to go with you

\*\*\*ooh now I see...she has already fallen victim or she threatened to report him\*\*\*

Me: well I cant make it...sorry

\*\*\*I walked passed him and he grabbed my arm\*\*\*

Boss: are you defying me Miss Rapula

Me: yes and never touch me like this ever again...sir

\*\*\*I said looking straight into his eyes and he let go of my arm chuckling\*\*\*

Boss: I see you don't want to continue to work here mmh

\*\*\*I smiled amused...this fool nxa\*\*\*

Me: even if you make me loose this job just know I'll find another one Mr Msibi....this company is not the top best in the country its just one of the best and with my reputation im sure I won't job hunt for long

\*\*\*then I walked out and held the door...he clicked his tongue fuming and he walked out then I locked the door and walked away...this fool will be shocked when he learn who I am and where I come from I swear he'll faint \*\*\*

-----

NARRATED



\*\*\*Moera got out of the car and took AJ out of the car along with his bags and she closed the door and locked the car....she then walked inside the yard and straight to the door....she knocked and after a few seconds the door opened and Mpande smiled at her\*\*\*

Mpande: hey

Moera: hi

Mpande: come on in

\*\*\*he took AJ from her\*\*\*

Mpande: champ lama champ...yes Shangaan boy....mfana malome....dintshang ( whats up)

Aj: adinchi ( nothing)

Mpande: sho mfanaka ( yes my boy)

\*\*\*he said walking further in with them with Moera looking around the house impressed and she sat down comfortably\*\*\*

Mpande: Alpha will be with you now usasebusy nento zakhe zo'khokho bakhe ( he's still busy with his ancestral things)

Moera: ok

\*\*\*Tshepo walked in wiping his hands and when AJ saw him he screamed get out of Mpande's hold and Mpande put him down and he ran to Tshepo who laughed and picked him up with Moera frowning\*\*\*

Tshepo: young one

\*\*\*they did their hand shake and hugged...Tshepo walked to Moera and he greeted her respectfully....he could tell she's Masai's twin\*\*\*

Tshepo: dumelang

Moera: hello

Tshepo: le kae ( how are you)

Moera: ke teng abuti wena ( im good and you)

Tshepo: im good

Mpande: this is Juniors aunt his mother's twin

Tshepo: yeah I can tell they kinda look alike

\*\*\*he looked at AJ\*\*\*

Tshepo: di gwaile mfanaka? ( are you hungry my boy)

\*\*\*AJ nodded and they walked to the kitchen chatting and Mpande cleared his throat sitting down\*\*\*

Mpande: Moera neh...im Mpande....i don't know if you remember me

Moera: mmmmh...so how long will Alphalette take

Mpande: relax uyaqeda manje ( he'll be done just now)

Moera: ok

Mpande: so do you remember me

\*\*\*Moera sighed bored cause yes she does and right now she regrets sleeping with him\*\*\*

Moera: yeah we once f#ck#d

\*\*\*she said rolling her eyes\*\*\*

Mpande: yeah crazy sh!t neh

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Moera: mmmmh

Mpande: so I know we don't know each other and you're Masai's twin so it will look awkward if something between us happen but...

Moera: nothing between us will happen so the wont be any awkwardness....i mean yes we once slept together which was a once off thing and a mistake but we were drunk and it was like two years back

\*\*\*he cleared his throat and smiled slightly\*\*\*

Mpande: I know...I know but I mean we complement each other mmas and im someone who's straight forward and doesn't beat around the bush...I like you and I would like to try love and a relationship with you

\*\*\* he said giving her a panty dropper smile but Moera just raised an eyebrow with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Moera: im not interested

Mpande: what

Moera: no offence but just because my sister has a baby with Alphalette doesn't mean I'll date his friends or cousins or whatever....firstly you're not my type abuti and secondly you can't afford me and thirdly can we drop this before you embarrass yourself further more...please

\*\*\*Mpande swallowed hard and chuckled lightly trying to grab hold tight at what is left of his ego\*\*\*

Mpande: so what's your type

Moera: not you...like I said please stop you're making me uncomfortable now  
\*\*\*she said looking around getting impatient now and Mpande swallowed hard again  
then he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Moera: so tell me more about Alphalette

\*\*\*Mpande didn't say anything\*\*\*

Moera: Mpande

Mpande: what

\*\*\*he snapped and she rolled her eyes \*\*\*

Moera: I asked you to tell me more about Alphalette

Mpande: why

\*\*\*he snapped at her again\*\*\*

Moera: cause he has a child with my twin so I need to know more about him

\*\*\*she said rolling her eyes\*\*\*

Alphalette: why don't you ask me then

\*\*\*she smiled shyly but Alphalette didn't smile back then she cleared her throat and  
stopped smiling\*\*\*

-----

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

## Chapter 13

Moera: Mpande...

Mpande: what

\*\*\*he snapped and she rolled her eyes \*\*\*

Moera: I asked you to tell me more about Alphalette

Mpande: why

\*\*\*he snapped at her again\*\*\*

Moera: cause he has a child with my twin so I need to know more about him

\*\*\*she said rolling her eyes\*\*\*

Alphalette: why don't you ask me then

\*\*\*she smiled shyly but Alphalette didn't smile back then she cleared her throat and stopped smiling\*\*\*

Moera: you have a beautiful house here

\*\*\*she said looking around\*\*\*

Alpha: sho...where's my son

Mpande: with Tshupo

\*\*\*he said standing up and walking away...he wanted to crush her little attitude cause he can be rude and mean if he wants to...to give her that mean taxi driver attitude or clap back but he still likes her and she's still Masai's sister so walking away is the best option...Alphalette looked at him as he walked away and he sighed\*\*\*

Moera: so aren't you gonna show me around...i want to explore this beautiful house

Alpha: you maybe be Masai's twin but you're nothing to me so why would I show you around my house

\*\*\*he said looking at her with his hands in his pocket and a frown on his face... he was pissed off that she embarrassed Mpande like that without even considering his feelings\*\*\*

Moera: bathong Al

Alpha: its Alphalette to you

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone and the smile on her face faded then she got up clearing her throat embarrassed and she picked her hand bag\*\*\*

Moera: I should go

Alpha: I'll walk you out

\*\*\*she swallowed and faked a smile then she walked towards the door in her stilettos looking good in her work suit...they walked towards her car outside the gate and he stood there looking at her as she opened the driver side door and bend over with her tight ass all out there and put her hand bag to the passanger side and she stood straight\*\*\*

Moera: I'll see you around

Alpha: what you said to Mpande was rude and mean

Moera: askies

\*\*\*she said frowning\*\*\*

Alpha: being nice and considerate sometimes wont kill you especially to someone who likes you like he does

Moera: you were eavesdropping

Alpha: you could've just let him down easy not what you did

Moera: I don't have that patience....when you start liking someone Alpha look at yourself and at that person then ask yourself if you're both on the same level and if yes then make your move not what he did....look at me then at him do you think I would want to be seen in public with him especially to the kind of spots I hand out at....i just saved him the embarrassment

\*\*\*Alpha shook his head more pissed\*\*\*

Alpha: then you should also stop crushing over me cause you're not my type or in the same level as me and you're not the kind of woman I'll take to my mother or even introduce to my ancestors...in fact they would disown me if I ever introduce you to them or start liking you like that....

\*\*\*she looked at him shocked blinking rapidly\*\*\*

Alpha: you're not my type and never will be because of that mean and rude attitude you have going on....concentrate on getting fucked by married man and stop crushing on Masai's man and as for Mpande he'll get over you I mean there's nothing special about you anyways

\*\*\*then he walked away leaving her frozen where she's standing....she finally moved and got inside the car and closed the door and sat there for a while still shocked by what he said....no one and I mean one has ever spoken to her like that....and she asked herself how he knew she likes him then she remembered that he's a sangoma and she sighed and swallowed hard she started the car and drove away getting angry as his words played in her head\*\*\*

## INSIDE THE HOUSE

Alpha: you good???

\*\*\*Mpande cleared his throat\*\*\*

Mpande: yeah I'll be fine

Alpha: you still like her??

\*\*\*he asked brushing his eyebrow and sat next to him on the bench in the backyard\*\*\*

Mpande: yep....i don't know why but I know we can be a power couple me and her....her feistiness toned down a bit looks good on her

Alpha: you call that being feisty bro

Mpande: you won't understand man

Alpha: she embarrassed you and was rude dude....she belittled you

Mpande: I know how to win her over man

\*\*\*Alpha just shook his head...he wished he felt bad for how he spoke to Moera but with the way he spoke to Mpande and belittled him she deserved it maybe that will bring her down to earth and she'd stop thinking that she's the best thing created after bread "he thought" \*\*\*

-----

## AT DORIS'S HOUSE

Doris: and now what's wrong with you...keng ekare o bethile ke dipatje tsa Felo ( why do you look high with Felo's weed)

\*\*\*Hills raised an eyebrow looking at Doris and Aus Vee just laughed\*\*\*

Doris: what

Hills: what do you know about dipatje tsa Felo mama ( about Felo's weed mama)

Doris: a ka tsofala nna Hills....oska nsheba wanyatsa....this old bones di bleksema woman on top sterek....ke llisa poo nna skat....poo e mpotsa phini ya karata ya banka ( im not old Hills....don't look at me and belittle me....this old bones are a pro with woman on top....i make a man cry love....a man will voluntarily tell me his card pin)

\*\*\*Velemina is laughing her ass off \*\*\*

Hills: forget I asked

AusVee: you shouldn't have asked in the first place....anyway Hunadi my skat don't worry ka oo....ke mo tshwere ka gear one ( I'm taking care of her)

Doris: im not even gonna ask...let me freshen up and I'll be back

\*\*\*she walked away and Hills sighed\*\*\*

Hills: I wonder how papa handled her

AusVee: love lala....and not just any love true love and acceptance

Hills: I thought I had it with Tarek

AusVee: we can say you did and maybe he just didn't with you

\*\*\*Tears filled her eyes\*\*\*

Hills: maybe im being punished for that three sum aus Vee

AusVee: hey sa batlo mbora.....didn't he cheat ka that skinny b#tch ba re ke mang that PA ya gae....so don't do that ( hey don't bore me....didn't he cheat with that skinny bltch what's her name that PA of his....so don't do that)

\*\*\*she wiped her tears off\*\*\*

Hills: maybe it just wasn't meant to be

-----

## LATER AT ALPHALETTE'S HOUSE

Masai: hey

\*\*\*she said walking inside the kitchen in her sweatpants and a hood she left her overnight bag in the lounge after greeting Tshepo and kissing AJ.... Alpha smirked at her....he didn't understand why he was feeling what he's feeling for her this strongly maybe its her humble nature "he though"....or her smile and the twitch in her eyes when she smiles he loves her\*\*\*

Alpha: hey

Masai: those two are inseparable and they just known each other like recently

Alpha: the power of natural love and extreme connection....so no kiss no nothing for me?

Masai: kiss??

Alpha: yeah like this

\*\*\* he grabbed her waist and gave her a breathtaking kiss that left her breathless \*\*\*

Alpha: this kiss

\*\*\*he said looking into her eyes\*\*\*

Alpha: stop fighting it....there's no muti involved no love potion just love....true love

\*\*\*she looked away with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Alpha: what do you say?

Masai: i....ummm

\*\*\*she breathed out and tried to move from him but he tightened the grip\*\*\*

Masai: the truth is im scared and I don't know why

Alpha: I know why.....i hurt you Masai and its ok to have doubts

Masai: im tiny compared to you Phalette....it will look like im dating a sugar daddy

\*\*\*she didn't have another excuse so that's what she came up with and he laughed with his deep voice and it was a nice thing to see....she smiled looking at him embarrassed\*\*\*

Alpha: don't you know you already have a child with the sugar daddy

\*\*\*she laughed hitting him lightly and he pulled her closer and wrapped both his arms around her body\*\*\*

Alpha: we giving us a chance right

\*\*\*she sighed and closed her eyes\*\*\*

Alpha: don't fight it

\*\*\*she opened her eyes biting her bottom lip with her heart hammering against her chest\*\*\*

Masai: ok

\*\*\*he smiled widely\*\*\*

Alpha: and by giving us a chance it means sex kissing cuddling and all the works not us just getting to know each other

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*

Alpha: what...i just wanna be sure

\*\*\*she smiled looking at him\*\*\*

Masai: the works

\*\*\*he caught on and smashed his lips on hers and they kissed passionately\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\* They are now watching TV after eating and Tshepo went to bath AJ....Alphalette cleared his throat\*\*\*

Alpha: I had a not so nice conversation with your twin

\*\*\*she got off his chest and looked at him\*\*\*



Alpha: you know Mpande likes her right so he told her and she was mean and when I say mean I mean degrading mean

\*\*\*she sighed and sat straight looking down\*\*\*

Alpha: so I bruised her ego...a bit....im telling you this so you not surprised when she gives me attitude from now on

Masai: how's Mpande

\*\*\*she said playing with her fingers and Alpha held her hands\*\*\*

Alpha: he'll be fine and her being mean like that has got nothing to do with you

Masai: she's my twin Alpha and her bad behavior reflect bad on me

Alpha: says who

Masai: I knew something like this will happen when he told me he likes her....she's like that

Alpha: enough about her....Mpande is the one that likes her and we are not getting involved....i said what I said to her to show her that she needs to tone it down a bit and that's it....we not getting involved

\*\*\*he said pulling her closer\*\*\*

Alpha: anyway AJ is sleeping with his brother tonight

Masai: no

Alpha: Aj is sleeping with Tshepo night

\*\*\*he said with a command tone and she blinked fast for a bit surprised by the tone then she looked away\*\*\*

Alpha: right now we gonna bath in muthi to cleanse ourselves and im gonna erase the bad experience you had with me

\*\*\*he said pulling her hand and he put it on his bulge and her heart nearly stopped when she remembered how huge he is\*\*\*

Masai: cle....cleanse??

\*\*\*Tshepo and AJ walked back in the lounge and Masai quickly pulled her hand from Alpha's hand on\*\*\*

Tshepo: hai wena wa ropa ( hai you're cheating)

AJ: kwena o lopang aa ( you the one cheating)

Alpha: abuti o ropa kang fano ( what is your brother cheating with boy)

\*\*\*he said taking AJ from Tshepo\*\*\*

Tshepo: we were playing rock paper scissors

\*\*\*he said sitting down and Masai laughed\*\*\*

Masai: thank you for bathing him abuti

Tshepo: ke mfanaka sa wara dimamzo ( he's my younger bro so don't worry mother)

Masai: dimamzo???.... im not that old dude

\*\*\*Tshepo laughed\*\*\*

Tshepo: ok mami

\*\*\*she just shook her head and she laughed\*\*\*

-----

AT MASAI AND MOERA'S PLACE

Selina: he said that....ouch

\*\*\*Moera took a large gulp from her drink and nodded\*\*\*

Moera: he was so mean girl....i swear its like I smelled like shit to him

Selina: but nawe girl cuddling and all the works not us just getting to know each other

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*

Alpha: what...i just wanna be sure

\*\*\*she smiled looking at him\*\*\*

Masai: the works

\*\*\*he caught on and smashed his lips on hers and they kissed passionately\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\* They are now watching TV after eating and Tshepo went to bath AJ....Alphalette cleared his throat\*\*\*

Alpha: I had a not so nice conversation with your twin

\*\*\*she got off his chest and looked at him\*\*\*

Alpha: you know Mpande likes her right so he told her and she was mean and when I say mean I mean degrading mean

\*\*\*she sighed and sat straight looking down\*\*\*

Alpha: so I bruised her ego...a bit....im telling you this so you not surprised when she gives me attitude from now on

Masai: how's Mpande

\*\*\*she said playing with her fingers and Alpha held her hands\*\*\*

Alpha: he'll be fine and her being mean like that has got nothing to do with you

Masai: she's my twin Alpha and her bad behavior reflect bad on me

Alpha: says who

Masai: I knew something like this will happen when he told me he likes her....she's like that

Alpha: enough about her....Mpande is the one that likes her and we are not getting involved....i said what I said to her to show her that she needs to tone it down a bit and that's it....we not getting involved

\*\*\*he said pulling her closer\*\*\*

Alpha: anyway AJ is sleeping with his brother tonight

Masai: no

Alpha: Aj is sleeping with Tshepo night

\*\*\*he said with a command tone and she blinked fast for a bit surprised by the tone then she looked away\*\*\*

Alpha: right now we gonna bath in muthi to cleanse ourselves and im gonna erase the bad experience you had with me

\*\*\*he said pulling her hand and he put it on his bulge and her heart nearly stopped when she remembered how huge he is\*\*\*

Masai: cle....cleanse??

\*\*\*Tshepo and AJ walked back in the lounge and Masai quickly pulled her hand from Alpha's hard on\*\*\*

Tshepo: hai wena wa ropa ( hai you're cheating)

AJ: kwena o lopang aa ( you the one cheating)

Alpha: abuti o ropa kang fano ( what is your brother cheating with boy)

\*\*\*he said taking AJ from Tshepo\*\*\*

Tshepo: we were playing rock paper scissors

\*\*\*he said sitting down and Masai laughed\*\*\*

Masai: thank you for bathing him abuti

Tshepo: ke mfanaka sa wara dimamzo ( he's my younger bro so don't worry mother)

Masai: dimamzo???.... im not that old dude

\*\*\*Tshepo laughed\*\*\*

Tshepo: ok mami

\*\*\*she just shook her head and she laughed\*\*\*

-----

AT MASAI AND MOERA'S PLACE

Selina: he said that...ouch

\*\*\*Moera took a large gulp from her drink and nodded\*\*\*

Moera: he was so mean girl....i swear its like I smelled like shit to him

Selina: but nawe girl he's your twin's baby daddy

\*\*\*Moera rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Moera: I know that ok

Selina: then why are you crushing

Moera: no im not

Selina: then why are you upset and drinking yourself to a coma...mxm please bltch

Moera: lets just drop it ok

\*\*\*Selina took a sip from her glass\*\*\*

Selina: what you doing is wanting to lose your twin....you never have a crush on your sister's baby daddy or boyfriend or even an ex dude....you don't do that....im just saying

Moera: I said lets drop it

Selina: we dropping it

Moera: good...so what happened with uguy

Selina: mxm oho

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Selina: tolili girl

\*\*\*Moera laughed out loud\*\*\*

Selina: I faked everything Mo from faking to enjoy being muffed by him to pretending to feel him or even enjoying him to faking an orgasm....he was the worst ever

\*\*\*Moera is still laughing\*\*\*

Selina: guess what he said afterwards

Moera: mmh

Selina: ke tiao bolaya nonoza and im like what the f#ck

\*\*\*laughter\*\*\*

Selina: hai money neh

-----

NARRATED ( TAREK)

Duma: will you stop

Tar: what if she wasn't joking

Duma: you just got out of hospital dude relax

Tar: how can I relax when my wife is busy doing God know what

Duma: she did say she wants a divorce

Tar: no one is getting a divorce here....she's in her feels she'll be back

Duma: why do I feel like you're in denial man....i mean you have Samke and she's pregnant

Tar: don't tell me about that one....she should just give birth she's starting to annoy me....and I know my wife she's just hurt and now she's trying to hurt me by lying

\*\*\*Duma just shook his head as Tarek tried Hills numbers with a new simcard again and it was off\*\*\*

Tar: where the fuck is she....why is her phone off

\*\*\*Duma just sighed and sat back and watched his friend pacing up and down in his living room\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED ( LORRAINE)

\*\*\* She's sitting in the lounge relaxing catching up on her favorite series Jabu left to meet someone and even though she wasn't pleased that he said he'll be back for now she's enjoying her own space and prays that Jabu returns to take his bag and leaves for Gauteng but who is she kidding we talking about Jabu here....She's disturbed when her phone rings and she sighs when she sees who it is\*\*\*

Lolly: hey

\*\*\*he kept quiet\*\*\*

Lolly: hello

Kenny: did you sleep with him

Lolly: huh

Kenny: did you yes or no

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: im not a cheat Kenny so no I didn't and I cant believe you asked me that

Kenny: you lying to me

\*\*\*he was cold\*\*\*

Lolly: Kenny I've known Jabu for like forever and he respects me in that manner....i don't know what beef you have with him but please do not involve me Kenny take it up with him man to man and don't get me involved

Kenny: you let him sleep at your place and im supposed to be ok with that

Lolly: and I've slept at his place whenever I had nowhere to sleep

Kenny: you know what....its either me or him

Lolly: askies??

Kenny: im not about to compete with him Lorraine....you chose

Lolly: wow...so you're threatened by a married man Kenneth....a married man that has been like a brother to me for years and years

Kenny: im not threatened by that piece of sh!t and never insult me like that again

Lolly: then why are you acting like this

Kenny: you know what...fuck this sh!t nxa....this is my turf and no one insults me like he did and get away with it

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and she sighed ....she doesn't understand why Kenny is acting like this....she just doesn't understand it....her phone rang again and its Jabu....she breathed out loud and answered\*\*\*

Lolly: Jabu

Jabu: what should I bring for dinner

\*\*\*she closed her eyes defeated\*\*\*

Jabu: babe???Lolly??

Lolly: Jabu stop calling me babe please....stop you're complicating my life

Jabu: don't worry I'll bring your favorite....see you later

\*\*\*then he dropped the call as tears filled her eyes\*\*\*

-----

## AT THE KHUMALO

Snakes: you're being too much haw

Jabu: too much yani....wazini( what do you know)

Snakes: im happily married and still love my beautiful crazy wife

Jabu: mxm I don't know what she's still doing with you nobubi ( with your ugly face)

\*\*\*everyone laughed\*\*\*

Snakes: ngizokthuka ngomthakathi lowakho wesf#b# unye nentshebe ( I'll insult you with your whore witch)

Jabu: f#sek (piss off)

Snakes: nawe (you too)

Jabu: mxm

Jay: are you two done

\*\*\*he said bored by their squabbles\*\*\*

Jabu: no..... mar#tao Snakes

Snakes: nawe mas#ndakho

Jabu: nxa lentjebe ya mas#pa ( nxa with your sh!tty beard)

Snakes: yeah yabo lapho foza ukhuluma iqiniso....iyenza amas#pa lentshebe ( yeah you see there bro you're telling the truth....my beard is doing the things)

\*\*\*he said smiling brushing it\*\*\*

Snakes: I should hook you up with my barber

\*\*\*he said showing him his nicely cut beard and Jabu just shook his head and he sighed he could see its a waste of time arguing with him\*\*\*

Jabu: so what do you know about him

\*\*\*he asked looking at Jase\*\*\*

Jase: ahh the boring stuff....into gun smuggling...drugs human trafficking fraud....uyabora nje

Jabu: human trafficking....he hid that very well

Jay: he's a coward that one....he hides in the back like a b#tch.... Sam the Congolese back in PTA is the one that does the dirt work...

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled\*\*\*

Jabu: Sam that Congolese f#ck the one that thinks he's the "it" sh!t just because we let him think that.....does he even know Sam can't be trusted he can betray you just like that

Snakes: what happened to talking about intshebe yam ( my beard)

\*\*\*they all looked at him with frowns\*\*\*

Jabu: really Khumalo

Snakes: ngiyabuza...we were talking about my beard the next thing aboSam bayangena into ya hlangahlangana lapho ( Sam enters and things gets mixed up there)

Jase: Mamba whoooh man

\*\*\*Snakes shook his head and got up\*\*\*

Jabu: uyaphi ( where are you going)

Snakes: we are not talking about my cute beard mos

\*\*\*he walked away\*\*\*

Jabu: really Snakes

Jay: he's bored...uyambora uKenny cause he's an amateur and there's nothing interesting ngaye

Jabu: Snakes is weird

\*\*\*he came back again\*\*\*

Snakes: konje where did you say my wife went with yours Jase

Jay: cant you just let Ntombi breathe mfowethu assomblief man

Snakes: no im the air she breathes

\*\*\*he took out his phone and called her walking away and the Khumalos shook their head\*\*\*

Jabu: whats going on with him



Jase: he was diagnosed with high blood pressure and gout and he's acting like a baby...

Jabu: gout??

\*\*\* Jabu asked with a smile on his face and Snakes came back sulking\*\*\*

Jay: don't even think about it Jabu

Jabu: I didn't say anything

\*\*\* Jay sighed shaking his head\*\*\*

Jay: what now

\*\*\*he asked Snakes\*\*\*

Snakes: athi three more hours....we need to leave Natal untombi uyazilaula la ( Ntombi is doing as she pleases here)

Jay: don't let her hear you say that

Snakes: kungcono angibulale ngiyafa vele mos ( its better she kills me im dying mos)....i swear Ntombi doesn't love me....ngiyagula....i could drop dead any minute and yena she's out there enjoying herself

Jase: Nhlaka stop please ok not today

Snakes: I blame you....i don't know why but I blame you nxa

\*\*\*he walked away again\*\*\*

Jay: your BP is not even high yet Nhlaka

Snakes: ngiyafa ( im dying) and you say that Jay

\*\*\*he said coming back and all this while Jabu is looking at them with a frown on his face shocked that they are actually entertaining his crazy behavior\*\*\*

Jay: what's killing you

Snakes: I have high blood pressure and ungenza ngithukuthele ngapha my feet hurt....ngiyotshela uNtombi( and you are making me angry on top of that my feet hurt...im going to tell Ntombi)

\*\*\*he walked away again\*\*\*

Jay: sorry about that man....ai uNhlaka

Jabu: its just BP and Gout

Jase: don't let him hear you say that cause to him they are deadly and need attention

\*\*\* Jabu just shook his head and Jase chuckled\*\*\*

Jase: there's no BP or Gout la he's just mad that Kenny is not a challenge that he's an amateur and that there's actually nothing interesting about him and its true your enemy is boring he doesn't even know how to hide his sh!t

\*\*\* Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Jay: anyway what do you wanna do to him

Jabu: get him arrested for human trafficking

Jay: it wont hold you know that...he might be an amateur but he knows people in high places around here

Jase: getting him arrested...what you're a law abiding citizen now Jabu

\*\*\* Jabu laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: I just want Lorraine to doubt him that's all cause I know she will....it hits close to home for her.....i don't wanna go on hard....i know Lolly and this....this will break them up

\*\*\*the twins laughed\*\*\*

Jase: sly move

\*\*\* Jabu just chuckled\*\*\*

-----

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

## NARRATED

\*\*\*Alphalette bathed first and now a nervous Masai is taking her bath too....Alpha is also nervous but he wont show her...he hopes from tonight onwards he'll at least erase the bad experience sex they had years back and create new memories and a new amazing experience for her....she comes out with a towel wrapped around her body and immediately he gets an erection....\*\*\*

Alpha: "fuck she's gorgeous"

\*\*\*he thought and he got up and went to her and she shyly looked at his chest instead of his face since his tall and he lifted her chin up and kissed her slowly and passionately pulling her closer and she felt his hard machine pocking her...she pulled away from the kiss feeling hot and she cleared her throat and tried to move away from him but she failed\*\*\*

Alpha: what is it

Masai: nothing ummm pheew...im just nervous that's all

Alpha: then let me take the lead....just let go and trust me....let me worship this body mamas....let me erase the bad experience you had with me years ago

\*\*\*he said with a sexy voice and she felt wet down there instantly...she stood on her toes and kissed his lips and he immediately took both their towel off and he grabbed her ass and picked her up and she wrapped her legs around him and he walked towards the bed with her as they kissed and he put her on the comfy bed and got between her legs caressing her body...they continued to kiss with him touching and squeezing where he can on her body...his joystick leaked pr#cum and he wanted to be inside her immediately #removed

He kissed her going down until he reached her shaved nana...he licked it first then he parted her nana lips and gently used his tongue to massage her cl#t and that drove Masai crazy\*\*\*

Masai: Phalette...oooh Gosh....Pha...yhooo mmawee

\*\*\*she grabbed the bed sheets as her upper body pulled up...her body failed her and she came all over his face.... Alpha got off bed and went to pick one of the towels on the floor and wiped his face and stood there staring at her as she rubbed her sensitive cl#t breathing heavily....his member got harder and harder with veins visible on it....he knew if he enters her now he wont even last a minute inside of her\*\*\*

Alpha: on your knees mama....your ass should face me

\*\*\*he said with his heart racing as for Masai she did as told with her heart racing too....she wondered if she didn't leave any tissues in there or if she has grown some hair in there\*\*\*

Alpha: fuck...

\*\*\*"ooh my Gosh there's hair....he's definitely saying f#!k because of the hair" she thought as she panicked\*\*\*

Alpha....damn...

\*\*\*"ooh my Gosh this is embarrassing" she thought...as she's about to get off her knees he spoke\*\*\*

Alpha: play with your cl#t love

\*\*\*"heh" she thought\*\*\*

Alpha: please play with it....slowly love please

\*\*\*he said with his racing heart as he rubbed gently his machine with his hand while another hand held the towel and Masai did as told and the pleasure she felt was out of this world...she moaned loud in a sexy voice and that made Alpha to almost lose his mind as he gave himself a hand job as he watched her\*\*\*

Alpha: f#ck...faster my love...faster

\*\*\*she did as told and he also went faster\*\*\*

Alpha: put your middle finger inside love...please....do it slowly and moan for daddy....do it for daddy randzo ra mina ( my love )

\*\*\*she did as told and she fingered herself slowly and he cursed as more veins popped on his machine and he squeezed his b#tt cheeks tight as his hand went faster\*\*\*

Alpha: f#!k yourself mamas...go fast....please

\*\*\*and she did and he also went faster and as an orgasm hit her he also put the towel on his tip and he grunted as he came on it...nikka didn't even wait to calm down...nope...he got on the bed and turned her to lay on her back and he got between her legs and entered her....he pushed in all his dick and as his machine stretched her she screamed with pleasure as he groaned loud losing his mind \*\*\*

-----

NARRATED ( MOERA)

\*\*\*She's busy calling Masai and she's not answering her calls\*\*\*

Selina: and nou

Moera: she's not answering her phone

Selina: who

Moera: Masai...mxm ever since she started spending time with Alphalette she's ignoring me and my phone calls...le rena re tlo jola ( we will also date)...we will find our own very-very too mxm

Selina: wow

\*\*\*she said sitting down and grabbing her glass of wine and taking a sip\*\*\*

Moera: what

Selina: I never thought I'll see you like this....more especially over a man Moera

Moera: what are you talking about

Selina: jealousy is written all over you friend...Masai is probably being f#ck!d by her baby daddy now that's why she cant answer her phone and you're disturbing her

Moera: Masai would never do that

Selina: and why not

Moera: I know my sister ok....she's probably gonna give him the ninety day rule or something

\*\*\*she said dismissively and Selina laughed\*\*\*

Selina: ok if you say so

Moera: I know so...she wouldn't do that...she's too shy that one

\*\*\*Selina shrugged her shoulders....she couldn't believe what she was witnessing....the perfect Moera Rapula falling for her twin sister's baby daddy and acting it out like this not even hiding it...she needs to bring her down to earth face down with this revelation and she knows a perfect person to do that for her....she's been miss goody too shoes for far too long this one" she thought \*\*\*

Selina: cheers to life chomzaza

\*\*\*Moera chuckled and they clicked their glasses and Selina looked at her smiling\*\*\*

-----

## AT ALPHALETTE'S HOUSE

\*\*\* He's standing next to the bed with Masai's upper body on the bed and he's f#ck!ng her in a butterfly position style fast...his strokes are deep and fast and his groans drive her crazy....Stevens is the silent type so experiencing this while enjoying yourself is golden....having a man express how he's enjoying you is magical and at this moment she knew she's a gone girl...she's done for....\*\*\*

Alpha: ahhh...ahhh....yesss....f#ck.....

\*\*\*is what he's saying as he enjoys her.....he hit her g-spot again and she convulsed and came again screaming....her shaky hand went to her cl#tor!s and she tried to rub it as he continued to give her extreme pleasure but she failed instead she grabbed the sheets his tight grip on her waist got tighter and he went faster in and out of her....he grew bigger inside of her and she moaned louder as he groaned louder losing his mind and he nutted inside of her pushing his machine deeper and deeper holding his breath\*\*\*

Alpha: ahhhhhhhhhh....sh#ttttt....aaaah....f#ckkkkkkkk....ahhh...ahhh...ahhh

\*\*\*he said that as he offloaded each and every last drop of his semen inside of her\*\*\*

-----

MONDAY

\*\*\*Masai is bended on the basin in the bathroom as Alphalette hit it from behind holding her waist tight deep groaning...She was brushing her teeth when he came and took her from behind she's still sore from the whole weekend of sex after this round at least her nunu will rest since she's going back home today\*\*\*

\*\*\*He hit her g-spot and she cursed as tears filled her eyes \*\*\*

Masai: f@#k!!!

\*\*\*she said as she squirted all over the floor....more tears gushed out as the pleasure she was feeling was overwhelming her...Alpha didn't stop he chased his own orgasm and filled her up with his semen\*\*\*

Alpha: I love you so damn much

\*\*\*he kissed the back of her neck then he sighed and he pulled out then he went to shower...Masai sighed and finished brushing her teeth with his semen running down her legs then she filled the bathtub with water\*\*\*

-----

AT WORK ( MASAI)

\*\*\* Im busy replying to my work emails trying to ignore my aching vjay-jay and also thinking about Moera our conversation and how she dropped the call after i told her I slept with Alphalette.... my office door open and in came my twin and she's keeping a straight face...ok entlek what's going on\*\*\*

Me: hey you ok

\*\*\*I said as I closed my laptop\*\*\*

Moera: I can't believe....i can't believe you slept with him

\*\*\*I took a deep breath\*\*\*

Me: we in a relationship Moera and I love him so what's with this attitude thing you have going on

\*\*\*she chuckled putting her bag on top of my table\*\*\*

Moera: why you mmmmh

Me: askies

Moera: why do you always...

\*\*\*she took a deep breath and picked her bag and she walked towards the door\*\*\*

Me: Moera!!!

\*\*\*I called after her and she just ignored me and walked out....what the hell does she mean by "why me" \*\*\*

-----

THREE DAYS LATER

(TSHIMOLOGO)

\*\*\* The last few days have been hectic Ntsako can now walk even though he gets tired fast but his legs can work fine....It's a bit awkward now that he can do things for himself cause I was used to helping him out but at least I don't have to bath him. He's been having flash backs about his past but he said he cant put everything together to get an idea of who he is but my guides told me he'll remember who he is when the time is right.... Yah neh life....who would have thought....i mean im literally living with a man and I know nothing about him and funny enough I trust him Ntsako can now walk even though he gets tired fast but his legs can work fine....It's a bit awkward now that he can do things for himself cause I was used to helping him out but at least I don't have to bath him. He's been having flash backs about his past but he said he cant put everything together to get an idea of who he is but my guides told me he'll remember who he is when the time is right.... Yah neh life....who would have thought....i mean im literally living with a man and I know nothing about him and funny enough I trust him I know im playing with fire but I cant help it....Im sure my late brother and late mother are



angry looking at me living with a man I know nothing about I mean right now I even left him in my house the main house....What if one of these days I find my house empty with all my furniture gone along with him....yah neh I didn't know im such a risk taker but....but I trust God and my Ancestors\*\*\*

Voice: you have started with your zoning out moments

\*\*\*mxm this girl\*\*\*

Me: I wasn't zoning out Sihle...i was thinking...two different things

\*\*\*she's sitting down next to me....yho cant she see I just wanna be alone\*\*\*

Sihle: mmh so what are you thinking about

\*\*\*she loves news this one....a gossip I tell you\*\*\*

Me: nothing much...just life in general

\*\*\*she's rolling her eyes mxm b#tch....she soo wants to know about my life and that will never happen shem....i don't wanna be a topic everyone talks about when they are bored in this hospital\*\*\*

Sihle: anyway did you see the new doctor....yho girl

\*\*\*she says clapping her hands dramatically....the way I want to t roll my eyes at her right now\*\*\*

Me: mh I saw him

Sihle: I swear just looking at him I just get an orgasm....the way he's handsome

\*\*\*Lord have mercy\*\*\*

Me: bathong Sihle

Sihle: im telling you....Zulu guys are handsome bathong....

\*\*\*I just laughed\*\*\*

Sihle: mxm bona oo

\*\*\*I looked over and it was one of the nurses\*\*\*

Sihle: you should've seen her smiling like a retard to the new doctor le seshwapha nxa ( with her flat a\$\$)

\*\*\*I just laughed...yho basadi ba nale drama shem ( woman are full of drama shame)\*\*\*

NARRATED ( TSHIMO)

\*\*\*she's busy uploading patients files in the system when she sees the new doctor walk inside the Pharmacy with an old white woman....he helped her sit down and he came to the counter and smiled at her\*\*\*

Doc: ummm Tshimologo

\*\*\*he said looking at her name tag\*\*\*

Doctor: hi

Tshimo: hi Doc...what are you doing here....a nurse could've brought her here you know

\*\*\*she said smiling and he chuckled showing his perfect white teeth\*\*\*

Doctor: I wanted an excuse to stretch my legs...its been a busy day

\*\*\*they both laughed lightly as he gave her the woman's file and he cleared his throat looking around the Pharmacy\*\*\*

Doctor: how long have you been working here

Tshimo: three years

\*\*\*she said as she got busy on the computer\*\*\*

Doctor: before that where did you work

Tshimo: Chris Hani Baragwanath as a nurse

Doctor: wow and you're also a Pharmacist

\*\*\*she chuckled\*\*\*

Tshimo: yeah I also studied to be a Pharmacist

\*\*\*he smiled impressed\*\*\*

Doctor: weren't you happy being a nurse

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: lets just say nursing wasn't my first love and now im happy where I am

\*\*\*she didn't wanna disclose the real reason she decided to leave nursing...she doesn't like talking about it\*\*\*

Doctor: mmmmh interesting....so....i don't see a ring on your finger does that mean you not married

\*\*\*she smiled as she got up to go pick the woman's medication by the counters \*\*\*

Tshimo: yep im not

Doctor: why

\*\*\*he said frowning\*\*\*

Tshimo: why??? Bathong Doc....i cant marry myself can i

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Doctor: well you can... a woman in India did

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Tshimo: im not that desperate for marriage im sorry

\*\*\*they laughed again then she packed well the woman's medication in a small paper back and put inside her invoice slip\*\*\*

Tshimo: should I explain her dosages to her or you will

Doctor: don't worry I'll explain everything to her son he's coming to pick her up

Tshimo: ok then have a lovely day Doc

Doctor: same to you Tshimologo...same to you

\*\*\*he smiled at her admiringly then he chuckled and went back to the old woman and he helped her up then they walked out and sat outside by the benches as they waited for her son to arrive\*\*\*

Old woman: she's beautiful

Doctor: who

Old woman: the lady in the Pharmacy....marry her and live happily ever and after

\*\*\*the doctor chuckled then he smiled\*\*\*

Doctor: who said I want her mam....im just naturally friendly

Old woman: keep lying to yourself and they'll snatch her those who see her worth....uhh my son is here

\*\*\*the white woman's son rushed to them\*\*\*

Guy: im so sorry doctor im late...traffic is a nightmare

Doctor: don't worry about it...let me explain her medication dosages to you

\*\*\*he did and the woman hugged the Doctor and she left with her son....Doc sighed and his mind went to Tshimologo....her nice chubby face smile and her one dimple on her right cheek added to her beauty...she was short though...well not too short but she was short....he did catch a glimpse of her body when she was busy and she's well structured...his beeper rang pulling him out of his thoughts and he turned it off and chuckled shaking his head as he went back inside \*\*\*

-----

NARRATED ( TSHIMO)

\*\*\* She drives through the gate and parks the car and gets out then she proceeds to go close the gate and she takes her handbag and lunchbox bag out and closed and locks the car then she walks to the back of the house....she finds "Ntsako" sitting outside the back bedroom looking like he's in deep thoughts....she clears her throat and he quickly looks towards her\*\*\*

Tshimo: hey you ok

\*\*\*he sighs and sits properly\*\*\*

Him: its knockoff time already

Tshimo: yeah...are you ok

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Him: I can....

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Him: I can remember everything

Tshimo: heh

\*\*\*she asks shocked walking closer to him\*\*\*

Him: I remember who I am

\*\*\*she put her handbag and lunchbox bag down\*\*\*

Him: my name is Hosi Gazankulu Mabunda and everyone calls me Gaza....i was born and bred in Mpumalanga Bushbuckridge I have three siblings and one is deceased...i have a cousin ngwana rangwane Alphalette Ntsako Mabunda whom im close to in fact we behave like twins...almost the same age and we would die for each other

Tshimo: Ntsako???

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Gaza: yeah....i remembered his name instead of mine

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Tshimo: wow

\*\*\*he got up and its now she realized that his crushes the ones she lend to him that her late mother used weren't next to him\*\*\*

Tshimo: where are your crushes

\*\*\*she said looking around\*\*\*

Gaza: I don't need them anymore

Tshimo: no ways

\*\*\*She was surprised and shocked at the same time...he just chuckled and walked closer to her limping a little and she put her hands on her mouth astonished...he pulled her into a hug and he held her tight getting emotional himself\*\*\*

-----

TO BE CONTINUED.....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

15

NARRATED

\*\*\* Alphalette is between Masai's legs in her office holding her closer pounding into her ...she's moaning holding into him tight after some time they finished and he wiped her and himself and they fixed themselves and she opened the window and sprayed her perfume inside the room\*\*\*

Alpha: you ok

\*\*\*she nodded fixing her hair and makeup\*\*\*

Alpha: I love you Masai

\*\*\*he said looking at her and she stopped what she's doing and she looked at him as he looked at her lovingly....she blushed shyly and she looked down\*\*\*

Masai: I love you too

Alpha: enough to fight alongside me against anything and everyone who's against us??

\*\*\*she sighed and nodded....she has never felt like this before....she never expected to fall for a guy so fast and hard\*\*\*

Masai: yeah

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Masai: I don't know what's happening to me but....

\*\*\*she kept quiet\*\*\*

Alpha: I have already fallen for you too Masa and im not ashamed to admit it....i wanna protect you with all I have and love you like you deserve

\*\*\*she swallowed emotional\*\*\*

Masai: I also wanna love you like you deserve...at the same time im afraid

Phalette....afraid of your family

Alpha: afraid of my family??

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Masai: when they find out we are together I mean it hasn't been long since I broke up with Steve

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws....his brother irks him and the fact that she said his names brings a bitter taste in his mouth\*\*\*

Masai: they gonna judge me Phalette

Alpha: their judgments won't stop me from loving you....it won't stop me from spoiling you and giving you the best in life....their judgments won't stop me from wifing your ass

\*\*\*he said getting close to her and he pulled her closer and pecked her lips....she wrapped her arms around his waist and she rested her head on his chest and he wrapped his arms around her in a protective manner....she's scared scared of the unknown....scared that she's falling hard for him and he might hurt her like all her exes\*\*\*

Alpha: I have to go and see my mother....something happened in that house and she left

\*\*\*she raised her head\*\*\*

Alpha: she thinks I don't know

\*\*\*he sighed letting her go\*\*\*

Masai: what

Alpha: she left home to go stay at a hotel for a couple of days....i know she does that to calm herself down and I know its because of her husband and son nxa

\*\*\*he shook his head getting upset\*\*\*

Masai: then go and check up on her

\*\*\*the door handle moved and they both looked at it...she went and unlocked it she felt embarrassed when she saw that it was her boss\*\*\*

Masai: boss lady hi

\*\*\*she looked between Alphalette and Masai with a straight face and she roughly put the file she was holding on Masai's chest and Masai held on to it feeling disrespected\*\*\*

Yolanda: the numbers don't add up...fix them

\*\*\*she then smiled at Alphalette and she walked further in stretching her hand for a handshake \*\*\*

Yolanda: Yolanda Banda..i don't think we have met before

\*\*\*Alphalette just looked at her hand and at her face\*\*\*

Alphalette: you're quite rude for an ugly chick....fix your attitude since you cant do anything about your face

\*\*\*Masai's eyes popped out as he walked towards her and he pulled her chin up and he kissed her lips\*\*\*

Alpha: I'll see you later when I drop Junior off ok

\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Alpha: I love you

Masai: I love you too

\*\*\*he kissed her forehead and walked out leaving Masai and her boss....Masai cleared her throat feeling uncomfortable\*\*\*

Masai: let me work on these

Yolanda: this is your first verbal warning....this office is not a brothel were you have sex with rude men Masai....i will not tolerate nonsense in my company.....never try that stunt again or you'll find yourself without a job nxa

\*\*\*then she walked to the door then stopped and turned\*\*\*

Yolanda: I want that file by the end of the day

\*\*\*she turned and walked out and Masai sighed...she went to her desk and took her phone and made a call\*\*\*

Doris: my baby....how are you

\*\*\*Masai sighed\*\*\*

Masai: im ready to leave this job mama...ive had it with Yolanda

Doris: leave everything to me....serve her with a resignation letter and I'll handle the rest

Masai: ok thank you

Doris: how's your sister....i tried calling her and her phone just rang unanswered....i wanted to talk to her about your visitors this weekend

\*\*\*Moera has been ignoring Masai too but she wont tell their mother that\*\*\*

Masai: mama its just damages bathong...im not getting married

Doris: mmmmh if you say so....anyway tell that big head called Moera to call me

Masai: ok

Doris: I love you bye

Masai: I love you too mama shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and she sighed sitting down...she was done with this place especially with Yolanda\*\*\*

-----

## GAZANKULU MABUNDA

\*\*\*I still cant believe it....i cant believe I remember who I am....I've been wrecking my head trying to remember who I am and today after Tshimo left for work i felt this tiredness all over my body and my eyelids felt heavier and heavier and sleep took over....When I woke up the first thing I did was reach for my phone on the side drawer and there was no side drawer....i looked around and im in a totally different room...i swear my heart nearly stopped when it all came crashing down on me...the memories...everything....i had a terrible headache for like maybe an hour or so then it stopped and sleep took over again...when Tshimo disturbed me from my terrain of thoughts it hasn't been long since I woke up and came to sit outside to get some fresh air and to think...we are now sitting in the main house and we are both eating silently\*\*\*

Tshimo: are you married

\*\*\*f#ck! I cant lie to her\*\*\*

Me: unfortunately yeah

\*\*\*she clears her throat and continued to eat....why are we acting weird towards each other now\*\*\*

Me: what's up with the weirdness between us

Tshimo: there's no weirdness Ntisa...i mean Gaza im just trying to...

\*\*\*she keeps quiet\*\*\*

Tshimo: kids

Me: one....a boy.... Nyiko a very smart boy I must add



\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Tshimo: ooh yah I brought you a phone...its nothing expensive just so you'd call me if anything happens

\*\*\*she said the last part with a low tone and she got up and went towards her bedroom and came back with a phone box....this girl is an angel she cares and kindhearted....she deserves to be protected and treated like an egg\*\*\*

Tshimo: you can call your family members im sure they are dead worried about you

Me: you shouldn't have but thank you

\*\*\*she nodded and sat down again and takes her plate\*\*\*

Me: im not gonna leave you Tshimologo

Tshimo: you are married Ntsa...Gaza and you have a child that misses his dad....

## NARRATED

Gaza: its complicated mama...very complicated but as for my son...I'll see him and every member of my family that matters to me or that deserves to be seen by me

\*\*\*she frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Tshimo: you remember what happened to you akere

Gaza: and im not ready to talk about it

\*\*\*he put his plate down\*\*\*

Gaza: I hope you understand....when the time is right I'll tell you

\*\*\*she sighed and nodded\*\*\*

Tshimo: ok...you need a haircut and your beard trimmed

\*\*\*Gaza chuckled touching his over grown beard and bad looking hair\*\*\*

Gaza: what if I used to cut my beard completely off....

\*\*\*Tshimo got up with her plate\*\*\*

Tshimo: if you did then never cut it completely off...just trim it nicely cause I think you'll look more handsome

\*\*\*she walked away not realizing what she just said and Gaza smiled widely\*\*\*

Gaza: you think im handsome

\*\*\*she stopped on her tracks frowning and she turned to look at him then she remembered what she said and quickly walked towards the kitchen which made Gaza to laugh\*\*\*

Gaza: momma

Tshimo: eish Ntsako-Gaza eat your food tuu

\*\*\*he laughed lightly then he picked his plate and his smile disappeared as he stared into space with a scary look on his face\*\*\*

-----

NARRATED (THE REYNEKE HOUSEHOLD)

\*\*\*Alphalette packed his car and got out then he closed the door and walked towards the main door....he opened the door and walked in he greeted the house help respectfully and the house help told him his mother is in the backyard and he proceeded there....His mother turned to look when she heard footsteps and she smiled when she saw that it's her son\*\*\*

Ma: hey baby

\*\*\*Alphalette kissed her cheek and he sat down next to her\*\*\*

Alpha: what happened this time around ma

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Ma: ahh nothing much he greeted the house help respectfully and the house help told him his mother is in the backyard and he proceeded there....His mother turned to look when she heard footsteps and she smiled when she saw that it's her son\*\*\*

Ma: hey baby

\*\*\*Alphalette kissed her cheek and he sat down next to her\*\*\*

Alpha: what happened this time around ma

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Ma: ahh nothing much I just had a fall out with your brother and I just needed to breathe

Alpha: let me guess his father supported his ill behavior right

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Ma: just let it go

Alpha: why are you still with him ma....you're not happy is this what you want Clair to also put up with when she's also married

Ma: I said let it go Ntsako!!

\*\*\*he chuckled and he got up\*\*\*

Ma: uyaphi manje

Alpha: away from all these.....you don't care how seeing you treated like this does to me so....do you ma....my doors will always be open to you and Clair the day you decide to put yourself first and chose you

Ma: heh this boy.....who said im not happy

Alpha: nevermind then

\*\*\*he kissed her cheek and walked away and Mrs Reyneke sighed\*\*\*

-----

## AT THE BUILDING

\*\*\*Jabu and his brothers are walking around the building inspecting it with the constraction manager\*\*\*

Ray: everything looks good

\*\*\*he's impressed\*\*\*

Manager: yes just minor touchups here and there and were good to go

Heath: so when can we expect the building keys so to hand them over to the next people to take over the next face of this project

Manager: in two weeks' time sir

Heath: ok good...let us not keep you you can go back to work now

\*\*\*He nodded and they all shook his hand and he went back to work and the brothers stood there looking around\*\*\*

Jabu: I cant believe this is finally happening

Ray: believe it man....this right here is a generational legacy for our kids and grandchildren

\*\*\*they all nodded\*\*\*

Heath: so any word from Lolly

\*\*\*Jabu sighed and he shook his head\*\*\*

Heath: did you call her just to check up on her

Jabu: yah but she didn't give anything up.....i mean the leaked info about daai moegoe being investigated for human trafficking is all over the internet he was even arrested and released on bail but she's still quiet nxa

Ray: so you expected her to run to you

Jabu: that's exactly what she should've done big Ray

\*\*\*Ray shook his head defeated\*\*\*

Ray: you're moving too fast man....remember you're still married and we just buried our princess but here you are running after another woman

Jabu: eeh vag man big Ray ka bo Dr Phil ba gao (eeh big Ray stop with your Dr Phil tendencies)

Ray: it's the truth and you know it....you haven't healed Jabu you're still hurting and you cant bring Lolly into all that

Jabu: I love her

Ray: you also loved Amo infact I know deep down behind all that hurt you still love her you're still hoping this is all just a dream and you'll wake up and she's still your ideal woman and princess is still alive

\*\*\*Heath sighed and Jabu just kept quiet with his jaws clenched\*\*\*

Ray: don't bring Lolly into all that or else you'll bleed on her and ruin things further more.....heal first....let her date your best version not a version of a bleeding man that will punish her for Amo's sins

Heath: he's telling the truth man

Jabu: are you both done

Heath: fotsek!!!

Jabu: lwena fotsek nxa

\*\*\*he walked away\*\*\*

Heath: oksalayo tsebe ga e na skhurumelo (whether you like it or not an ear doesn't have a lid)....you heard him msono

\*\*\*he shouted after him and Ray sighed as they went after him\*\*\*

-----

## AT JABU'S HOUSE

\*\*\*He drove inside his yard and he got out as his electric gate closed....he closed the door and went inside the house and he's shocked by what he finds \*\*\*

Jabu: and nou....who let you in my house

\*\*\*he asked looking livid and Amo swallowed looking down \*\*\*

His.mother: I did

\*\*\*she said wiping her hands with her apron\*\*\*

His.mother: you two need to talk

Jabu: talk about what ma huh....talk about what....will talking bring back my child!!!

His mother: talking helps Jabu...you need closure...she needs to answer all your questions so you'll be able to move on....you're stuck my son....you need to move and she can help you move so you'll start your healing process

\*\*\*the intercom rang and Jabu went to check who it is fuming with anger\*\*\*

Jabu: who the fuck is it!!!

Voice: is this a bad time...its ok I'll come back some...

Jabu: Lorraine???

\*\*\*she kept quiet\*\*\*

Jabu: Lolly

\*\*\*he called her name gently and she sniffed\*\*\*

Lolly: im...im sorry to bother you....i didn't know where to go

\*\*\*he quickly opened the gate and rushed to the door and got out followed by his mother....she walked in looking horrible....she's wearing tights and a baggy sweater and sleepers....her face is pink and her eyes are swollen and puffy....he rushes to her and holds her tight as she drops her handbag and cries to his chest painfully\*\*\*

His.mother: what happened....Lorraine....ooh Nkosiya what happened mtanami

\*\*\*she said rushing to them.....by the door Amo is fuming with anger looking at them\*\*\*

-----

## AT MASAI AND MOERA'S PLACE

\*\*\*Masai walks in with shopping bags full of groceries and she put them on top of the counter and she takes off her block heels....Moera's bedroom door opens and Moera walks out wearing her gown and she stops on her tracks\*\*\*

Moera: ooh its you

Masai: hi Mo

Moera: mmmh

\*\*\*why is she acting like this " Masai thought"\*\*\*

Masai: what did I do to you Moera

Moera: ka bona sangoma e le ya gao yao gafisa neh ( I see that traditional doctor of yours is driving you crazy neh)...i wouldn't be surprised if he gives you moratiso ( a love potion)shem

\*\*\*Masai sighed\*\*\*

Masai: why are you acting like this Mo....since when are you this rude to me.....what did I do to you

Moera: you're not that special Masai please

\*\*\*she said walking towards the kitchen and took out bottled water

Voice: babe konje you said whats your address....i want to order in food I don't have the strength to go out

\*\*\*a man only wearing his boxers walked out of Moera's bedroom busy on his phone to realize that Masai was in the room....Moera cleared her throat and the guy looked up and immediately his hand went to his privates cover the tent formed by his erect d#ck

\*\*\*

Man: ummm hi

Masai: hi

\*\*\*she said with a straight face and the guy looked over at Moera then back at Masai and he turned and went back to Moera'a bedroom\*\*\*

Masai: really Moera

Moera: don't start with me wena nxa

Masai: we promised to never bring guys here for a sleep over or to have sex for Khai's sake and now you're doing this

Moera: sam bora Masai tuu assomblief ( don't bore me Masai please)

\*\*\*she said walking away going back to her bedroom and Masai shook her head and she sighed\*\*\*

Masai: Lord what's happening with my twin

-----

TO BE CONTINUED....

#2DAREIS2DO

16

( THIS CHAPTER IS DEDICATED TO ALL OFF YOU FOR YOUR PRAYERS UNDERSTANDING AND PATIENCE...THANK YOU SO MUCH.... I APPRECIATE ALL OF YOU SO MUCH...ENJOY! )

.  
. .

AT JABU'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Jabu picked her up and she wrapped her arms around his neck and laid her head on his shoulder and Jabu walked towards the door while his mother picked her bag on the floor\*\*\*

Jabu: chifta (move)

Amo: do you see what you are doing as the right thing Jabu....how dare you do this to me Jabu....how can you embarrass me like that

Jabu: kao bona o betha ke nyanyaza wena....chifta before o nnyela ( i can see you're on drugs....move before I fuck you up)

\*\*\*she looked at him with tears in her eyes and that didn't even move him one bit she moved then Jabu walked in with Lorraine and he went upstairs with her to the master bedroom and he put her on the bed and she held on to him as she sniffed\*\*\*

Jabu: ova lenna (talk to me)

\*\*\*she kept quiet while she's still sniffing \*\*\*

Lolly: he was arrested for human trafficking

\*\*\*Jabu kept quiet\*\*\*

Lolly: I was sleeping with a human trafficker Jabu....the same kind of people that kidnapped and killed my younger sister

Jabu: you didn't know Lolly

Lolly: wait....you knew

\*\*\*Jabu didn't say anything he just sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: Jabu

Jabu: would you have believed me when I told you while you were still in the honeymoon face....you wouldn't have believed me Lolly instead you would have thought im trying to use my tricks to break you up

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Jabu: remember you just forgave me....you wouldn't have believed me I know

\*\*\*She just held on to him tight and he kissed her forehead holding her tight too....right then the door opened and in walked Jabu's mom with a glass filled with water mixed withh sugar followed by Amo and when Amo saw them cuddling like that her anger shot up\*\*\*

Mom: sit up and drink my girl

\*\*\*she slowly got off Jabu's hold and sat up and her eyes met with Amo's and she could see she was livid she sighed and took the glass with her shaky hands from Jabu's mom and she drank slowly\*\*\*

Amo: do you all see this whole thing going on as right mmh....ma I know I messed up but this embarrassment is it necessary

\*\*\*she said with a shaky voice and tears in her eyes\*\*\*

Mom: Jabu go have that talk with your wife....I'll stay here with Lorraine

Jabu: but ma

Jabu: hamba(go) Jabu man!

Jabu: ka zokala neh ( I'll be back ok)



\*\*\* Lolly nodded and drank her mixture and he sighed and got off the bed and walked out of the door followed by Amo....they went down stairs and Jabu paced around his lounge calming himself down while Amo just sat there giving out this innocent girl façade\*\*\*

Amo: im sorry Jabu...i swear i...

Jabu: stop right there

\*\*\*she kept quiet\*\*\*

Jabu: you cheating wasn't a mistake you trying to change me wasn't a mistake you drugging me and forcing yourself on me which killed my daughter wasn't a mistake so don't even lie Amogelang because you'll piss me off more than I already am

\*\*\*she kept quiet looking down as she regretted each and every bad decision she made....Jabu sat down on another couch and he looked at her\*\*\*

Jabu: why Amogelang....why

\*\*\*he asked with a breaking voice\*\*\*

Jabu: why did you break me like this heh....why break our family like this...wa no nkhawata ( you just hurt me) as if I mean nothing to you

Amo: im sorry

\*\*\*she said sobbing\*\*\*

Jabu: I gave you everything....I loved you like you were the only woman on earth

Amo: Jabu im sorry

Jabu: its over joh...im done....i will never forgive you for what you did...i don't even know why you're still alive.... nkebe ke go bodisile ( I should've killed you)...this world is just too small for the both of us to share

Amo: its not over....im gonna fight for our marriage Jabu....im not giving up....I'll fight until you see how sorry I am

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled\*\*\*

Jabu: keep fighting ntomboo while I move on

Amo: with her right

\*\*\*she asked with a breaking voice and Jabu just kept quiet\*\*\*

Amo: I'd rather die than watch that whore take away my family

\*\*\*Jabu looked at her surprised that she swore....he couldn't believe that this was his Amo\*\*\*

Jabu: ok I think you've over stayed your visit....vaya( go)

\*\*\*he said getting up and so did Amo\*\*\*

Amo: Jabu please don't do this....we can fight this baby im sorry I messed up

Jabu: vaya Amogelang

Amo: I didn't know he's a cultist....i didn't know I swear

Jabu: ke rile vaya ( I said go)

Amo: Noooo! Im not going anywhere leaving you with her....can't you see what she's trying to do Jabu heh...i will not lose you to her ...NEVER!

Jabu: get the fuck out of my house Amogelang before I lose it

Amo: no

Jabu: ontlwaela nywana byanong....ontlwaela marete a tonki wena....you're standing there ka di braids tsao setlhefala e ka re megwapa ya tonki e tlhafunne ke mpya ya sgafi le bo yellowbone e kare guava ya o bola ( you're standing there with your worn out braids that look like dried meat of a donkey that was chewed by a raving mad dog with your light skin that look like a rotten guava and...) o tlo mpotsa marete ao shoshobana

Mom: HAI JABULANI!!!

\*\*\*She said walking down the stairs\*\*\*

Jabu: GET THE F\*CK OUT OF MY HOUSE AMOGELANG BEFORE MMAO A UTLWA KA STITCH SE A SE KEREILE ( your mother's stitch she got) WHEN SHE PUSHED THIS EMPTY HEAD OF YOURS SE KGAOGA ( tear)....O SKA NTEKA TUMELO AMOGELANG KE TLAO BONTSA STORY...NETFLIX MO SOSHANGUVE WANKUTLWA! ( don't test me Amogelang I'll show you a story...Netflix here at Soshanguve do you hear me!)

Mom: Amogelang leave man

Amo: im not going mama...im gonna fix my marriage

Jabu: ok ao nyako vaya ( ok you don't want to go)...ok...wait for me

\*\*\*he walked towards his study \*\*\*

Mom: Amogelang tsamaya ( go) you can see he's angry

Amo: she's gonna take him mama I cant

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Mom: you lost him the moment you let the devil use you Amo

Amo: I love him mama....i love him I swear

\*\*\*by this time her face is pink as she cries....they heard footsteps and when they looked he was holding a gun putting in a silencer \*\*\*

Mom: Jabu!!

\*\*\*she said panicking with her hands on top of her head\*\*\*

Jabu: o bona popeye when you look at me akere....ke nyako bontsha mmao kajeno ( you see a fool when you see right....today I wanna show you your mother)

\*\*\*Amogelang screamed and she ran to the door opened it and ran outside\*\*\*

Mom: Jabulani put that gun away right this moment!!

Jabu: you let her inside my house ma....the same woman that cheated forced herself on me and killed my daughter you let her inside my house

Mom: I wanted you to get closure and heal my son

Jabu: am I healing now....did I get closure after speaking to her....Nooooo! no I didn't but she just made things worse!!

\*\*\*his mother cried\*\*\*

Jabu: stay out of my business ma please...let me deal with things the way I see fit...im no longer a child!!

\*\*\*then he went back to his study and put the gun where it was and he sat on his chair...he bowed his head and sobbed painfully\*\*\*

-----

## AT ALPHALETTE'S HOUSE

\*\*\*He's busy putting traditional herbs inside different bottles outside his traditional hut whistling...today was a busy day for him with patients lining up looking for help even the following day he will be busy cause he's taking some of them to the river to cleanse them... his phone rang disturbing him ....he wiped his hands and picked the call\*\*\*

Alpha: hello

\*\*\*the person just kept quiet and he frowned\*\*\*

Alpha: I can hear you breathing now talk or im dropping this call

\*\*\*He said firmly\*\*\*

Voice: Ntsako

\*\*\*Alphalette froze\*\*\*

Voice: Ntsako he mina Gaza ( Ntsako its me Gaza)

\*\*\*Alphalette swallowed hard as tears filled his eyes\*\*\*

Alpha: he mani biti rha mehe rha swikwembo ( what is my ancestral name)

Gaza: Thambo le nyoka ya se Manzini...you were initiated under water.... we have a dark secret we vowed to take to the grave.... me you and baba about Aunty and Mpho

\*\*\*Alphalette closed his eyes and the tears rolled down his cheeks and he quickly wiped them off\*\*\*

Alpha: where are you....im on my way

Gaza: I'll pin you my location on WhatsApp

\*\*\* Alphalette dropped the call and he quickly put everything inside his ancestral hut and he locked it and quickly went to take a shower and he got dressed and took his gun you and baba about Aunty and Mpho

\*\*\*Alphalette closed his eyes and the tears rolled down his cheeks and he quickly wiped them off\*\*\*

Alpha: where are you....im on my way

Gaza: I'll pin you my location on WhatsApp

\*\*\* Alphalette dropped the call and he quickly put everything inside his ancestral hut and he locked it and quickly went to take a shower and he got dressed and took his gun wallet phone and car keys and he said goodbye to his son Tshepo and left\*\*\*

---

## TSHIMO'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Alpha parked outside the gate and as he was about to call Gaza the door to the main house opened and out came Gaza...Alphalette bend and held his knees looking down as he felt dizzy a bit... different emotions were running through his mind....he kept saying "f\*ck...f\*ck" over and over again trying to calm down....The gate opened and he slowly stood up right and tears ran down his cheeks.....He quickly rushed to him and they hugged as he sobbed painfully with Gaza's tears running down his cheeks too\*\*\*

Gaza: its ok im still alive...i fought and came back

\*\*\*they held on for some time until they broke the hug and wiped their tears off....then they looked at each other and laughed\*\*\*

Alpha: im more muscled than you now

Gaza: for now...im going back to the gym

\*\*\*they laughed and Alpha locked his car and they went inside....they sat down on the couch and Alpha sighed rubbing his eyes\*\*\*

Alpha: I searched everywhere for you

\*\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: you wouldn't have found me

\*\*\*Alphalette looked at him\*\*\*

Gaza: Aunty her son Mdu and my mother in law sold me to a witchdoctor...i don't know if Marina knew or not but those three sold me or stroke a deal with the witchdoctor

\*\*\*Alphalette quickly got up and he paced up and down\*\*\*

Alpha: I knew aunty was involved somehow including his useless son but Marina's mother

Gaza: she hates me that old witch.... remember she once told me to my face that im not good enough for her daughter

\*\*\*Alphalette just shook his head and he sat down\*\*\*

Alpha: how did you escape?

\*\*\*Gaza sighed and he rubbed his hands together as all the memories occupied his mind\*\*\*

Gaza: one day I woke up only to find chains that were used to keep me captive loose for some reason...then I heard a voice telling me to run....i got the chains off and searched for my clothes since I was naked and I wore them and ran out of that mud house....i was weak but I pushed myself until I looked back and I couldn't see the mud house anymore....i reached the main road and since I was still disorientated I crossed the road without looking both ways and that's when I got knocked out by a car

Alphalette: f\*ck!!

\*\*\*he said looking down and Gaza clenched his jaws then he continued\*\*\*

Gaza: I woke up not far from the main road inside a small hole that was probably made by rain without any memory of who I am....

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Gaza: It's funny how I now remember everything that happened when I lost my memory.....like how is that possible Ntsako

Alpha: it baffles me too

Gaza: anyway I was in pain bleeding....i went inside the forest and I found a stream there and I cleaned myself.... I don't remember what happened next then I remember taking a nap inside a truck that was parked at a filling station and I woke up in hospital I think in Witbank then I heard a voice telling me to run after I think two weeks there and to tell you the truth I don't even remember how I got out of that hospital

\*\*\*he brushed his head\*\*\*

Gaza: the next things I found myself here in Hammanskraal outside this gate....i do remember her giving me food and I don't remember where I went or where I stayed here....then I remember falling sick and I found myself here again and I woke up in her backroom....she took care of me fed me...prayed for me

\*\*\*he smiled then took a deep breath\*\*\*

Gaza: she's God send man....she could've called the cops or an ambulance but no....she's gifted so she said she saw ma and ma begged her to help me and she did....im here today because of her...i owe her my life man

Alpha: what she did could've put her in great danger but she still helped you....i respect her

\*\*\*Gaza smiled\*\*\*

Gaza: yeah she's one of a kind and I'll live the rest of my days on earth taking care of her....she could've refused to help me cause I was a stranger man....smelling with a memory loss but she helped me

Alpha: her not calling the cops or sending you to hospital saved your life cause the witch doctor was looking for you that's why ma I said you should run when you were in hospital that time

\*\*\*Gaza nodded and he sighed and sat back\*\*\*

Gaza: how's everyone

Alpha: ok considering....baba is still searching for you and Nyiko asks about you every time I call him

\*\*\*Gaza closed his eyes clenching his jaws\*\*\*

Gaza: what about Marina

\*\*\*Alphaette kept quiet a bit then he sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: she's seeing Mdu and she gave birth to a baby girl

\*\*\*a tear ran down his cheeks \*\*\*

Alpha: Nyiko stays with baba she didn't even fight him when he took him...im sorry man

\*\*\*Gaza wiped his tears\*\*\*

Gaza: why is she doing this to me man

Alpha: her mother controls her man....that woman is a witch whatever she says to her she agrees just like that

Gaza: did she tell her to sleep with Mdu and get pregnant too....i mean when I found out about her and Mdu she apologized and said it was a mistake and it didn't mean anything meaning she knew she knowingly fucked up big time

Alpha: I know ok...i know...im just glad you didn't kill them painting your hands with their useless and evil blood

\*\*\*Gaza swallowed when he thought of that day he found them together ....he was so angry all he saw was red....he was ready to go to jail for murder but Alphalette stopped him....his voice rang in his head as he warned him not to kill them.... Gaza sighed and he got up and went to get them drinks and snacks then he sat down\*\*\*

Alpha: are you ready to face everyone

Gaza: does she visit Nyiko

Alpha: yeah she does

\*\*\*he nodded\*\*\*

Gaza: the baby is his???

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: it looks like it because he takes care of her and the baby

\*\*\*he bit his lower lip\*\*\*

Gaza: I still love her and I hate her so much at the same time

\*\*\*then he looked at Alphalette\*\*\*

Gaza: how possible is that

Alpha: very possible

\*\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: her name is Tshimologo she's short but not too short and she's beautiful

\*\*\*they chuckled\*\*\*

Gaza: she's a feisty one but kindhearted and gifted

Alpha: gifted as in backside gifted or gifted-gifted

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Gaza: both

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Gaza: but im not gonna cross that line....she's dear to me so bleeding on her is not an option

\*\*\*Alphalette nodded agreeing with him\*\*\*

Alpha: im glad you're alive man.... I prayed that we find you alive....we searched everywhere I mean even where you had the accident we searched everywhere

\*\*\*Gaza just sighed with his eyes closed...he didn't wanna talk about what he went through but better Ntsako than a stranger who'd question his insanity when he speaks about witchcraft\*\*\*

Gaza: please make me something to help me forget

\*\*\*He said with a broken voice\*\*\*

Gaza: I wanna forget

Alphalette: you need to face the trauma first Gee....face it head on and start your healing process then I'll give you something...you need to be alright for baba and more especially Nyiko

\*\*\*Gaza rubbed his tears off and Alphalette went to sit next to him and he squeezed his shoulder as tears ran down his cheeks....He knew he didn't have to be strong in front of Alphalette cause they've seen each other at their worst\*\*\*

Alphalette: we gonna go through this together man....we gonna fight this trauma and conquer it like we always do

\*\*\*Gaza's phone received a message it was from Tshimo\*\*\*

Tshimo: 'hey...im gonna be home a bit late today...im going out with my colleagues for some drinks...i know tomorrow im going work so don't worry I won't drink too much....don't wait up'

\*\*\*he clicked his tongue getting agitated \*\*\*

Alpha: what's wrong

Gaza: can you believe this girl....she's going out on a Wednesday....Wednesday Ntsako and tomorrow she's going to work nxa

\*\*\*Alpha just looked at him\*\*\*

Gaza: u ri eka mina ( she's saying to me) don't wait up....don't wait up ya matjemba....msono wa don't wait up

\*\*\*he said getting up\*\*\*

Alpha: o ya kwini ( where are you going)

Gaza: colleagues ta matjemba nxa ( shitty colleagues nxa)



\*\*\*he went to the kitchen and poured himself some water and finished the glass at one go then he held the sink with both hands looking down \*\*\*

Gaza: she doesn't think nxa....does she know how dangerous it is out there....women are kidnapped daily...some are killed and some are trafficked and she's going out with stupid colleagues to drink and coming home late....a ndzi bi wansati neh mara lowu wa ko koma engako ndlela yako ya a toilet u lava mpama yako hisa ahenhla ka nhloko leswaku byongo bya yena byi tlhelela eka reset mode....engako o na virus a byongweni bya yena nxa ( I don't hit a woman neh but that short one that's short like a path that leads to the toilet needs a hot slap on top of her head so that her brain can go to reset mode... I think she has a virus in her brain nxa)

\*\*\*Alphalette tried to hold his laugh but he couldn't so he laughed pissing Gaza off the more\*\*\*

Gaza: fotsek o hleka yini ( piss off what are you laughing at)

Alpha: why are mad

Gaza: makende a wena Ntsako

\*\*\*Ntsako laughed some more\*\*\*

Gaza: nxa....if I call her and raise my concerns she'll think im controlling her and if I don't and something bad happens to her I'll never forgive myself

\*\*\*he said to himself pacing up and down brushing his head and Alphalette stopped laughing and he looked at him with a frown\*\*\*

Alpha: Gaza

\*\*\*he didn't answer him\*\*\*

Alpha: Gazankulu???

\*\*\*he looked at Alpha and his eyes are now red as if he was crying but he wasn't\*\*\*

Alpha: its ok...calm down....call her and ask her to pin you her location when she gets to where she's going with her colleagues and well take it from there...I'll give the location to Javas to send his boys to keep her safe

\*\*\*He could now see he was calming down\*\*\*

Gaza: ok...eish...

\*\*\*he rubbed his eyes\*\*\*

Gaza: I don't want anything bad to happen to her....she means a lot to me Ntsako

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone and Alphalette could see he means every word\*\*\*

Alpha: I see that...i guess I'll also react like that if it was Masai

\*\*\*Gaza looked at him with a raised eyebrow and Alpha chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: I have a son and a baby mama

Gaza: what...no I haven't gone that long man

Alpha: I know

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*

Alpha: you remember two something years back you were out of the country and I went to Cape Town with Mpande

Gaza: yeah I remember.... Mpande had a three some with sisters and you smashed some innocent looking girl you couldn't take your eyes off

\*\*\*Alpha sighed....

Alpha: she fell pregnant

Gaza: the f....what

Alpha: I started dreaming about her and a baby crying then one day was grocery shopping and I heard a baby crying calling for his dad....i turned and I almost died of shock bhuti

Gaza: wow

Alpha: yeah man...his name is Alphalette Khai but I call him AJ...Alphalette Junior

Gaza: ofcourse you will

\*\*\*they chuckled \*\*\*

Gaza: damn you are a father bro

Alpha: yeah and I love every minute of it and I love her too...this weekend im going to pay damages and maybe lobola but im conflicted with asking her to marry me

Gaza: you already dating her

Alpha: she's the one man but...eish

Gaza: what

Alpha: there's the generational curse I need to lift and she's gonna leave I know it that's why im conflicted with asking her to marry me

\*\*\*Gaza shook his head\*\*\*

Gaza: wanya....wapenga Ntsako (you are crazy Ntsako)

Gaza: there's no generational curse you're obligated to lift....were you there when that old man raped that man's daughter....did you send him or force the girl to kill herself....he may be our ancestor but we were not there...

Alpha: you don't get it...it might to go our sons man

Gaza: I get it and let them try it with our sons I dare them nxa....

\*\*\*he said angry he didn't understand why they chose Alpha cause there are many males in their family and extended family\*\*\*

Gaza: I know someone from our lineage needs to marry a woman from that man's lineage to end the curse...well f\*ck them and their curses nxa

Alpha: Gaza

Gaza: no...let them deal with that rapist in the afterlife and leave you the f\*ck alone

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: you're not marrying no witchdoctors daughter no matter how beautiful and innocent looking she may be....you gonna marry for love not obligation...i know they chose you cause they know I wasn't gonna do it....a ni ta baphahla hi pelepele na mati aku hisa banya nxa ( I was gonna communicate with them using chillies and hot water )

\*\*\*Alpha laughed shaking his head\*\*\*

Alpha: they gonna deal with you for saying that

Gaza: I don't care....i touched death and it rejected me... and plus they know they are wrong they are just too embarrassed to acknowledge that they messed up and that they could've dealt with that a long time ago

Alpha: well I dreamt of my father saying I should trust them....they have a plan

Gaza: that plan should not include you marry any girl from that family period...or pelepele and hot water it is

\*\*\*Alphalette laughed as Gaza took his phone and called Tshimo\*\*\*

Tshimo: hey Gee are you ok

\*\*\*he raised a brow\*\*\*

Gaza: Gee

Tshimo: its your new nickname and you don't have a choice but to accept it....are you ok

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head while Alpha was reading him and finally he saw what he was suspecting and he sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: im not ok...i got your massage...im not trying to control you or stop you from having fun but...just be careful mama....im not at ease with your outing....maybe its because of what I went through...

\*\*\*he sighed and rubbed his eyes\*\*\*

Gaza: just pin me your location when you get there so I'll know where to look if...something bad happens to you

Tshimo: nothing bad will happen to me...my guides would've warned me so relax

Gaza: sometimes ancestors use someone else to warn you...always remember that....dont forget to pin me your current location when you get there

\*\*\*then he ended the call and sighed rubbing his eyes\*\*\*

Alpha: what's wrong with your eyes...you keep rubbing them

Gaza: they become blurry time and again

Alpha: go change we need to go

\*\*\*Gaza looked at him\*\*\*

Gaza: im not leaving today Ntsako...i'll be fine

Alpha: it could be something serious Gaza

Gaza: I said no...maybe tomorrow but definitely not today

\*\*\*he said firmly and Alpha just shook his head looking at him\*\*\*

-----

HOURS LATER

HAMMANSKRAAL

\*\*\*Gaza is sitting in the lounge looking at his phone....Alphalette just left and he's still waiting for Tshimo to send him her location and she hasn't...she long knocked off at work and he's worried....

Gaza: "maybe she forgot"

\*\*\*he thought\*\*\*

Gaza: maybe I should call her

\*\*\*he said to himself\*\*\*

Gaza: nah I don't wanna look creepy and controlling...she will send the location

\*\*\*he said to himself.... he looked at his phone and picked it up then he looked at the time and he put it down and sat back on the couch....then he leaned forward and picked his phone and looked at the time again and put it back again and he rubbed his eyes trying to calm himself down....then he heard the gate opening and he quickly picked his

phone and went to the door and opened it and she was driving in...he breathed out feeling relieved....the gate closed and she got out with grocery shopping bags and her handbag...Gaza went to help her with the bags without them saying anything to each other and they went inside...\*\*\*\*

-----

MASAI ( NARRATED)

\*\*\*She's on the phone with Hills (Shalate)\*\*\*

Masai: im telling you sis....Moera just switched up on me

Hills: what happened...did you two fight

Masai: not that I remember....the last time we were cool it was when I asked her to drop off Khai at his father's house and things changed from there....mxm oooh....

\*\*\*she remembered something\*\*\*

Hills: what

Masai: she embarrassed Alphalette's brother and Phalette put her in her place

Hills: so why are you catching stray bullets now....why is she mad at you

Masai: I don't know sis....maybe because he's my man

Hills: wa hlanya Moera ( Moera is crazy)....dont worry I'll talk to her plus im coming that side tomorrow

Masai: you serious

\*\*\*she said sounding excited and Hills laughed\*\*\*

Hills: yep...i cant put my life on hold because of a man....a man that is enjoying his life with his baby mama

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Hills: im gonna serve him with divorce papers...im done Masa

Masai: you know I support whatever decision you make so if you want to divorce then divorce it is....i know you thought about it thoroughly so do what you gotta do

\*\*\*Hills sighed\*\*\*

Hills: yeah cause polygamy...yho aah ehh I just cant....i cant share a man....i just cant...i don't have it in me Masa

Masai: same here sis...i don't want stress...you know my Lupus might flare up and I end up losing my life...my son is still young....im still young so after Stevens I told myself that im always gonna remove myself from stressful situations....that's why im moving out of Moera's apartment...

Hills: wait a minute...you what

Masai: I cant live with her anymore Hills....she now brings men in the apartment and when I confronted her she was rude to me....she has this rude attitude towards me that I don't understand and I just cant stand it....i need to protect my peace at all cost

\*\*\*Hills sighed\*\*\*

Hills: I'll talk to her I promise....i'll find out what the actual problem is

Masai: thank you

Hills; no need to thank me...we are sisters

\*\*\*well they spoke some more then they ended the call....her phone received a message and it was Alphalette...she smiled shyly as she opened it and read it \*\*\*

Alpha: 'im about to leave my place to come pick you and AJ up....i need you!'

\*\*\*it read....she frowned because something was off with it\*\*\*

Masai: ' are you ok...what's wrong'

Alpha: 'my brother the one that disappeared is alive and he's not ok'

\*\*\*she quickly called him and he answered\*\*\*

Alpha: hey

Masai: ooh my gosh I cant believe it....you must be relieved baby

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: happy and relieved yeah but....he went through some terrifying stuff and I wonder if he'll ever heal

Masai: ohh God....what can I do babe

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: I need you

Masai: let me pack...drive safely ok

Alpha: ok... I love you

Masai: I love you too

\*\*\*he dropped the call and she stood up to go pack and the door opened....in came Moera\*\*\*

Moera: hi

Masai: hi

\*\*\*she walked to her room and Moera cleared her throat \*\*\*

Moera: a friend of mine who's a property agent said you're looking for an apartment to buy

\*\*\*Masai stopped walking and she closed her eyes for a sec then she opened them and turned to look at her\*\*\*

Masai: yeah I think its time I lived alone with my son

\*\*\*Moera laughed moving closer to her \*\*\*

Moera: ka e tlhompha pipi ya lechangane yho ( I respect a Shangaan's d\*ck yho)

Masai: can you just stop Moera!

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Masai: what's wrong with you....what did i do to you mara heh...and yes ka e rata pipi ya lechangane ne o reng ( and yes I do love a Shangaan's d\*ck so)

\*\*\* Moera laughed clapping her hands\*\*\*

Moera: you know what whatever....he's gonna leave you like they always do....who would want to commit to someone as weak as you....you might die any minute....remember you live on borrowed time lala

\*\*\*Masai slapped her hard on her cheek that she saw stars for a few second\*\*\*

Masai: f\*ck you Moera...you can go to hell for all I care nxa

\*\*\*as she attempted to walk away with tears in her eyes Moera grabbed her by her gown turning her around and she punched Masai on her face knocking her out instantly and she hit the floor hard \*\*\*

Moera: you slapped me Masai....you have the guts to slap me now...me Moera!!!

\*\*\*she shouted at an unconscious Masai with blood coming out of her nose and she froze with her heart beating fast as she saw that she wasn't moving \*\*\*

Moera: ooh my God what have I done....

.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

## AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\* Alphalette is already back at the hospital Mpande left with his son AJ the previous night and he took him to his mother's house...He already told her about Masai being admitted and she didn't have a problem with taking care of her grandson. He slept in his car in the parking lot right after he talked to the doctor his heart is heavy and he's trying by all means to stay strong for Masai and his son....His phone rings and its Gaza calling\*\*\*

Alpha: Gee

Gaza: hey how is she

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: not too bad but she hasn't woken up since they put her in an induced coma

Gaza: what did the doctor say

\*\*\*Alpha sighed again\*\*\*

Alpha: that she probably passed out immediately after the punch and when she hit the ground there was no support from her body to minimize the landing so she hit the ground hard more especially with her head

\*\*\*he rubbed his head clenching his jaws\*\*\*

Alpha: the doctor said they took her for a CT scan and she has some swelling on her brain so they are monitoring it and giving her medication to stop it.... something like that

Gaza: eish

Alpha: she has a disease called Lupus so her body is weak and she also has a weak immune system and her twin knows that but she still hit her that hard...and what kind of fist did she hit Masai with that did this to her

Gaza: mmmmh maybe she's taking defence classes or...

\*\*\*he kept quiet as if he's thinking of something\*\*\*

Gaza: or someone trained her or something

Alpha: yeah maybe but to do that to her twin....i mean she's not even remorseful...she kept saying I shouldn't have loved Masai as if Masa doesn't deserve to be loved

Gaza: wanya nxa



Alpha: I should've done background checks on the Rapula family when I found out I have a child with Masa and maybe something about Moera the twin would have popped out...There's something off about her man

Gaza: off how

\*\*\*he asked curiously \*\*\*

Alpha: I always thought she's overprotective over Masai and again she used to route for us wa bona then all of a sudden she changed and It's not about her having a crush on me this is something deep im telling you....i can't figure out what but something is off...ku nuhwa matjimba la( something is off here ) and im gonna find out what's going on cause she can't change out of the blue unless she has been pretending all along

Gaza: or maybe she's jealous of her twin and feels like she deserves Masai's happiness....there are people like that out there I mean look at Mdu what he did to me....it might not be the same cause Masai and Moera are twins while Mdu and I are cousins.... but in our culture he's my brother cause his mother and our fathers are siblings so we grew up being close the three of us so yah imagine him sleeping with my wife and getting her pregnant then boast about it to me and he's not even remorseful about his betrayal cause I know he's still f\*cking her as we speak

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: family hi matjimba sometimes ( family is shit sometimes)

Gaza: you can say that again....look I need a favour

Alpha: im listening

Gaza: can I have Javas's numbers I need him to help me with something

Alpha: ummm ok....i hope its not about dealing with Mdu and his crew man....we talked about this Gee....you need to heal first..... Revenge is sweeter when best served cold

Gaza: im not gonna strike now so relax I just need info about someone and for his brother Heath to come and install security camera's here since im leaving for a while I want Tshimo to be safe

\*\*\*Alpha sighed... he was relieved\*\*\*

Alpha: ok I get you now....i'll send them to you just now but I need to tell him about your reappearance first

Gaza: yeah you know how crazy he is

Alpha: well he just lost his daughter some time back and he's still struggling with accepting his loss so don't be insensitive

Gaza: what....what happened

Alpha: his wife f\*cked a cultist who transferred his spiritual snake to her so she will transfer it to Jabu and Jabu would transfer it to their daughter for sacrificial purposes....The b\*stard was killing two birds with one stone sacrificing Jabu's daughter and also having his wife

\*\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: what is this world turning into mara

Alpha: so he's finding it hard to move on

Gaza: I would too man...anyway don't forget the numbers

Alpha: sure we will talk later...shap

Gaza: Sharp

\*\*\*he dropped the call and he sighed closing his eyes then he opened them again and started the car....he needed to shower and check on his son then he'll comeback to be by Masai's side \*\*\*

---

## JABU'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Lolly walked in the kitchen and found Jabu staring outside the kitchen window with a cup in his right hand and the left hand inside his left pocket.....She cleared her throat and he turned and looked at her\*\*\*

Jabu: hey you are awake

Lolly: yeah what's for breakfast

\*\*\*she said looking around and Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: cereal.... Ma left early in the morning

Lolly: umm why

\*\*\*she said frowning\*\*\*

Jabu: we had a fall out yesterday about....Amo....i didn't like what she did....i know she meant well but she just...

\*\*\*he sighed rubbing his face\*\*\*

Jabu: I wasn't ready to face her....her being here messed me up some more...i wasn't ready to face her

\*\*\*Lolly sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: im sorry but like you said...she meant well....she thought she was helping her son to find closure cause she cant bare to see him suffer while she just sits and do nothing

\*\*\*Jabu sighed putting his cup of coffee on top of the counter and he sighed facing up with his eyes closed....he then looked at Lolly who looked down because she couldn't maintain eye contact\*\*\*

Jabu: wena how are you feeling today

\*\*\*she just shrugged her shoulders\*\*\*

Lolly: I honestly don't know

Jabu: uzoba right don't worry

\*\*\*she went to switch on the kettle and took out a clean mug and poured coffee inside and powder milk and she went to sit on one of the barstools in the kitchen\*\*\*

Lolly: I was thinking

Jabu: mmh

Lolly: I want to move from KZN to this side.....permanently

\*\*\*Jabu looked at her surprised\*\*\*

Jabu: what

Lolly: yeah I mean my family or what is left of my family is this side and I just don't feel safe anymore there....he was released on bail so what if he traffics me too just because I dumped him

Jabu: let him try... e ka nna motho wa mathomo wa go bona noga ya mosadi e ya periotong....yeses a ka nnyela bosepa ka molomo struu ( he'll be the first person ever to see a female snake on its period...yeses he'll poop using his mouth for real)

\*\*\*Lolly laughed\*\*\*

Lolly: bathong Jabu

\*\*\*she laughed some more\*\*\*

Jabu: kao chaela ( im telling you)....so don't worry man but if you feel like the move is what you need then go right ahead....put your things in order and I'll support you all the way

Lolly: thank you....but I feel sorry for my employees who can't move with me

\*\*\*she said going to pour hot water to her cup and added fresh milk from the fridge and she went to sit down again and she stirred her coffee\*\*\*

Jabu: then open a branch this side...those who cant move will remain that side and keep the business going...you can even venture into other businesses this side while your Interior Design business is running that side....you already have someone running it when you're not around so think about it thoroughly

\*\*\*she smiled looking at him....she never get used to how smart he is and how business orientated he is\*\*\*

Jabu: what

Lolly: mh mh

\*\*\*she said shaking her head smiling a bit then she took a sip from her coffee \*\*\*

Jabu: im thinking you should also focus on Government interior design Corporate interior design Healthcare so on and so forth and not just Residential and Hospitality ....there's money in that industry you just have to know people who knows other people and you're set

Lolly: I know it's just hard to get a tender especially in Government or Corporate....it's either you sleep with someone to get it or you pay... I remember I once went to pitch my presentation to some company they wanted to revamp their company....and you can guess what that fool wanted me to do with him to get the job....i refused and I didn't get it...

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: so I focused more on smaller companies Residential and Hospitality....there are creeps out there and with what I've been through im just scared that it might happen again and I know if it does I will never come out of that hole

\*\*\*she shrug her shoulders and continued to drink her coffee and Jabu just sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: re tlo ba right don't worry (we will be fine don't worry)

Lolly: call your mom Jabu and fix things and call Sbu too I miss him

Jabu: wena call him hau

Lolly: mxm wa bora

Jabu: go bora letsulu lele la gao la pipi enyane ( that Zulu of yours with a small penis is the one that is boring)

\*\*\*he said chuckling\*\*\*

Lolly: you didn't just say that Jabu

\*\*\*she said looking at him and he just smirked and put his cup in the sink\*\*\*

Jabu: o nagana gore mo ke buka ya Hlomu the wife....a gona bo Mghele le bo Chawe mo

Sponsored

AD

mo ke rena didomane diskhokho tsa kasi...mapara a go ja ko lesenkeng while out there o kopana le bo Bheki le bo Kenny makhenzo....bao ba tla bontsha mrvithi girl...batlao bontsha kuku ya tshoswane bantse ba re ntokazi o chamega (you think this is Hlomu the wife book...there's no Mghele and Chawe here here its us well known hard-core guys of the hood.... while out there you meet Bhekis' and Kenny makhenzos'.... those will show you hell on earth girl ....they'll show you an ant's p\*ssy as you blush cause they called you my lady)

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Jabu: le rata dilo bo Lorraine man....re le teng rena bo Mjava la itshotla blaen so...ai mara re tla reng askere Batswana ba rata gore "pelo e ja serati" then a e le jeng ge...e le nyofe e le nyofe until le bulega matlho le bone gore this is life not some fictional book (you like things Lorraine man.... why do you allow yourselves to suffer like this...ai what can we say Batswana likes to say a "loving heart knows no bounds" then let the heart deal with you all... it should chow you all until you open your eyes and realise that this is real life not some fictional book)

\*\*\*he shook his head and walked away dialling his mother leaving Lolly with her mouth hung open\*\*\*

---

## AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\*Doris Vee and Hills walked to where Alphalette and Mpande are and immediately when Doris saw how drained Alphalette looked tears started running down her cheeks... The guys stood up as they approached greeting are exchanged and everyone sits down\*\*\*

Doris: how's my baby

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: she'll be fine with time

\*\*\*Mpande looked at Hills who felt uncomfortable with his presence....She had lost a bit of weight but she was still a thick mama with glowing skin.....when you look at her you would think she's Bubu Dlamini's twin \*\*\*

Doris: what did the doctor say and where is Moera

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: well the doctor said she passed out when the blow hit her so by the time she landed on the floor she hit it hard with her head

\*\*\*Hills and Doris cried while Vee comforted Doris as tears ran down her cheeks\*\*\*

Alpha: they took her for a CT scan and they found out that she has some swelling on her brain so they put her in an induced coma so the swelling in her brain subsides with the help of medication.... again her Lupus disease is worrisome to her doctor cause if she gets an infection...

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Alpha: but she'll be ok....She needs our prayers so come out of this stronger...she's in a private high care room right now...i didn't want her sharing her space with anyone to avoid infections....you can visit her anytime you want there's no visiting hours there

\*\*\*more cries\*\*\*

Doris: thank you son...you'll send me an invoice and I'll pay you back

Alpha: she's the mother of my child and I love her ma....i wanna make her my wife so this is me taking care of my soon to be wife so please let me

\*\*\*Doris nodded feeling overwhelmed....she still blames herself\*\*\*

Vee: hai metlholo ga ya bona ke bo Moshe hela le rona ra e bona shem ( Moses is not the only one who saw unthinkable things we are seeing them too ) .....with just one

punch and Masai is in coma....e le gore le sure gore she punched her hela ( are you sure she just punched her)

\*\*\*no one answered her\*\*\*

Vee: yho

\*\*\*she clapped her hands in a dramatic way\*\*\*

Hills: as a traditional healer do you think she'll be ok

\*\*\* She sniffed wiping her tears off and Mpande looked down....he was feeling some type of way about her....even her voice sounded sweet in his ears...he shook his head getting rid of those thoughts....she not his type and never will be that's why when they had that three sum he f\*cked Moera more than her...he couldn't even kiss her or go down on her like he did with Moera\*\*\*

Alphalette: yes she will...im not worried about her being ok physically im worried about her mental state....she loves her twins and this is gonna be a huge blow for her when she wakes up... her Lupus might flare up because of stress

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: but she'll be ok don't worry too much

Doris: where is Khai

Alpha: he's safe with my mother

\*\*\*Doris nodded\*\*\*

Doris: I need to see her

Alpha: she's in there...the nurse stationed to care of her will let you in

\*\*\*Doris got up with Vee and they walked to her private high care ward while Hills stayed behind....she'll go when they come out\*\*\*

Hills: please don't harm her

\*\*\*Alpha looked at her so did Mpande\*\*\*

Hills: I know you love Masa and you're angry that Mo hurt the mother of your child but...please think of mama....Let her handle her the best way she knows how

Alpha: why do you think I would hurt Moera

Hills: cause right now I feel like beating the shit out of her for what she did

\*\*\*Mpande chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Mpande: with those tinny soft looking hands ungazodlala....uMoela will send you straight to heaven with just a slap I mean look at what she did to her own twin

\*\*\*Hills gave him a death stare and he chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: Mpande no...

Mpande: ngiyazibuzela nje haw ( im just asking) cause she's sure she can take on the mighty Helga

Alpha: not now man eish....

\*\*\*he warned him\*\*\*

Mpande: ai ok ke

\*\*\*he shrugged his shoulders\*\*\*

Hills: Well Mr these tinny hands managed to hold your tinny d\*ck that time so im sure they can punch Mo how's that

Mpande: askies

Hills: mxm you people with small disabled penises bark a lot...le bora gore ( you are a bore)

\*\*\* she said with an attitude and Mpande got up angrily and Alpha pulled him down roughly\*\*\*

Alpha: wenzani.... sit!!!! ( what are you doing.... sit!!!)

Mpande: wena.....wena khulubuswe...feti boomboom nok'nuka uthini (you big fat with your smelly self what did you just say)

\*\*\*he said pointing at her\*\*\*

Alpha: that's enough man.....we are in the hospital for fucks sake!!!!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice that startled Hills while Mpande just pointed at Hills with his ego bruised and Hills decided to concentrate on her phone scrolling on her Facebook timeline to avoid crying she's hurt by Mpande words... body shaming her like that...her dislike for him grew stronger after what he just said \*\*\*

---

LATER ON AT JABU'S HOUSE



\*\*\*Jabu's intercom rang and it was the police...he asked himself what they wanted in his house he opened for them and waited by the open door as they walked towards him with Amo behind them and he sighed shaking his head\*\*\*

Police: good day Mr Vilakazi

Jabu: sho... how can I help you officers

\*\*\*he said looking at Amo who looked away when their eyes met\*\*\*

Police: Mrs Vilakazi here asked us to accompany her to this house to come and take her things....she said she doesn't feel safe to do so alone since you have a temper

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled shaking his head....he had a lot to say but he decided otherwise cause he could tell she didn't tell them about him pointing a gun at her\*\*\*

Jabu: ok she can come in a tseye maratha a gae (and take her rags) ....but you two stay outside

Police2: didn't you hear the part where I said she said you have a temper Mr Vilakazi

\*\*\*he said with a firm voice and Jabu chuckled...amused that he thinks that tone will scare him\*\*\*

Jabu: I have a temper Amogelang..

\*\*\*he asked her and she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Jabu: wow ok...anyway the sooner she's out of my life the better but the two of you are not allowed inside my house....you wanna plant things and frame me.... le tauwe ke chelete ya bribe ka le bona ( you must be drunk by bribe money you like collecting I see)

\*\*\*Amo felt her heart break into piece when he said that\*\*\*

Police1: that's a serious accusation man

Jabu: sue me then nxa....no warrant to enter my house means no entry but die towenaar ( this witch) can enter and take marathanyana a gae ( her rags)

Police2: then you'll stand here with us for her safety im sure you understand

Jabu: make it quick wena I have places to be

\*\*\* He said annoyed and the police officers sighed and told Amo to go in....She went in upstairs and she got to the main bedroom and tears filled her eyes....this was once her matrimonial bedroom where she lost her virginity and made her baby girl....tears ran down her cheeks and she quickly wiped them off\*\*\*

Amo: you have to do this to save your marriage Amo.... If you don't you'll lose him to her...she'll live your life while you suffer

\*\*\*she said to herself and took out a packet with muthi inside and she sprinkled small amount of it under the mattress she then went to the mounted wall unit wardrobe and she sprinkled some of it on Jabu's clothes making sure the muthi is not visible then she went to his shoes and sprinkled some of it. She went to his drawers (underpants) and sprinkled some of it there too then she quickly put the packet inside her bag and took out her travelling bag and started packing her things.... Soon after the door opened and Amo jumped startled with her heart beating fast and Jabu walked in finding her packing\*\*\*

Jabu: a wa utlwa ge kere ( didn't you hear when I said) I have places to be

Amo: i...i...im almost done

\*\*\*she said with her heart still beating fast\*\*\*

Jabu: almost done ya masepa....fetsa daar before onnyela nxa ( finish there before I deal with you nxa)

\*\*\*then he walked out leaving the door open clicking his tongue and Amo breathed out with her heart beating fast....she finished packing some of her clothes shoes and bags and took them downstairs...she found Lorraine and Jabu sitting in the lounge and anger filled her heart....she hated Lorraine with every fibre in her body and even though she felt bad at first for what she did in the main bedroom now all that feeling is out of the window\*\*\*

Amo: you couldn't even wait for me to pack up and leave and already you're making yourself the madam of the house

Lolly: im gonna ignore you cause you're not thinking straight

\*\*\*Amo laughed\*\*\*

Amo: enjoy my house while it last mogirl and remember what the Lord hath joined together let no man put asunder...always remember those words

Lolly: I would remember those words if I was sleeping with him but im not f\*cking your husband sweetie...he's just done with your evil self....maybe you should look in the mirror first before you blame others....no one send you to f\*ck a cultist you did out of your free will...look in the mirror and uyekele ukus'bora ( and stop boring us)

\*\*\*Amo tried to say something\*\*\*

Jabu: ey ey banna ba gao bao yemetse kontle so vaya ( your men are waiting for you outside so leave)

\*\*\*She huffed and took her things outside and Jabu bend and put his elbows on his knees and he closed his eyes while swallowing a huge lump....he couldn't believe his marriage just ended like that....The woman he loved and still love the church going woman who captured his heart and made him want to marry and build a stable home for his kids just changed to something evil just like that\*\*\*

Amo: askies I should've just ignored her

Jabu: you can use the Bmw ...tell Gogo something came up and I couldn't make it

\*\*\* He said giving her the car keys and Lolly sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: ok...you'll be fine right

\*\*\*he nodded\*\*\*

Lolly: I'll see you later

Jabu: sho

\*\*\*she sighed and got up and she took her bag and walked out with a heavy heart....She hated seeing him like that\*\*\*

.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

20

AT JABU'S HOUSE

\*\*\*He's taking a nap in his bedroom...after Lolly left he tried to keep himself busy with some paper work but his mind refused to concentrate....so he decided to go take a nap to reboot his brain and maybe he can get some work done cause his employees needs

to get paid in a couple of days....Now he's dreaming of his late baby girl holding his hands tight crying trying to pull him out of the dark hole he slipped and fell into....he's holding on to the edge of the hole so he doesn't drop inside and Jabulile is trying to pull him out with her tiny hands \*\*\*

Lile: papa...papa..phuma (come out)

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Lile: papa phuma

\*\*\*he could feel himself slipping inside slowly\*\*\*

Lile: nooo bhuti lets help papa.... bhuti sheshisa (brother hurry up)

\*\*\*Jabu wanted to say something but his lips felt like they are glued together so tears just fell uncontrollably....he then felt a hand grabbing his leg inside the dark hole pulling him down roughly and he fell inside the dark hole trying to scream out loud but his lips still felt glued together\*\*\*

Voice: JABU WAKE UP!!!

\*\*\*A voice said to him as he's falling inside the hole...he knows the voice but with how scared he is he can't quite make sure who it belongs to\*\*\*

Voice: I said wake up damn it!!!

\*\*\* he felt like he was being slapped on his cheek.....now he can tell he's dreaming because the voice keeps saying he should wake up....He tried to wake up but he couldn't he felt like his soul is leaving his body as he struggles to breathe....He then felt a gush of water pouring all over him from above as he kept on falling inside the dark hole then he woke up gasping for air...He jumped from the bed running away while he's busy gasping for air but Castiel stopped him....he fought to get out of Castiel's hold but the Vamp is stronger than him\*\*\*

Castiel: stop it it's me Cass!!!

\*\*\*he stopped fighting and raised his eyes with his body visibly shaking and they met with Castiel's cold eyes \*\*\*

Castiel: calm down before you have a heart attack

Ruslan: breathe in and out slowly

\*\*\*he said as he walked around the bedroom with a serious look on his face.... Castiel helped Jabu to sit on the bed but before Jabu could sit Ruslan stopped him \*\*\*

Ruslan: don't sit there

\*\*\*they stopped\*\*\*

Ruslan: he can sit on the couch

\*\*\*Castiel took a wet Jabu to the couch and Jabu slowly sat down wiping his face with his wet t-shirt....He took off the t-shirt and continued to wipe his face with his body still shaking from fear....He couldn't believe that was just a dream...It felt real to him he saw his daughter and he even felt her touch. She was trying to save him and he couldn't believe it....He put the shirt on his face and he sobbed....Castiel squeezed his shoulder gently trying not to break it as he comforted him\*\*\*

Castiel: its ok man...its ok

Ruslan: who was in here who's not supposed to be here

\*\*\* Jabu stopped crying and he sniffed and wiped his face then he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Jabu: Amo....she came escorted by two police officers to take her belongings

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: you joking right

\*\*\*Jabu shook his head no and Ruslan just shook his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: tell me you come in here with her

\*\*\*he asked still moving around the bedroom opening all the cupboards and the wall unit wardrobe doors\*\*\*

Jabu: no...

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: she told the police that I have a temper so they wanted her to enter alone " for safety purposes"

Castiel: she planned everything perfectly...well her mistake is she forgot about us

\*\*\* Jabu frowned confused\*\*\*

Jabu: what's going on

Ruslan: you're losing your plot Jabu and im not happy with you

\*\*\* Jabu looked at him with his red eyes confused\*\*\*

Castiel: you have become weak....Losing princess made you vulnerable and seem weak man and its not on....you need to find yourself again man....this is not on

Jabu: what is going on....what did Amo plan....skhiphani ( what's going on)

Ruslan: she put juju in here

Jabu: juju??....juju ke mang byanong ( who's juju)

Castiel: muthi you tai kop ( you fool)

\*\*\* Jabu frowned looking from Cass to Ruu\*\*\*

Jabu: what

\*\*\*he asked with a low tone\*\*\*

Castiel: you shouldn't have let her enter the house alone Jabu man....where is your mother why didn't your mother go upstairs with her....that b\*itch is responsible for princesses death and you still let her in your house...why didn't you pack her sh\*t yourself and have them delivered to where she stays....you had all the time in the world to do that man eish

\*\*\*Jabu didn't say anything\*\*\*

Castiel: you're starting to piss me off now....deal with her or I'll do it for you...in fact you know what leave her to me I'll deal with her myself

\*\*\*they heard someone running up the stairs\*\*\*

Heath: Jabu....Jabu!!!

\*\*\*he said screaming his name as he ran to the main bedroom\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't enter the room Heath

\*\*\*he said stopping him on his tracks outside by the door\*\*\*

Heath: where's Jabu....eeh Javas????

Jabu: ke grand joh ( im good)

\*\*\*Heath bend his body downwards and held his knees breathing out relieved \*\*\*

Heath: f\*ck!!!

\*\*\*he took out his phone and called his grandmother\*\*\*

Gogo: Shaka

\*\*\*he said with a shaky voice\*\*\*

Heath: he's ok gogo...Ruslan and Castiel got here first

\*\*\*gogo breathed out relieved\*\*\*

Gogo: ooh Nkosiyam ngiyabonga ( ooh my God thank you)

Heath: I'll update you later sthandwa sam....let me find out what happened

Gogo: ok tell him to call me.... no Lorraine is worried about him

Heath: don't allow her to come here as of yet I'll tell you when she can come

Gogo: ok my boy...kulungile....

\*\*\*then he ended the call\*\*\*

Heath: Ruu what's going on

Ruslan: your brother doesn't listen that's what's going on....He let Amo inside his house alone and she did things in here...call that traditional healer friend of yours here....this room needs cleansing before I can do my things....it reeks witchcraft

Heath: you allowed Amo to enter your house alone Jabulani!!!

\*\*\*he shouted and Jabu didn't say anything....Jabu couldn't believe he let her ruin and hurt him again\*\*\*

Castiel: you'll shout at him later....for now call that merman to come and cleanse here

\*\*\*Heath kept quiet calming down \*\*\*

Heath: I can't believe he let her enter the house alone nxa

Ruslan: Heath calm down and bring rubbish bags we need to take out all of Jabu's clothes shoes and undies but you're not allowed in here until its cleansed

Heath: ok

\*\*\*he went downstairs\*\*\*

Jabu: why

\*\*\*he said frowning \*\*\*

Castiel: you have no right to ask why

Jabu: uyanya wena...do you know how expensive my clothes are

Castiel: well they will be burned so make peace with it

Jabu: don't play like that man

Ruslan: stop it Cass

Cass: why....i mean we should punish him by burning his clothes

Jabu: says a man wearing skinny jeans ka potrisi e ka re o dlala rugby (with calf muscles as if you play rugby)

Cass: tsek sboshwa ( jail bird)...we should've let him die Ruu

Heath: here they are

\*\*\*Ruslan went to take the big black plastic bags and gave them to Castiel\*\*\*

Ruu: you'll find us downstairs

\*\*\*Cass nodded\*\*\*

Ruslan: let's go

\*\*\*he said to Jabu and Jabu looked at Castiel\*\*\*

Jabu: don't burn my clothes man kao fraiza ( im begging you) some are limited addition and they have sentimental value joh

\*\*\*Castiel smirked\*\*\*

Castiel: look who's begging

Jabu: mara Cass-Cass saichuna dai deng kao fraiza joh ( don't do it im begging you)

Ruslan: let's go....he won't burn them he's playing with you

Jabu: mxm kuku ya gao yao bola Cass

\*\*\* Castiel laughed out loud as Jabu and Ruslan walked out ....they went downstairs with Heath\*\*\*

---

## AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\* Alphalette walks out of Masai's room when his phone rings and its Heath\*\*\*

Alpha: hey man

Heath: sho man...how are you...how's madam

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: she'll be fine...she's a fighter this one

Heath: that's good...look I need a favour man....i know you're going through tough times with madam in hospital but Jabu needs your help man

Alpha: im listening

\*\*\*he said as he walked to the waiting area chairs and sat down and Heath told him what happened\*\*\*

Alpha: I knew something was up but with the way my mind is overworking since Masai is hospitalized and Gaza reaching out...

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: I just didn't have time to consult with vhokokwane (my Ancestors) to find out where the bad feeling I had was coming from

\*\*\*he sighed rubbing his neck\*\*\*

Alpha: I just thought the bad feeling is about Masai or Gaza

Heath: don't worry about it I understand man...you're stressed so don't worry about it plus Castiel and Ruslan got here in time

Alpha: how is he

Heath: alive but shaken



Alpha: kahle kahle that woman o lava tilo ringoba ahenhla ka nhloko rihuma halephambeni ( actually that woman needs to be hit by lightning on top of the head and it should come out of her privates... nxa xit\*mbo xa yena man....anyway what can I do to help

Heath: Ruu said something about cleansing

Alpha: yah...the whole house needs cleansing not just his bedroom....let me go home and consult on how I should perform the cleansing..... I'll see you later

Heath: thanks man...Thokoza Khehla!

Alpha: Thokoza!

\*\*\*they ended call and as Alphalette was about to stand up he saw Doris Vee and Hills walking to him....Doris looked like the whole world was on her shoulders....she looks like there's no life left in her\*\*\*

Doris: my boy

\*\*\* she hugged him and he exchanged greetings with Hills and Vee\*\*\*

Doris: Vee and Hills you can go in and see Masa I need to talk to Alpha about something

\*\*\*They nodded and walked away and she sighed and sat down so did Alphalette\*\*\*

Alpha: is everything ok ma

Doris: I need your help son

Alpha: ok im listening

\*\*\*Doris sighed\*\*\*

Doris: what im about to tell you is a family secret and I need your help and I also need to know if what's happening between the twins is because of it...im telling you as your patient and you as my tradition healer not my daughter's boyfriend

\*\*\*he sighed he didn't like being called her boyfriend... right at this moment he knew he needs to change that\*\*\*

Alpha: I understand ma

\*\*\*Alphalette looked at her curiously waiting for her to talk and Doris sighed \*\*\*

Doris: you see my son...the twins' mother and I were twins....and I was born a male....in simple terms im transgender

\*\*\*Alphalette raised his eyebrows surprised....well not too surprised cause he could tell something was off about her....yes she doesn't have any features that show that she was born a male but her voice...mh mh \*\*\*

Alpha: ummh ohk

Doris: im glad we got that out of the way.....anyway our mother was not a nice person...she was pretentious envious and a jealous person....i remember relatives would come to visit us and she would seem happy to see them they would be talking and laughing and the moment they leave she would say nasty thing about them

Sponsored

AD

they would be talking and laughing and the moment they leave she would say nasty thing about them cursing at them and laughing at their misfortunes

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Doris: then our aunt her twin got sick she got diagnosed with diabetes and our mother took her in since her husband was working and out of the blue she died mysteriously and everyone stopped visiting us or talking to us.....rumours of our mother killing our aunt went around and we thought they are just rumours and useless gossip but...

\*\*\*she sighed shaking her head\*\*\*

Doris: two years later our mother got sick and we found out that she's HIV positive and she didn't take her medication....even after we found out she still refused treatment and she ended up dying but before she died she told us that now she can finally rest cause her twin has been troubling her in her dreams....

\*\*\*she sighed again\*\*\*

Doris: After her burial Mmamogolo ( eldest aunt) told me that our mother fed her twin slow poison when she was sick so that when she dies they will say it was the diabetes that killed her...and it was all because of a man....her twin's husband

\*\*\*Alphalette closed his eyes and opened them again\*\*\*

Doris: she said she went to consult secretly cause their sister was not getting any better and our mother was against that idea...they told her her twin is the one killing her with slow poison so she confronted mom and mom lost it and told her her twin's husband was supposed to hers since she saw him first and her twin is evil for snatching a man that was meant for her so she deserves to die slowly and painfully

\*\*\*she wiped her tears off\*\*\*

Doris: what they didn't know is her twin was listening...they heard something falling behind them and when they looked it was our mother's twin....and as they called an ambulance for her that's when she cursed mom.... before she took her last breath she said all the twin girls from mom's lineage will kill each other slowly and painfully just like she killed her...Mom didn't take what she said seriously but Mmamogolo did

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed rubbing his beard\*\*\*

Alpha: where is the husband

Doris: he was broken my son...I've never seen a man cry like that....so after aunty's burial he left and we never heard from him again

Alpha: he's still alive and he knows what happened to his wife and he's still holding a grudge against your mother....his grudge is what is still keeping the curse working

\*\*\*Doris closed her eyes and she shook her head\*\*\*

\*\*\*he sighed and rubbed his forehead\*\*\*

Alpha: eish

Doris: I had a fall out with Moera and the things she said about Masai are worrisome ....she thinks I love Masai more than her...that I don't give her the attention she deserves she even said she hates Masai ....everything is just too much son....i don't even know where to start fixing things

\*\*\*she sighed with a heavy heart\*\*\*

Doris: ...kamo I once went to consult and I even paid the sangoma a lot of money and he did a ritual and said the curse has been lifted.... I believed him and relaxed thinking all is well but now I see that old fool lied....nxa he's lucky he's dead

\*\*\*Alphalette kept quiet staring into space\*\*\*

Doris: Alpha

\*\*\*still nothing then she shook him and he blinked repeatedly then he sighed\*\*\*

Alphalette: im gonna be frank with you ma.... the problem here right at this moment is your daughter dating and lusting over wrong men.... Moera likes dating married men or taken men....she's mostly attracted to them than single guys and quite frankly some married women out there pray dangerous prayers ma and will resorts to dangerous ways to protect their homes and marriages

Doris: wait what....

\*\*\*she asks shocked\*\*\*

Alphalette: im not trying to speak ill of her but she's been sleeping with the wrong man this time around....the wife found something that belongs to her and it's an intimate thing...yes the curse is still there and its slowly building up but it's not the main factor at this moment....that woman did her research and found out all she needs to know about Moera and she knows how to destroy her completely.... even the married man has lost interest on Moera ...you can asked her he hasn't called her in a while now

\*\*\*Doris looked at Alphalette in complete shock\*\*\*

Alpha: as for her feeling neglected that happens in most families and therapy might help....i mean I also grew up feeling like that so we can't blame the curse for that  
Alpha: when you have time come to my house and we will see what we can do to deal with the curse...i think I know how to end this curse for good but as for Moera...she needs cleansing and a serious one in fact all of you need one... Moera needs to change her ways ma....

\*\*\*he couldn't tell her about Moera lusting over him\*\*\*

Alpha: for now I need to go see another patient of mine then tomorrow I need to take my brother home....he's been missing for some time and he lost his memory now he regained it and reached out so I need to take him back home

\*\*\*Doris swallowed and she sighed....her mind was on Moera dating married men...."Was Alex married too" she thought\*\*\*

Alphalette: ma???

\*\*\* she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Doris: ye...yes I'll come to your house when you are back

\*\*\*Alphalette nodded\*\*\*

Alphalette: let me go and prepare my things....I'll come see Masai before I leave tomorrow and I'll bring AJ too

\*\*\*Doris nodded\*\*\*

Doris: thank you

\*\*\*she held his hand\*\*\*

Alpha: I'll keep in touch

\*\*\* she nodded and let go of his hand and he got up and walked away\*\*\*

Doris: yho Jehovah wa Nasaretha....ka lekwa or ka tlhollwa nah

---

AT JABU'S HOUSE

IN THE LOUNGE

Ruslan: let's talk

\*\*\*he said with a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: its either you forgive Amo and see past her evil deeds or take her out of your life for good because we can't go around in circles like this man

Heath: see past what.... hell no she needs to go

Ruslan: it's his decision Heath not yours

Heath: then he better make the right one cause hmmm

\*\*\* he chuckled looking pissed off\*\*\*

Ruslan: what is it gonna be jabu

Jabu: what did she do

Heath: you're still asking....you have time to ask stupid questions Jabu after what happened

Jabu: eish vaag man keng ka wena ( eish stop man what's wrong with you)

Heath: I should be asking you that!!!

Ruslan: guys please not now

\*\*\*Cass came downstairs\*\*\*

Heath: no Ruu im sick and tired of Jabu protecting that bitch...you think you're the only one hurt or broken by Lile being killed like that huh...well news flash we are all hurt and broken....we all love that little girl.....even today Lesedi asks me about her about when she'll come back....Sbu is a walking shell of himself because he loved his little sister so much.... Naledi is now over protective of our kids she wakes up countless times in the middle of the night to check on the little ones to see if they are still alive

Castiel: calm down Heath

Heath: don't tell me to calm down Cass....i understand he's hurt and I will never set time for him to heal or for him to accept her death....i understand he's still hurt...i get all that

but when it comes to Amo I won't understand shit....i want her dead or gone from our lives and that's it

\*\*\*Jabu sighed and clenched his jaws looking down\*\*\*

Ruslan: her death won't bring back Lile Heath

Heath: it will make me happy

Jabu: this is not about you Heath...this is not some Lerato shit....she's still my wife even though I don't want her back

Heath: a wife that fucked another man...a wife that wanted to change you to someone you're not....a wife that embarrassed you in front of hers and your family....a wife that has a hand in your daughter's death.... a wife that forced herself on you...should I go on

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he got up and went towards the kitchen\*\*\*

Heath: you're being selfish Jabu....you don't even put yourself in Sbu's shoes....he misses his father your only son has resorted to move around houses of his uncles cause he feels lonely in this house cause he hates seeing you like this...cause he feels neglected

Jabu: ENOUGH!!!

Heath: F\*CK YOU....I HOPE SHE KILLS YOU NEXT TIME NX

\*\*\*he got up and started walking towards the door\*\*\*

Cass: Heath come on...

\*\*\*He ignored him and walked out slamming the door on his way out and Cass sighed looking at Ruu who's standing by the kitchen entrance holding a beer \*\*\*

---

## STILL AT JABU'S HOUSE

Ruu: im still waiting Jabu

Jabu: what did she do

\*\*\*Ruu sighed and he walked to them and sat down\*\*\*

Ruu: poured muthi under the mattress and on all your clothes and shoes...i saw someone but I wasn't sure of whom the person was that's why I asked you who was in your bedroom that shouldn't be there

\*\*\*Jabu breathed out calming himself down\*\*\*

Jabu: what's the purpose of that muthi...what is it supposed to do to me

Ruu: to make you and Lolly fight....

Cass: put it straightforward man....it was for you to beat the shit out of Lolly straight to death....ischitho Jabu.... ischitho sokuthi ubulale uLolly...She hates Lolly with her all and blames her for her failed marriage....i think she can't stomach Lolly living her life

Ruu: if we didn't wake you up you were going to be under her control.....she was going to control you

Cass: mkhovu....the new Mpiyakhe Zungu.....and she was also gonna turn you into siyoyoyo...a damn fool ngapha Lolly would've been your punching bag...all you had to do was lay on that bed with her and the anger you feel when you think about Amo the betrayal....the hatred you feel towards her will be transferred to Lolly times ten....

Ruu: and we are saying Lolly because she called her name when she went to see that witchdoctor

Jabu: eish...

\*\*\*he rubbed his face as many emotions took over him\*\*\*

Jabu: why is she doing this to me...so the hurt im going through is not enough for her now she wants to turn me into her lap dog.....e le gore who did I marry Cass....where did I go wrong mfowethu....was I blinded by love that I didn't see her true self

Cass: you think a man like her father would give birth to a good woman....nah man....and plus children who grow up with extremely strict parents hide their true selves

growing up....they live their lives to their parents standards and only show their true selves when one or both parents passes on....i mean look at her brother.....you won't recognize him when you see him now...he drinks and smokes now

Jabu: how do you know that

\*\*\*Cass smirked\*\*\*

Cass: to pass time I check on the lives of our enemies .....it keeps me busy and entertained

\*\*\* Jabu gives him a weird look\*\*\*

Cass: you won't understand...it's a Vampire thing

\*\*\*he said dismissively and Jabu just shook his head defeated\*\*\*

Ruu: let's leave all that....all you need to do is stop waiting to get closure from her man....just divorce then take your son after he finishes with his exams and go a holiday somewhere far and regroup and rebuild your father and son relationship...comeback a better man

\*\*\* The door opened and Heath walked in\*\*\*

Heath: Alpha is on his way

Ruu: good

Cass: I thought "Mr pissed off" here left

Heath: up yours man

\*\*\*he said showing him the middle finger and Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: you two make me laugh...tomorrow you'll be best friends again forgetting that you fought today....Tom and Jerry

Jabu: Tom and Jerry ke dai potris van jou ( Tom and Jerry is that calf muscle of yours)

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: see best friends again

Heath: mxm

\*\*\*he walked out again and Castiel laughed some more\*\*\*

Ruslan: you're very stupid Cass

\*\*\*He said shaking his head\*\*\*



## AT MOERA'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Moera is in Drench's arm as he consoles her...she's sniffing and he keeps brushing her arm gently\*\*\*

Drench: don't beat yourself up everything will be alright

\*\*\*she sniffed\*\*\*

Moera: nothing will be alright Dre....my family will hate me and I can't have that

Dre: how sure are you that they will hate you

Moera: she's the baby of the family....everyone's favorite....they gonna hate me I know

\*\*\*Dre sighed\*\*\*

Dre: you don't know that Mo

Moera: I know Dre

\*\*\*she said getting off his hold and she looked at him\*\*\*

Moera: her sangoma boyfriend took the knife I used to cut the seal tape and the used seal tape I used to wrap the carpet

Dre: wha...i told you to get rid of that Mo!!!

Moera: I forgot the knife ok...i was panicking but the seal tape I threw it away and he found it when I left with the ambulance...what if he bewitches me using them or he gives them to the police if Masai opens a case against

\*\*\*she said with a shaky voice\*\*\*

Moera: now I know why he said I should leave with the ambulance

\*\*\* she wiped her tears off with her shaky hand\*\*\*

Dre: don't worry I'll take care of it

Moera: how am I gonna face everyone....who knows maybe he already told mama everything

\*\*\*she covered her face and she cried\*\*\*

Moera: I wish Alex was still alive....maybe by now I would be happily married far away from her

Dre: don't talk like that....she's your twin

Moera: I wish she wasn't

Dre: don't ever say that Moera!!!

Moera: you don't know how my life has been like Dre....to be recognized and appreciated I had to hide how I feel and be there for her and I lost myself along the way....Me always protecting her and being there for her made my presence acknowledged

\*\*\*Drench just looked at her\*\*\*

Moera: she's been sick for as long as I can remember and all the attention went her...."le sa mokwatisa thata" ( don't make her too angry).... "Masai o jele" ( did Masai eat)....tlhatswa di jwana Moera dijoin tsa gae di bothoko ka jeno wa bona o palletse le go ya sekolong.... o tla di tlhatswa ka moso ge a le betere" ( wash the dishes Moera her joints are painful you can see she didn't even go to school today...she'll wash them tomorrow when she's better) ....nywee nywee nywee nxa...she always gets every good thing and it's not fair

\*\*\*she put her hands on her face\*\*\*

Moera: she always gets the best things in life while I always have to suffer to get them....im the one that convinced her not to abort and now she's happy with her boyfriend and im cast aside as if I don't exist....She's happy and im miserable.....i should be the one who's happy Dre...i have always been there for her now why can't she let me be happy just for once Dre

\*\*\*Dre didn't know what to say to her....he's just shocked \*\*\*

Dre: how Mo...is she maybe blocking your way to your happiness

\*\*\*She looked away not saying anything\*\*\*

Dre: Moera...

Moera: let's just drop it...you won't understand

Dre: do you perhaps envy your twin

Moera: can we just drop it please

\*\*\*she said getting up and Dre shook his head not believing what he just heard....was this the Moera he knows and loves secretly \*\*\*

Moera: and no I don't....i love Masai she's my twin...we shared a womb together...so stop assuming things please

\*\*\*As she's about to go to the bathroom there's a knock on the door you can see she didn't even go to school today...she'll wash them tomorrow when she's better) ....nywee nywee nywee nxa...she always gets every good thing and it's not fair

\*\*\*she put her hands on her face\*\*\*

Moera: she always gets the best things in life while I always have to suffer to get them....im the one that convinced her not to abort and now she's happy with her boyfriend and im cast aside as if I don't exist....She's happy and im miserable....i should be the one who's happy Dre...i have always been there for her now why can't she let me be happy just for once Dre

\*\*\*Dre didn't know what to say to her....he's just shocked \*\*\*

Dre: how Mo...is she maybe blocking your way to your happiness

\*\*\*She looked away not saying anything\*\*\*

Dre: Moera...

Moera: let's just drop it...you won't understand

Dre: do you perhaps envy your twin

Moera: can we just drop it please

\*\*\*she said getting up and Dre shook his head not believing what he just heard....was this the Moera he knows and loves secretly \*\*\*

Moera: and no I don't....i love Masai she's my twin...we shared a womb together...so stop assuming things please

\*\*\*As she's about to go to the bathroom there's a knock on the door she moved to the door to see who it is...as she opens the door she freezes shaking\*\*\*

Moera: ma...mama

\*\*\*Doris grabs her with her gown and pushed her inside roughly and Dre got up \*\*\*

Dre: what's going o....

\*\*\*he saw that it was her mother and her mother's friend ...his eyes landed on the sjambok (a long stiff whip) Vee is holding and he swallowed hard\*\*\*

Moera: mama i....

\*\*\*a loud slap landed on her face and Dre just closed his eyes\*\*\*

Doris: so you wanna kill your sister Moera!!!

Moera: no mama it was a mistake

\*\*\*she said hiding her face while crying\*\*\*

Doris: o llelang heh...ollelang!!! ( why are crying)

Vee: wena mmaspekere abore hwa!!! ( you coloured person leave!!)

\*\*\*she said looking at Dre\*\*\*

Dre: can we all calm down and talk....hitting her won't solve anything please

\*\*\*Doris looked at Dre\*\*\*

Doris: Vee tshwara baby Jake Matlala mo ke deale le this boy ka bona ga itsi gore abore hwa e raya goreng ( Vee come and hold baby Jake Matlala here so I deal with this boy I see he doesn't know what leave means)

\*\*\*Vee got to them and held Moera who was trying to get out her mother's hold crying and she gave the sjambok to Doris who went closer to Dre who looked spooked moving backwards\*\*\*

Doris: what did you say

Dre: look mam I just said you should sit down and talk....beating her won't solve anything

Doris: and remind me....who are you to this family

Dre: I care about her ok....she's my late brother's fiancée

Doris: did I maybe receive lobola money from your brother or maybe meet him in person

\*\*\*Dre swallowed\*\*\*

Doris: o sa nyako ntlwaela masepa boy (don't piss me off boy).... ringnyana ya two bob ( a two cent ring) and you think you have a right to say anything in this family....now take your light skinned self and f\*kof before o wela ke madi a kgofa ( before you catch stray bullet)

\*\*\*Dre sighed\*\*\*

Dre: I need to make sure she's safe ma.... she acknowledges that...

\*\*\*the whip landed on his arm going to his back and he screamed taking cover\*\*\*

Doris: OUT NOW!!!

Dre: damn it...are you crazy...are you out of your f\*cken mind....do you know who I am

Moera: mama stop please

\*\*\*she begged her mother\*\*\*

Doris: o sa na le molomo wena baby Jake ( you still have mouth to talk baby Jake)...and wena Dr Phil you're still here!!!

Dre: im not leaving her with you...you're crazy....she's not safe with you here...eish damn it

\*\*\*he said rubbing where he could reach and Doris rushed to him with the whip aimed high and Dre pulled out his gun from his back and pointed it to her and Doris stopped on her tracks while Vee and Moera screamed\*\*\*

Dre: stop ok!!

Doris: pointing a gun at an old woman.....you know how to choose them Moera shem

Moera: Dre stop please.....put the gun down

\*\*\*she begged him\*\*\*

Doris: so now you wanna shoot me boy....you can't fight me man to man so you resort to guns now....o batla re tshameke gun-gun now...you want me to go grab mine and show you how a gun is used to cowards like you

\*\*\*Dre sighed shocked at how crazy and hectic this woman is....he has never met someone like her...you'd swear she's part of the mafia or something....he cant believe that she's not even scared of a gun pointed at her while Moera looks spooked even though she was once trained on how to shoot by Alex\*\*\*

Dre: I don't wanna shoot you I just want you to calm down that's it

\*\*\*he said raising his gun up in a surrender mode then put it on his back again\*\*\*

Dre: look I understand that you're angry and disappointed at her but she was only defending herself

Doris: you still have mouth to talk huh

\*\*\*she said rushing to him and he ran to the door and the sjambok landed on his back and he screamed as he opened the door running outside \*\*\*

Doris: nxa

\*\*\*she closed the door and locked it then turned to Moera who was still crying\*\*\*

Doris: areye ...from the top....im listening

\*\*\*Moera looked at her mother scared\*\*\*

Doris: o batla go bolela ka mpama Moera!!! ( you want a slap to be able to talk Moera!!!)

Moera: no

Doris: o emetseng!!! ( what are you waiting for!!!)

\*\*\*she didn't say anything she just cried and Doris went closer to her and she hid her face\*\*\*

Doris: Moera

Moera: mama

Doris: o batla go nnya ( you want to shit yourself)

Moera: no

Doris: then what did you do to your twin

\*\*\*still with her face hidden\*\*\*

Moera: she slapped me and I punched her

Doris: why

\*\*\*she kept quiet\*\*\*

Vee: praat man Moera ( talk man Moera)

Doris: she's gonna wake up and tell me the truth so its better I hear it from you... now why did you two fight

\*\*\*Moera sniffed\*\*\*

Doris: bolela man !!!(talk)

\*\*\*she said hitting her with the sjambok on her legs and she screamed crying\*\*\*

Doris: talk

\*\*\*she just cried trying to grab the sjambok but Vee held her arms turning her around a bit and the sjambok landed on her butt and she jumped screaming....another whip landed on her butt and another one and another one\*\*\*

Moera: I HATE HER OK....I HATE HER!!!

\*\*\*Doris stopped and Vee let go of her\*\*\*

Moera: YES I HATE HER!!!

\*\*\*Doris looked at her as pain choked her...it was really happening\*\*\*

Vee: how can you hate your twin sister Moera

Moera: mama you chased Dre out and left her here....you're a hypocrite....why is she here

\*\*\*she said pointing at Vee and Vee raised her eyebrows shocked\*\*\*

Moera: Dre can't have a say but she has the right to have one and the right to judge me

Vee: heh Bahurutse bantsetse !!!

\*\*\*she clapped her hands not believing what she just heard\*\*\*

Doris: Vee please go and pack Masai's clothes and toiletries also pack Khai's too

\*\*\*Vee looked at Moera with a disgusted look on her face shaking her head and she went to Masai's bedroom and Doris sighed looking at a sniffing Moera\*\*\*

Doris: why do you hate her

\*\*\*she said defeated\*\*\*

Moera: she always gets the attention....you always put her first before me....you don't love me like you do her mama and you know it

Doris: how can you even say that Moera

\*\*\*she asked with a pained tone...she couldn't believe what she was hearing \*\*\*

Moera: it's true

Doris: she's always sick Moera....you've seen her at her lowest where we thought we might lose her....where she can't even get out of bed or lift a finger to feed herself....where she can't even wipe herself clean after taking a shit cause every muscle join from head to toe is painful and stiff

\*\*\*Moera didn't say anything\*\*\*

Doris: every day is a fight for your sister Moera....everyday could be her last....

Moera: what about me then mama

Doris: what do you mean

Moera: should I also get a terminal disease to get the attention I deserve

\*\*\*Doris just closed her eyes shaking her head\*\*\*

Moera: im tired of always being there for her....she gets everything while I have to fight to get everything....now she has a man that loves her and I have to go around kissing ugly frogs to get a man that will love me

Doris: Moera you finished school first cause your sister's Lupus was worse when you two did Matric....she had to drop out cause she was constantly at the hospital bed ridden.....you went to Varsity first when she was in Matric struggling cause some days she would be fine while some days she would be sick and forgetful....you found a job first while she was struggling in Varsity because her brain fog got worse so she was forgetful at times

\*\*\*Tears ran down Doris eyes as pain choked her\*\*\*

Doris: she loves Accounting but she ended up doing a course that doesn't challenge her because of her brain fog....she would forget Accounting equations and graphs during a test and she ended up failing

Moera: mama it doesn't change that you love her more than me

Doris: didn't you hear what I just said Moera....why o nale pelo empe so ( why are this heartless) ....so you've been pretending all along to care for her

Moera: im done with this conversation....

Doris: your sister is in hospital Moera.... in an induced coma...do you even care

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice\*\*\*

Moera: o teng akere wena mma ( you are available mama)....you give her all the care in the world and forget about poor Moera

\*\*\*a slap landed on Moera's face then a whip landed on her arm and back and she cried moving away from Doris\*\*\*

Doris: I'll exorcise you ka this sjambok to take out this demon that has possessed you....that's your twin for heaven's sake

\*\*\*Moera cried running away from Doris\*\*\*

Moera: she can die for all I care....i hate all of you...you always take her side as if she was created by special sperms nxa

\*\*\*she said limping to her bedroom fast and locked herself inside....Doris heard her crying painfully and she threw the sjambok on the floor and threw herself on the couch and put her hands on top of her head and cried....Vee stood by the door as her eyes filled with tears and as they fell she wiped them off and went inside the bedroom to continue packing\*\*\*

---

\*\*\* Joe ( Tshimo's ex) is done washing his car now he's busy polishing it whistling he's inside his yard with the gate opened while the hosepipe is watering his lawn outside the gate...his phone rings and he doesn't recognize the numbers but he answers anyway\*\*\*

Joe: Joe speaking

\*\*\*the caller keeps quiet\*\*\*

Joe: hello???

\*\*\*still nothing\*\*\*

Joe: eish this stupid network....Hello...

\*\*\*still nothing\*\*\*

Joe: eish nxa

\*\*\*he dropped the call and continued to polish his car...his wife got out of the house\*\*\*



Wife: baby food is ready

\*\*\*Joe sighed annoyed by her and he faked his smile looking at her\*\*\*

Joe: im coming let me finish here first

Wife: ok

\*\*\*she went inside with her huge belly\*\*\*

Joe: all she knows is to get pregnant so she can eat like a pig and finish my food  
nxa....5 kids as if she doesn't know where a clinic is for prevention nxa...maybe I should  
stop sleeping with her....i mean im being served somewhere better so I don't need her  
pussy anymore...nxa...five....imagine one two three four five and im sure by next year  
she'll be pregnant again nxa no this needs to stop man

\*\*\*he said to himself as he continued polishing his car annoyed....his phone rang again  
and this time it was his best friend so he answered\*\*\*

Joe: Matamela

Mata: sho-sho o vaar ( where are you)

Joe: ko ntlung ke busy ka transie ( at my house im busy with my car)

Mata: ok are we still meeting later on

Joe: for sure man...for sure

Mata: I hope you thought about what I told you

Joe: im not scare of him man....i'll take her right under his nose...i mean who stays at  
his girlfriend's house....o nne rra baki...sbara makoti...wannyla daai laitie....he doesn't  
deserve my Tshimo

Mata: just tread carefully remember we don't even know who he is...he could be  
dangerous....i mean did you see his tattoos

Joe: f\*ck his tattoos...im not scared of him

Mata: ai alright shap I'll see you later...ke tshwere stoko sa mepako ( I have honeys with  
round asses)

\*\*\*Joe whistled exited\*\*\*

Joe: ok later man

\*\*\*Mata laughed and he dropped the call then out of the blue Joe froze and he looked  
on his chest and he was bleeding...another bullet hit him on his stomach and another  
one quickly hit him on his forehead and went out on the back of his head and he fell to  
the ground dead with his eyes opened.....a silencer was used so there was no loud sound  
of a gun....A passenger window of a black car closed and the car drove off \*\*\*

---

## AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\* Alpha is inside Masai's private ward alone...he asked the nurse stationed to care for her during the day to give him some alone time with her..... He's massaging her feet gently with lotion mixed with natural herbs from his Ndumba (Ancestral hut) to help with blood flow since she's not moving around cause she's in an induced coma.....he's telling her about the vacation he's planning for them cause she needs it when the door opens and in came Stevens....Alpha stopped what he's doing and anger took over him as he looked at his younger brother.....Stevens just looked at Masai frozen and tears filled his eyes\*\*\*

Alpha: what the hell are you doing here

Stevens: will she be ok

\*\*\*he asked looking concerned\*\*\*

Alpha: I asked you a question

Steven: Ma told me

\*\*\*Alpha kept quiet\*\*\*

Steven: what happened....was she robbed?

\*\*\*he asked concerned\*\*\*

Alpha: none of your business

Steven: or did you hit her...i mean you have a temper and we all know it

Alpha: nkongwa ngwako san

\*\*\*he swore at him forgetting they share a mother\*\*\*

Alpha: mak\*nde a wena na tatana wena...o bolabola matjemba....o bolabola ny\*pfintsena nxa

Steven: ok I don't understand you but I know you're insulting me.....you see what im talking about...you have a temper

\*\*\*Alpha got up from his chair looking angry and he went closer to him \*\*\*

Alpha: why are you still here

Steven: I care about her too and I still love her regardless

Alpha: well she loves me now and she's over you now go back to that baby mama you're still f\*cking and stay far away from my woman

Stevens: you're not even ashamed...eating where your brother ate

Alpha: I ate first remember...you're the one that likes eating where I've eaten and plus it's a family thing remember you started it and with her im not just eating im wifing as well

\*\*\*Stevens clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Alpha: you're still a boy Stevens....I'll show you how a real woman is treated so go f\*ck Aids ridden wh\*res with grave yard wombs cause that's what you love doing and deserve to have

\*\*\*Stevens grabbed Alphalette by his shirt looking angry\*\*\*

Alpha: get your f\*cken hands off me boy before I have them turned into frogs

\*\*\*Stevens let go of him\*\*\*

Stevens: a coward who always threatens me with witchcraft

Alpha: says a man who hides under daddy's balls all the damn time

Stevens: at least I have one

Alpha: not for long

\*\*\*Stevens frowned\*\*\*

Stevens: what did you just say

Alpha: nothing now leave...your bad aura will make my woman sick

Stevens: what did you say about my father Shangaan kwerekwere boy

\*\*\*Alphalette grabbed Stevens by his shirt and pushed him towards the door with him trying to get of his hold but it was a futile thing to do....he opened the door and pushed him outside hard and he landed on his butt...nurses jumped startled \*\*\*

Alpha: this bastard should never be allowed in here or I'll have anyone who's on duty when he's allowed in again fired and blacklisted all over the country.... That's how much power I have.... now call security to throw this trash out now nxa!!!

\*\*\*then he went inside the private high care ward and went straight to the bathroom to calm himself down..... Those words "Shangaan kwerekwere boy" are part of his traumatic verbal abuse rendered by Stevens and his father growing up....He did go to therapy but those words always trigger something in him....scratches his wounds even though they have healed\*\*\*

Alpha: calm down Ntsako....soon you gonna rejoice....seeing pain in his eyes...seeing him breaking down will be fulfilling and the worst part is you won't be responsible for any of it so calm down Thambolenyoka....

\*\*\*he said looking at himself on the mirror.... he then saw his father standing behind him and they locked eyes for some time and he disappeared....Alpha looked down and sighed then he went back to Masai\*\*\*

---

## AT JABU'S HOUSE

\*\*\*He's taking a nap in his bedroom...after Lolly left he tried to keep himself busy with some paper work but his mind refused to concentrate....so he decided to go take a nap to reboot his brain and maybe he can get some work done cause his employees needs to get paid in a couple of days....Now he's dreaming of his late baby girl holding his hands tight crying trying to pull him out of the dark hole he slipped and fell into....he's holding on to the edge of the hole so he doesn't drop inside and Jabulile is trying to pull him out with her tiny hands \*\*\*

Lile: papa...papa..phuma (come out)

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Lile: papa phuma

\*\*\*he could feel himself slipping inside slowly\*\*\*

Lile: nooo bhuti lets help papa.... bhuti sheshisa (brother hurry up)

\*\*\*Jabu wanted to say something but his lips felt like they are glued together so tears just fell uncontrollably....he then felt a hand grabbing his leg inside the dark hole pulling him down roughly and he fell inside the dark hole trying to scream out loud but his lips still felt glued together\*\*\*

.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

\*\*\*Alphalette did go to Jabu's house and he cleansed the whole house and Jabu's clothes and he also cleansed Jabu and ordered that no one should sleep in the house for three days....Jabu Heath and Alpha are now outside while Ruslan and Castiel are inside the main bedroom busy\*\*\*

Castiel: ok what's going on

Ruslan: a monster was created man

\*\*\*he said with a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Castiel: what are you talking about Madou

Ruslan: what im about to show you keep it to yourself Cass....we are not getting involved with this....let things play out....

Castiel: can you just be frank with me

\*\*\*Ruslan put his hands on his crystal ball and his eyes turned all white and he chanted a spell using an ancient language and the crystal ball showed them something...

Castiel: damn.....

Ruslan: we gonna sit back and watch...im serious Castiel

\*\*\*he said still with his eyes still white\*\*\*

Castiel: I hear you man

Ruslan: good

\*\*\*then his eyes turned back to normal and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: let me put a protection spell in here

Castiel: sboshwa needs to move out and buy another house

Ruslan: yeah you're right but for now he needs it

## OUTSIDE

Jabu: thaa for coming man

Alpha: don't do that man...you know we have each other's backs

Jabu: yeah but still thanks....my body even feels light

Alpha: that's good to hear

Jabu: I got a call from Gee man...it felt weird hearing his voice

Heath: yeah....which reminds me that I have an appointment with him tomorrow morning

Alpha: about installing the security system

Heath: yeah

Jabu: he's protective of this woman neh

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: and it worries me....

Heath: why

Alpha: he's about to complicate the girl's life man....he hasn't dealt with what he went through when he disappeared and he also hasn't dealt with his wife cheating on him with Mdu.....the new baby.....the betrayal of a family member...i can go on and on

Jabu: and people want you to forget about everything and move on as if you're a robot mxm

\*\*\*he said looking at Heath\*\*\*

Heath: why are you looking at me like that

Jabu: Judas Iscariot

Alpha: hebaan

Heath: so im Judas for telling you the truth

Jabu: what truth....that I should turn my heart into stone and not feel anything....at least Ma was better she wanted me to get closure....where else everyone want me to move on just like that as if I never loved her

\*\*\*Alpha kept quiet cause he could sense the tension between the brothers\*\*\*

Heath: mxm you don't get it and you never will

Alpha: bo lova ( guys) do me one favour assomblief....don't let your differences about Amo come between you....Heath respect Jabu's decision man even if you don't agree with how he's handling things and Jabu understand that Heath is just worried about you like you would've been worried about him if he was in your shoes

Jabu: they don't get it Alpha and im tired....i don't want her back I just....

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: no one gets it so let's just drop it

\*\*\*Alphaette sighed he didn't wanna get involved with this...he has a lot he's dealing with \*\*\*

Alpha: let me get going I still need to go cleanse at the river before I pass by Gaza...shap majita

Heath&Jabu: shap

\*\*\*He got inside his car and drove off and Heath sighed\*\*\*

Heath: re shap right ( we are good right)

Jabu: sho ke tla reng.... Modimo a re o re itshwarele melato ya rona jaaka le rona re itshwarela ba ba molato le rona ( yeah what can I say....God says forgive us our trespasses as if we forgive those who trespass against us)

Heath: im not even gonna comment on that

\*\*\*he shook his head and they saw Castiel and Ruslan walking out of the house\*\*\*

Ruslan: come and lock up

\*\*\*Jabu sighed and walked towards the house\*\*\*

---

## AT TSHIMO'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Alphalette opened the gate and walked inside the yard....there are two cars parked on the drive way and he recognizes the one he send to Gaza but he doesn't recognize the smaller one and he concludes that it belongs to the lady of the house...he gets to the door and knocks and the door opens and Tshimo opens\*\*\*

Alpha: hi

\*\*\*Tshimo sees the beads and bends her knees a bit and hits her palms together looking down\*\*\*

Tshimo: Thokoza Mkhulu

\*\*\*a smile reaches Alphalette 's face\*\*\*

Alpha: forgive me....Thokoza Gogo

\*\*\*she stood up straight looking up at him and she smiled her beautiful smile\*\*\*

Tshimo: no stress Khulu

\*\*\*she said smiling\*\*\*

Alpha: is my brother Gaza in...my name is Alphalette

Tshimo: ooh yes he did tell me his brother is coming but he said Ntsako not Alphalette...please come in

\*\*\*he walked in\*\*\*

Alpha: my other name is Ntsako by the way

\*\*\*She smiled\*\*\*

Tshimo: ooh ok nice to finally meet you....please sit...I'll go call him

\*\*\*Alpha nodded and she walked away and he sighed...she's damn beautiful no wonder his brother is this protective of her....and her smile " he thought"...he smiled shaking his head...her soothing aura is refreshing and her smile just makes you smile too....She has a beautiful smile " he thought"...she reminds him of Masai's soothing aura...he sighed and shook off those thoughts and his mind went to Masai and he took out his phone and as he's about to call the hospital Gaza walked in followed by Tshimo....He got up and they bro hugged\*\*\*

Alpha: you look good with the new haircut and trimmed beard

\*\*\*Gaza laughed\*\*\*

Gaza: thanks man...come mama

\*\*\*Tshimo went closer to him\*\*\*

Gaza: this is Tshimologo....my heroine my prayer warrior and my Angel on earth

\*\*\*she looked down shyly and Alpha looked at her with a smile and Gaza cleared his throat looking at his brother who was admiring Tshimo...he couldn't believe how short she is...Well she's not bad but Gaza never went for short girls before he loves them tall and slender with models bodies...just like his wife and any other woman he dated before he met Marina his wife...Alpha looked at Gaza and found him frowning looking at him\*\*\*

Alpha: ummm yeah nice to finally put a face to a name Tshimo

Tshimo: same here

Gaza: mmmh...please excuse us mama

Tshimo: ok no problem....nice meeting you Alphalette Ntsako

\*\*\*Alpha chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: sho

Tshimo: ooh before I forget...should I serve you now

\*\*\*she asked Gaza\*\*\*

Gaza: don't worry I'll do it wena go and rest you had a long day at work

Tshimo: ok...feel at home Ntsako

Alpha: yes mam



\*\*\*she went to her bedroom and Gaza stood there looking at Alpha with a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Alpha: what

Gaza: don't turn us into enemies by lusting over her

\*\*\*Alphalette frowned\*\*\*

Alpha: what

Gaza: those thoughts keep them to yourself Ntsako

\*\*\*Alphalette frowned some more\*\*\*

Alpha: what are you talking about man

Gaza: exactly that

\*\*\*he sat down and so did Alpha\*\*\*

Alpha: why would you say that to me Gee

Gaza: she's off limits Alpha....off limits!!

\*\*\*Alphalette chuckled not believing what he was witnessing \*\*\*

Alpha: dude I don't even see her that way.....she just has that nice

Sponsored

AD

soothing aura about her and a beautiful smile....

\*\*\*Alpha chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Alpha: you need to deal with your wife cheating on you man....im not Mdu.... im not jealous of you or want everything you have....get over yourself man its not cute

\*\*\*Gaza didn't say anything\*\*\*

Alpha: you'll lose shorty if you keep acting like this....you two are not even dating but you're already being possessive...get hold of yourself and fix your shit

\*\*\*he got up\*\*\*

Gaza: sit down and stop being emotional

Alpha: wa hlanya look who's talking

\*\*\*Gaza got up\*\*\*

Gaza: I'll bring our food and drinks....Tshimo cooked

\*\*\*Alpha sighed and sat down...Gaza brought their food and drinks and they ate watching Tv\*\*\*

Gaza: how's Masa

\*\*\* he changed the topic\*\*\*

Alpha: she'll be fine

Gaza: she hasn't woken up yet

Alpha: no

Gaza: we can postpone the trip Ntsako...i can just call baba and ask him not to tell anyone about my reappearance....he can come this side to see me and I can go back with him and you'll follow later

\*\*\*Alpha didn't say anything\*\*\*

Gaza: just think about it tonight ...im back man and you don't have to do everything alone....now we share responsibilities like we always have

Alpha: mxm I can't believe you thought I want your short base Gee

Gaza: I thought we are over that Ntsako come on

Alpha: you didn't even apologize

Gaza: sorry...happy now

Alpha: you don't even mean it

Gaza: how do you know

Alpha: I just know ok

Gaza: na wena stop looking at her like that with that stupid smile on your face ...im sure you wouldn't want me looking at Masai like that

Alpha: what smile

Gaza: that "you are my crush" smile...i don't like it period

\*\*\*Alpha laughed\*\*\*

Alpha: Masai needs to know about this

\*\*\*Gaza looked at him\*\*\*

Gaza: you would tell your girlfriend that you have a crush on another woman

Alpha: I'll tell her you think I have a crush on your love interest which I dont

Gaza: what love interest

\*\*\*Alpha chuckled\*\*

Alpha: she's gonna drive you mad.... she's already driving you mad and you're not even dating.... you're even accusing me of wanting her....please deal with your insecurities and stop bleeding on some of us

Gaza: are you done Dr Phil

Alpha: mxm

Gaza: anyway how's Jabu...you said you are going to his house

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: ai that wife of his planted muthi in his house and a dangerous one....it was going to make him hurt his chosen one....that woman has turned into something I don't understand.....and im not even sure he's gonna end up with his chosen one....everything is just messed up

Gaza: ok im lost...what chosen one now....you told me about his wife sleeping with a cultist and that resulted in their daughter dying and now you're saying he has a chosen one

Alpha: he always had one but he's too blind to see it

\*\*\*Alpha sighed and he told Gaza everything about Jabu and Amo\*\*\*

Gaza: damn and she doesn't learn neh

Alpha: this girl never accepted Jabu as he is....i think she was always embarrassed by him...you know Javas Gee....he 'll always be Jabu even if he can be a billionaire but she thought she can change him and turn him to look like Heath and Big Ray but Jabu will always be Jabu so her envy grew and brought out her other side and she started crushing on Heath and that's when she stopped feeling Jabu but the problem is Javas loves her man and he's finding it hard to let go and accept that his marriage is over and that he failed at finding love again

Gaza: yah neh

Alpha: but what he doesn't know is love is staring him in the face but he's too blind and broken to see it...that's why I say it will be a miracle if him and his chosen get together and fall in love and build a family because Amo messed up our boy

Gaza: maybe he needs some help

Alpha: his brothers tried to talk to him but I don't think he even listened to them

Gaza: maybe they didn't try hard enough

Alpha: or maybe a vacation might help

Gaza: mmmmh maybe....

\*\*\*he said staring into space with his jaws clenched ....he then blinked fast and stopped then he started eating\*\*\*

Alpha: you ok

Gaza: yeah im good.....so should I call baba tomorrow

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: i already told Masai's mother im leaving tomorrow so lets get this over and done with.....we will pass by Ma's house before hi famba ( we go)...i haven't told her about you being found

\*\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: ok as long as you're not under pressure then its cool

Alpha: mmmmh

---

## AT AMO'S HOME

\*\*\*The two men burned a jackal's tail on the key hole of the back door for some time as they wore breathing masks and when they were satisfied with the amount of smoke that got in the house they bend the burglar door upwards to create a space to enter the house..... They used their technics to open the door and slid down the bend burglar door and went inside \*\*\*

Man1: let's make this quick...i need to rest I have a long journey tomorrow

Man2: vele you leaving me behind

Man; you said you'll come on Saturday or Sunday moes

Man1: eish ok

\*\*\*They got in the room and found Amo's mother sleeping and continued to burn the Jackal's tail until they were satisfied about the amount of smoke filling the room then they went to the other bedroom and Amo was sleeping there and did the same and stood there watching her sleeping\*\*\*

Man2: are you sure about this man

Man1: hundreds....she needs to go

Man2: ai ok

\*\*\*They carefully picked Amo and took her to the lounge and did the same with her mother.....they went back to the bedrooms and turned them upside down making sure they don't make loud noise for the neighbours to hear....then they turned the lounge upside down too and Man2 went to fill a bucket he found in the bathroom with water and went back to the lounge and poured the water on them....they woke up gasping for air and when they saw guns pointed at them they tried to scream but the guys indicated they shouldn't make noise\*\*\*

Man1: you scream you die it's as simple as that

Amo: please don't kill us im begging you...you can take anything but please don't kill us

Man1: did I say talk!!

\*\*\*he said angrily and Amo kept quiet with fear all over her face\*\*\*

Man1: ndoda take the TV to the car

Man2: huh...ooh yah

\*\*\*he cleared his throat and went to take the 40 inch flat screen TV and he took the burglar door keys in the kitchen and opened the burglar door and walked out with the TV\*\*\*

Amo's mother: my son please you don't have to do thi...

\*\*\*the guy hit her with the back of his gun and she collapsed on the floor...As Amo was about to scream the guy crooked his gun and she put her hands on her mouth crying silently looking at her mother unconscious on the floor\*\*\*

Man1: you know I hate women like you

\*\*\*Amo just cried looking at him shaking with fear\*\*\*

Man1: you had a second chance in life and you decided to make the wrong choice....you should've counted your loses and moved on and trust me none of this would be happening but not you right....not the mighty Amo you do know that witchcraft is additive right....it's like the nyaope drug once you start it's hard to stop...most times people don't even want to stop that's why you wanted to turn your husband into a play thing you can control for your selfish reasons right

\*\*\*Amo continued to cry with her hand on her mouth shaking...she shook her head no\*\*\*

Man1: on your way to hell always think of the second chance in life you wasted because you thought o sgora...you forgot that your husband has people who actually care about him.... I don't kill innocent women so know that you're on the list of evil ones

\*\*\* then three bullets penetrated her chest...he used a gun with a silencer and she fell on the floor as she struggled to breath as blood choked her and the man crouched next to her and grabbed her left hand roughly with gloves on and removed her expensive wedding ring\*\*\*

Man1: you don't deserve to wear this

\*\*\*he stood up right and pointed the gun at her again and she looked at him begging him with her eyes and he shot her on her head and she took her last breath as the other man walked in\*\*\*

Man2: damn

Man1: let check if we didn't leave any traces of us

\*\*\*they checked and walked out leaving the door and burglar door wide open.... they got in the car parked three houses away from the crime scene and got in then they drove off\*\*\*

Man2: what are we gonna do with small TV

Man1: I don't know...you'll see what to do with it but don't keep it or sell it yourself

\*\*\*the other guy nodded driving as they took off their masks and hand gloves \*\*\*

---

AT TSHIMO'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Tshimo jumped up frightened when she felt a figure climb on her bed \*\*\*

Gaza: relax its me Gaza

\*\*\*she held her chest as her heart beat fast\*\*\*

Tshimo: are you out of your mind....you almost gave me a heart attack!!!

Gaza: sorry...i couldn't sleep so I thought I should come and cuddle with you

Tshimo: really Gaza

Gaza: yeah....i have a key so I didn't wanna wake you up by knocking

\*\*\*she couldn't believe what she was hearing\*\*\*

Tshimo: bathong

Gaza: can we just sleep please...i just wanna cuddle so I can sleep...im nervous about tomorrow  
so ...

\*\*she sighed and laid down...Gaza joined her inside her covers and held her from behind \*\*\*

Tshimo: no funny business and I mean it

Gaza: I promise and plus I can't have s\*x until im cleansed so relax mama

Tshimo: still this is wrong....we shouldn't be cuddling like this you are married

Gaza: can we sleep please I have a long journey ahead tomorrow...please mama

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: ooh and if you feel something poking you in the morning don't panic...he always has a  
mind of his own

Tshimo: yho Modimo waka!!!

\*\*\*he chuckled and pulled her closer and closed his eyes\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

17

AT TSHIMO'S PLACE

Gaza: you didn't go

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: yeah

Gaza: why

\*\*\*she sighed again...they are packing groceries in the cupboards\*\*\*

Tshimo: I understood what you said....when it comes to my gift or my spirituality I take any advice or message seriously I don't just cast it away just like that...i analyze it and connect with my guides and ask them to give me a sign ... and plus I wasn't feeling the outing anyways.... I just wanted to fit in nje

Gaza: you don't need to fit in mama.... you're perfect the way you are...trust me on that

Tshimo: you're just saying that to make me feel better

\*\*\*she said rolling her eyes\*\*\*

Gaza: im telling you the truth mama ... never give in to peer pressure

Tshimo: I think im kinda jealous of her

\*\*\*she said pouting and Gaza frowned\*\*\*

Gaza: jealous of who

Tshimo: my colleague....the one that organized the outing.....she got engaged yesterday and she wanted to go out and celebrate her engagement

Gaza: so you're jealous of that

\*\*\*he was confused\*\*\*

Tshimo: not that ....she's getting married Gee and I've been single for months

Gaza: so

Tshimo: don't say so.....i probably have a spider web down there.....imagine cutting the grass all the damn time and no game is ever played there mxm...maybe I should just let the grass grow and a forest is formed cause gwa tshwana mos

\*\*\*Gaza looked at her with a shocked look\*\*\*

Tshimo: some girls are lucky shem....three months into a relationship and she's engaged...maybe she used makhanana vista mxm...makhanana vista or not she's lucky shem and I wish her well in her soon to be marriage because that's all some of us are good at...wishing the lucky ones well in their marriages while re le mafetwa....life is unfair yho

\*\*\*Gaza just shook his head\*\*\*

Gaza: marriage is overrated mama....well some are good but some not so good...if you're lucky you might end up with a good partner and live happily with challenges here and there ofcourse but if not you'll live in hell and if that happens it's either you leave willingly or utelele hi tlhelo ra wena ra le ndzhaku andeni ka bokisi ( or laying on your back in a coffin) so don't just wanna marry cause everyone is doing it or you think your time is running out....gwa nyiwa ( its bad) out there mama....abantu baya gowisha ( people are going through the most)

\*\*\*Tshimo laughed at the last part \*\*\*

Tshimo: mxm says a married man

\*\*\*Gaza kept quiet\*\*\*

Tshimo: you know my last relationship was with a guy I thought was a bachelor only to find out that he's actually married with kids and the wife was pregnant also....

\*\*\*she laughed remembering everything\*\*\*



Tshimo: the fool even bought a fully furnished apartment in Karen Park where I used to visit him just to cover for his lies....satan nxa!

\*\*\*Gaza frowned looking at her \*\*\*

Tshimo: he would lie and say he's going on a business trip khante nope sephinya sela ( that fart) was going home to his wife

Gaza: I hope you walked away mama

\*\*\*she sighed sitting down on the barstool\*\*\*

Tshimo: I eventually did but I loved him Gee so much I saw a future with him....he even tried to convince me to stay by saying he's gonna divorce her after she gives birth blah blah blah

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes \*\*\*

Tshimo: I was naïve Gee.... damn i stayed...i feel like a fool now that I think about it ...i stayed cause I was desperate....and the funny thing is I still am

\*\*\*she laughed with tears in her eyes\*\*\*

Tshimo: im desperate for a family of my own cause im lonely I have no one.... it's just me.....Gee I hurt another woman by dating her husband even though I didn't know at first but I eventually did and I chose to stay regardless because of desperation..... I even lost contact with my guides because I chose to stay with that kind of man and hurt another woman

\*\*\*Tears ran down her cheeks and she quickly wiped them\*\*\*

Tshimo: they punished me Gee....everything in my life was falling apart.... I once even got a verbal warning at my old job from my boss because I used to skip work and cry myself to depression when he went to visit his wife....until one day I had a dream of my mother and she was livid...she scolded me in that dream she said she's gonna take me to come and join her since im failing myself in the land of the living....she was livid I've never seen her like that when she was still alive....i remember I woke up sweating and shaking and after that I walked away and I have been single...

\*\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: why do you say you're lonely...don't you have family members...cousins...aunts and so on

Tshimo: they don't like me.... they never even liked my mother and brother so im all alone...and im talking about her sisters and brothers and even my grandparents....i don't know why even today...they just never hid that they don't like us they treated us differently and they still treat me like trash even today...mom knew why but she never

told me...when I asked her she would get sad and that will just mess up the rest of her day so I stopped asking

\*\*\*she shrug her shoulders\*\*\*

Gaza: well not anymore....you have me and my brothers.....from here onwards never feel lonely when im still alive mama ok

\*\*\*she looked at him with tears in her eyes and she nodded\*\*\*

Tshimo: thank you

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice\*\*\*

Gaza: you don't need to thank me.....always remember...blood makes you related but loyalty makes you family....anyone especially those that you share blood relations with if they are not loyal to you they are not your family they just related to you by blood

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Gaza: and im not leaving for good....i just need to see my son and father and check on my businesses....we will talk over the phone and even video all everyday

\*\*\*tears ran down her cheeks and she wiped them off\*\*\*

Gaza: you're part of my life now mama....better get used to it ok

\*\*\*she nodded wiping her tears off and he pulled her up and he hugged her tight and she wrapped her arms around his waist and rested her head on his lower chest\*\*\*

Gaza: I called Ntsako today and he came

\*\*\*she tried to get out of his hold to look at him but he didn't let her\*\*\*

Gaza: tomorrow I might be leaving with him but I'll be back....i won't go back to Bushbuckridge without seeing you

\*\*\*she swallowed hard and sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: ok

Gaza: im not leaving you alone mama....you are a part of me ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he kissed her on top of her head\*\*\*

-----

## AT MASAI AND MOERA'S APARTMENT

\*\*\* Moera is busy pacing up and down crying and trying to find a solution to the problem she created...she looked down at her twin who was still passed out on the floor bleeding worse part Alphalette has been calling Masai for some time now and she let the phone ring to voicemail.... She quickly moved the table that's on the lounge mat and put it on top of a couch then she grabbed her legs and pulled her on top of the lounge mat and went to find a seal tape and wrapped her with the lounge mat then she put the tape around the lounge mat and she sat down on the floor and looked at the lounge mat while shaking and sobbing\*\*\*

Moera: im sorry but...you can't have it all...you can't....i love you but you can't

\*\*\*she sniffed and sobbed for some time then she picked her phone and made a call\*\*\*

Drench: this is a nice surprise

\*\*\*he said sounding happy that she called him\*\*\*

Moera: help me Dre

\*\*\*she said crying \*\*\*

Drench: sh\*t ummm...where are you

\*\*\*she heard some shuffling from his side \*\*\*

Moera: I think I killed her

\*\*\*the shuffling stopped as she said that in a whisper shaking with tears all over her face\*\*\*

Drench: killed who

Moera: Masai....my twin....i swear Dre I didn't mean to I swear...she slapped me and I punched her I think too hard

Drench: sh\*t ok...calm down....did you check her pulse

\*\*\*she shook her head no like he can see her\*\*\*

Drench: Moera!!

Moera: no

Drench: check her pulse and we'll take it from there

Moera: I already wrapped her up with the lounge mat

Drench: without checking her pulse first Mo are you kidding me!!!

Moera: I panicked ok

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Drench: she's your twin Mo not some random person....unwrap her and check her pulse and if she's alive call an ambulance and if not stay put someone will come and take care of the body

\*\*\*she cried\*\*\*

Moera: I didn't mean to kill her

Drench: you don't know if she's dead or not....do as I tell you...now

Moera: ok

Drench: Moera now and don't drop the call

\*\*\*she got up and went to get a knife and she cut the seal tape and unwrapped it around the lounge mat and also unrolled the mat and she looked at Masai...she slowly went closer and checked her pulse and it was there \*\*\*

Moera: ooh my Gosh...Dre she's still alive...what if she tells on me Dre...i can't have that....they'll hate me....she can't always win Dre she can't

Drench: hey hey!!! That's your f\*cken twin Moera....the sweet girl you always protected from harm's way and now you wanna end her....are you out of your f\*cken mind!!!.... Now get rid of the seal tape and call an ambulance and stop pissing me off

\*\*\*she sniffed\*\*\*

Drench: you said she slapped you first so you were defending yourself....Alex trained you so your punch is not a normal woman's punch so call an ambulance and get it together for f\*cks sake

\*\*\*she got up went to dispose of the seal tape and she came back and took her phone and dropped the call and she called an ambulance and sat there looking at Masai unconscious on top of the lounge mat...minutes later she heard a knock on the door and she quickly got up and went to open thinking it's the paramedics but she got the shock of her life \*\*\*

Alpha: is everything ok....where's Masai and my son

\*\*\*he said frowning looking at her messed up face...he was breathing heavily cause on his way here he started having a bad feeling...he even called Gaza and Mpande to tell them to be safe and when his mind went to Masai he thought maybe its her Lupus acting up again so he drove here like a maniac\*\*\*

Moera: she....ummm

\*\*\* she said shaking and he pushed her out of the way and rushed in and what he saw was like a blow to the chest for him....he rushed to her with his hands shaking not believing what he was seeing\*\*\*

Alpha: baby...Mamakhe...

\*\*\*he said hitting her cheek gently with his shaking hands and she didn't move...he checked her pulse and it was there but now weak\*\*\*

Moera: I...i called an ambulance its on its way

\*\*\*she said shaking and Alpha looked at her briefly so to ask her what happened and his eyes caught the bruises on her right hand knuckles..... he clenched his jaws and concentrated on Masai with his mind running wild\*\*\*

Alpha: Masai...baby open your eyes please

\*\*\*still nothing....right then they heard a knock and Moera went to open and it was the paramedics....they rushed to Masai and Alpha moved away so they get busy with her....he looked around the lounge and he could see where she fell and it looked like she was dragged to the carpet....he saw the table on top of the couch and when he looked down his eyes caught a knife on the carpet and he went to it as the Paramedics were busy with Masai and also asking questions to Moera who was crying unable to tell them what actually happen but she could answer when they asked her whether or not she has a medical aid or if she has any chronic diseases .... he took out his handkerchief and picked it up and he could see a small seal tape on it then he turned to Moera who had her eyes popped out looking at him and what he's holding\*\*\*

Paramedic: you'll ride with us or follow us

\*\*\*they asked Moera\*\*\*

Alpha: she's riding with you

\*\*\*they looked at him then at Moera and they pushed the stretcher outside where people were watching and whispering asking each other what happened while Moera followed the paramedics to the ambulance....Alpha went to Masai's bedroom and picked inside and his son was sleeping peacefully then he went back to the lounge and took out his phone and made a call\*\*\*

Voice: don't tell me you're cancelling your visit with your people for this Saturday boy

\*\*\*he sighed \*\*\*

Alpha: no im not ma.....im calling cause something...bad happened

\*\*\*she kept quiet and her mind went to the bad feeling she had earlier on\*\*\*

Doris: are my babies ok

\*\*\*she said in a whisper tone \*\*\*

Alpha: Masai...i found her bruised bleeding and unconscious with Moera

\*\*\*Doris kept quiet\*\*\*

Doris: o batla go ntho o reng mosimane ( what are you actually trying to say to me boy)

Alpha: I don't know what happened.... I got here and I found Moera with tears all over her face and.... I pushed myself in and I found Masai bruised bleeding and unconscious on top of the carpet...it looks like she was dragged to the carpet.... Moera also has bruised knuckles....

\*\*\*he said with a calm voice but he was fuming inside \*\*\*

Alpha: I also found a knife on the carpet with small seal tape on it.....i don't know what happened here but deal with it before I do ma cause if I do ku ta ku nuheni xidumbu kungafangi munu ( you'll smell a dead person's body where there's none)....she was taken to the hospital I'll keep you updated until you get here or you can call your....other daughter

\*\*\*then he dropped the call looking angry....he went to the kitchen and opened the dustbin and found the rest of the used seal tape and he closed his eyes then opened them....he found a shopping bag and he picked the used seal tape and put it inside and he went to take the knife too.... he looked at the lounge mat and you could see it was just rolled over and unrolled again...he clenched his jaws with his hands shaking and he went to Masai's bedroom to take his son\*\*\*

## AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\*Alphalette walked in holding his sleeping son and he found Moera sitting in the emergency sitting room staring into space....he sat down and looked at her reading her....he wished he could strangle her until she took her last breath....her sight made him feel sick to the stomach...he chuckled shaking his head right then he heard Mpande's voice and Mpande rushed to Alphalette looking worried \*\*\*

Mpande: how is she

Alpha: I just got here...why don't you ask her

\*\*\*he looked over and saw Moera looking not so good...he went to her and sat next to her\*\*\*

Mpande: how is she

\*\*\*she shrug her shoulders\*\*\*

Moera: they are still busy with her

\*\*\*she said in a whisper tone \*\*\*

Mpande: don't worry uzoba right ok

\*\*\*she nodded wiping her tears off\*\*\*

Alpha: why Moera

\*\*\*he couldn't hold himself ....he was angry \*\*\*

Alpha: what did she do to you

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Mpande: Alphie zikhiphani ( Alphie what's going on)

Alpha: this bitch attacked Masai....her own twin

Mpande: heh

\*\*\*he said shocked and he moved away from Moera who rolled her eyes luckily they didn't see her cause she's looking away\*\*\*

Alpha: and I wanna know why

Mpande: she did what

Alpha: I said why damn it!!!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice and Moera looked at him straight in the eyes\*\*\*

Moera: that's between me and her so stay out of our business and plus she slapped me first and I was defending myself

\*\*\* Alphalette chuckled pissed to the core while Mpande looked at Moera shocked and he moved further away from her\*\*\*

Mpande: heh imohlolo....a sweet girl disappeared and Helga surfaced njalo nje ( just like that) ....what 's cooking after baking la Alphie

Alpha: Mpande meet the real Moera....the jealous

Sponsored

AD

bleeding and unconscious on top of the carpet...it looks like she was dragged to the carpet...

Moera also has bruised knuckles....

\*\*\*he said with a calm voice but he was fuming inside \*\*\*

Alpha: I also found a knife on the carpet with small seal tape on it....i don't know what happened here but deal with it before I do ma cause if I do ku ta ku nuheni xidumbu kungafangi munu ( you'll smell a dead person's body where there's none)....she was

taken to the hospital I'll keep you updated until you get here or you can call your....other daughter

\*\*\*then he dropped the call looking angry....he went to the kitchen and opened the dustbin and found the rest of the used seal tape and he closed his eyes then opened them....he found a shopping bag and he picked the used seal tape and put it inside and he went to take the knife too.... he looked at the lounge mat and you could see it was just rolled over and unrolled again...he clenched his jaws with his hands shaking and he went to Masai's bedroom to take his son\*\*\*

## AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\*Alphalette walked in holding his sleeping son and he found Moera sitting in the emergency sitting room staring into space....he sat down and looked at her reading her....he wished he could strangle her until she took her last breath....her sight made him feel sick to the stomach...he chuckled shaking his head right then he heard Mpande's voice and Mpande rushed to Alphalette looking worried \*\*\*

Mpande: how is she

Alpha: I just got here...why don't you ask her

\*\*\*he looked over and saw Moera looking not so good...he went to her and sat next to her\*\*\*

Mpande: how is she

\*\*\*she shrug her shoulders\*\*\*

Moera: they are still busy with her

\*\*\*she said in a whisper tone \*\*\*

Mpande: don't worry uzoba right ok

\*\*\*she nodded wiping her tears off\*\*\*

Alpha: why Moera

\*\*\*he couldn't hold himself ....he was angry \*\*\*

Alpha: what did she do to you

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Mpande: Alphie zikhiphani ( Alphie what's going on)

Alpha: this bitch attacked Masai....her own twin



Mpande: heh

\*\*\*he said shocked and he moved away from Moera who rolled her eyes luckily they didn't see her cause she's looking away\*\*\*

Alpha: and I wanna know why

Mpande: she did what

Alpha: I said why damn it!!!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice and Moera looked at him straight in the eyes\*\*\*

Moera: that's between me and her so stay out of our business and plus she slapped me first and I was defending myself

\*\*\* Alphalette chuckled pissed to the core while Mpande looked at Moera shocked and he moved further away from her\*\*\*

Mpande: heh imohlolo....a sweet girl disappeared and Helga surfaced njalo nje ( just like that) ...what 's cooking after baking la Alphie

Alpha: Mpande meet the real Moera....the jealous envious pretentious and evil Moera  
\*\*\*she huffed and looked away with her chest going up and down\*\*\*

Alpha: that day she embarrassed you....i walked her out and told her where to get off and I think that's where everything started right Mo

Mpande: what's this all about Alphie

Alpha: this thing has a crush on me or she just envies Masai cause Masai used to tell me that she's rooting for us to be a couple so I think It's more of envy than a crush...why do you think she was asking you about me instead that day

\*\*\*Mpande kept quiet thinking then he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Alpha: Masai has always been the weak one between them well that's what she thought....while this bitch was always the protector.... the fighter....their pillar of strength....she loves the attention and to play heroine to be needed and praised....Masai trusted her and that made her feel important and superior to her....Masai always needed her and she fed off that until I came and took over then she started feeling useless and not needed ....and right then that's when the beast came out and she started giving Masa an attitude and showing her true colours

\*\*\* Mpande looked at Moera with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Alpha: am I lying Mo

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Alpha: where were you going to dump her.... I saw the knife and the tape and also noticed the lounge mat was rolled up....did you roll her up and decided otherwise before you could go and dump her somewhere

Mpande: Alpha uthini manje.... (Alpha what are you saying now) you mean she wanted to get rid of evidence

Alpha: stop pretending Moera I know and see the real you.... show your true self and stop giving out this caring person that's not you and you know it

Moera: F\*CK YOU....AND GO TO HELL!!!.....ITS ALL YOUR FAULT ALL OF IT....YOU WERE NOT SUPPOSED TO LOVE HER NXA

\*\*\*she said getting up roughly waking up AJ....he opened his eyes and when he saw his father he smiled briefly and sleep took over again\*\*\*

Mpande: ubipolar lo ( this one is bipolar)

Moera: bipolar ke mmao nxa ( bipolar is your mother)

\*\*\* and she walked away\*\*\*

Mpande: athi uma wenzani lo ( what did she say about my mother)

\*\*\*He asked getting up and Alphalette breathed out calming down and he shook his head\*\*\*

Alpha: let her go she's not worth it man

\*\*\*Mpande sat down again and they kept quiet \*\*\*

Mpande: did what just happened...just happen

\*\*\*he asked still shocked\*\*\*

Alpha: f\*ck.... it kills me inside that I can't do anything to that bitch cause it will hurt Masai and my soon to be in laws.....yesees mmmmh

\*\*\*he said clenching his jaws\*\*\*

Mpande: ok it did happen

\*\*\*he said to himself and he looked down thinking hard\*\*\*

-----

AT DORIS'S HOUSE

\*\*\*she's crying and Vee is consoling her\*\*\*

Doris: I should've done something back then Vee....i should've done something back then when Aunt Maria told me about what happened to ma and aunt Masi and the curse

Vee: you didn't know the curse only happens to twin girls only...that sangoma didn't tell you that...you thought since it didn't affect you and your twin sister and you cleansed it ended there....Le yena ler\*tenyana la gagwe la go jewa ke diboko nxa....what kind of a sangoma is he that misses such a serious and life threatening detail

Doris: why did mama do this to us mara....and Aunt Masi why did she curse mama like that... didn't she think of us

Vee: she was angry and dying and your mother didn't even show any remorse to what she did...how can you give your twin slow poison all for a man...like she killed him slowly as she pretended to be taking care of her..... no man mme wa gao o ne a na le a vuilig hart ka go bolella ( your mother had an evil heart im telling you)

Doris: even if I get Moera help how will we know if the curse is uplifted and again their relationship will never be same again....i should've done something Vee now my baby might be dead or laying in the hospital fighting for her life

\*\*\*she said crying painfully\*\*\*

Doris: the traditional doctor passed on so did Aunt Maria...where will I get help and will it work

Vee: we will consult until we find help now let me pack for us because tomorrow morning you need to be strong for Masai

Doris: what about Hills

Vee: we will tell her tomorrow morning....let her sleep...she's stressed about facing that mgodoyi ( dog) so let her rest tonight

\*\*\*she nodded and Vee gave her her sleeping pills and went to pack for them....she needed the sleep tonight to deal with the storm she's about to face\*\*\*

-----

## AT TSHIMO'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Alphalette called Gaza and told him about Masai being in hospital and what happened then he told him Mpande will bring him a car a card and the clothes he left at his house when he came to visit the last time...He didn't have a problem with that but he was worried about Alpha. The fact that he said to him that it kills him that he can't do anything to the other twin sister cause Masai and his soon to be in laws will be hurt pissed him off....he was angry because of the betrayal of family members the same people that are suppose to protect and be loyal to you and this time it was worse cause it was Masai's twin....someone she shared a womb with for nine months and that was sickening to him....he sat up on the bed and took his phone and went to his notes and he opened the only one that's there and he looked at all the names written there then he added another one\*\*\*

Gaza: I guess I'll have to start this list from the bottom now....she's lucky she got to live....she should thank Ntsako's conscious for that nxa

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws looking at her name getting angry again....he laid back on the bed looking up at the ceiling imagining how he should do it\*\*\*

-----

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO



Sbu: no baba

Jabu: then talk cause ge nka go tshwara ka laka letsogo o tsoga mmuchareng ko frijing ( cause if I lay my hands on you you'll wake up at the mortuary in the freezer)

\*\*\*Sbu shook with fear\*\*\*

Sbu: i...i went there to scare her

Jabu: O re scare...scare Sbu???

\*\*\*he nodded and Jabu looked at how he was clinging to his schoolbag and he snatched it from him and Sbu looked at him with his eyes popped out as he opened it...he took out the brown envelop inside and he saw glue in there and a red mark pen and a red liquid that looked like blood inside the bag....Sbu out of fear he got up from the chair and attempted to run out of the kitchen but jabu grabbed his hoody pulling him back\*\*\*

Jabu: run again and o nnyela....run again and you'll see what I'll do to you!!!

\*\*\*he said to Sbu as he hid his face thinking Jabu is gonna slap him....Jabu pushed him to the chair he was sitting on before he attempted to run and Sbu sat down shaking with tears running down his cheeks.....Jabu took out the glue marker schoolbag and the bottle and he put them on top of the kitchen counter and he opened the brown envelope and he was shocked by what he finds\*\*\*

Jabu: what the hell is this...what do you have this many pictures of Jabulile

\*\*\*Sbu didn't say anything\*\*\*

Jabu: talk man!!!

\*\*\*he shouted at him and Sbu shook with fear\*\*\*

Sbu: I was....gonna paste them all over their living room to torture her

\*\*\* Jabu just looked at him\*\*\*

Sbu: I wanted her to think she's going crazy

Jabu: Sbu....

\*\*\*he said defeated\*\*\*

Sbu: she killed her baba....she took her away from us and she moves on as if nothing happened....i saw her....she doesn't even show that she regrets what she did....she was even laughing with some women in a restaurant looking happy while we suffer the aftermath of her actions

Jabu: how were you going to enter the house....and how did you even get there

Sbu: my friend bo...borrowed his mom's car and he also knows how to pick locks

\*\*\* Jabu frowned\*\*\*

Jabu: wait what friend?...you were not alone

\*\*\*Sbu shook his head and Jabu turned around and kicked the barstool and it fell on the floor making noise\*\*\*

Sbu: he's ...he's my witness that I didn't kill her....we found the door opened and we saw the bodies thinking gogo is also dead and he ran out....when I decided to follow him he had driven away leaving me there

Jabu: o sthuphethu ( a fool)...ba re show me your friends and I'll tell you who you are...

\*\*\*Sbu looked down embarrassed...he couldn't believe his trusted friend ran and left him there alone\*\*\*

Jabu: what kind of a friend leaves you behind like that

\*\*\*Sbu didn't say anything\*\*\*

Jabu: I want all his detail...where he's from his names and surname what he eats for breakfast lunch and supper his shoe size...his parents' names and where they work....i mean everything and your stupid friendship ends now!!!

\*\*\*Heath rushed down the stairs with a gun on his hands and he saw Jabu and Sbu in the kitchen area and he went to them putting his gun away\*\*\*

Heath: what's going on.... whats with the noise

\*\*\*he said as his eyes landed on the barstool on the floor and he looked at Sbu wearing all black from head to toe and he frowned confused...Sbu shook with fear as he looked at Heath....he knew he might get an a\$\$ whooping from him\*\*\*

Jabu: Mshikaro this boy o tlo mpolaya ka pelo straight ( this boy is gonna give me a heart attack)...eish....

\*\*\*he rubbed his eyes\*\*\*

Jabu: i got a call from him and he was crying and he told me to come and fetch him

Heath: fetch him from where

Jabu: Amo's place

Heath: heh???

\*\*\*he said looking at Sbu then he looked at Jabu\*\*\*

Jabu: I went there confused gore what is he doing there...i even had scenarios playing in my head as I drove like a maniac thinking maybe Amo send people to kidnap him and we didn't hear anything khanti no James Bond wa fonkhong here went there himself and guess what I found there

\*\*\*he sighed rubbing his eyes...he couldn't believe she's gone just like that\*\*\*

Jabu: Amo's dead body and her mother

Heath: wait what

\*\*\*he eyes went to Sbu\*\*\*

Sbu: I didn't kill her I swear I found them like that

Heath: WHAT WHERE YOU DOING THERE IN THE FIRST PLACE AT THIS TIME OF THE HOUR!!!

Jabu: a re to paste Lile's pictures all over the living room to torture her

Heath: wa gafa Sbu? ( are you crazy Sbu)

\*\*\*Sbu shook his head looking scared\*\*\*

Heath: f\*ck!!!

\*\*\*he said as he held on to the kitchen counter looking down\*\*\*

Jabu: did you touch anything in that house

\*\*\* he said with a low tone\*\*\*

Sbu: I touched her and her mother to...to see if they are still alive

Heath: were you wearing gloves when you touched them

Sbu: n...no...

\*\*\* Jabu slapped him on top of his head biting his lower lip and Sbu cried as he blocked his slaps\*\*\*

Heath: yho...Amen!!!

\*\*\*he said as he went to the fridge cause he felt his throat dry up immediately \*\*\*

Jabu: damn it Sbu!!! Uyahlanya yini ( are you crazy)...why would you touch someone whom you can clearly see is dead heh and without gloves...without gloves Sbu

Sbu: I wasn't thinking straight baba...i panicked and.....i....i just saw blood everywhere and I just....

\*\*\*he continued to cry\*\*\*

Heath: yho

Jabu: deal with this boy before I murder him with my bare hands nxa

\*\*\*he walked away \*\*\*

---



\*\*\* STILL AT HEATH'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Heath moved his waist going in and out of Naledi in a fast pace as Naledi moaned loud... he went hard and deep as their skin slapped each other making an arousing sound\*\*\*

Naledi: f\*ck Heath!!!

\*\*\*she said as she climaxed and her body shook as tears ran down her face and Heath didn't stop....he went harder on her as he groaned f\*cking her hard with veins popping all over his body...the pleasure they are feeling is out of this world....Naledi gasps for air as another orgasm hits her as he reaches her g-spot again and more tears came out and as for Heath he continued to ravage her nunu\*\*\*

Naledi: baby..... yhooh...Heath...go monate

\*\*\*she said as more tears of pleasure came out\*\*\*

Heath: I love you Naledi...i love you so damn much Obim

\*\*\*he said as he could feel he was about to release ....His hand on her thigh grabbed her tighter and his dick grew inside of her...he went faster and faster going deep as he screamed loud losing his mind and she screamed too as they both reached their happy ending together and Heath groaned loud convulsing as he filled her up\*\*\*

Heath: F\*CK!!!!!!!!!!

\*\*\*he said as he released his last drop inside of her and he collapsed on top of her....after some time he raised his head and he perked her lips \*\*\*

Heath: I needed that....thank you Obim

\*\*\*she just nodded and he slid out and he went to get the towel and he wiped himself then her and he laid down and pulled her to his chest and kissed her forehead and they slept\*\*\*

.

.

\*\*\*Heath woke up to his phone ringing and he let go of Naledi.....he was now cuddling her from behind..... he reached for his phone and checked the time and its around 6 in the morning...he answered the call\*\*\*

Heath: sho

Man: boss man ke Shapi...Detective Baloyi

Heath: sho Shapi...Dintshang ( what's up)

Detective: go gobe ( things are bad)...I've been trying to call Jabu but he's not answering

Heath: he's probably still sleeping.....dintshang ( what's wrong)

Detective: im here at his in laws house boss man

\*\*\*Heath bit his lower lip then he spoke\*\*\*

Heath: umm ok...what are you doing there....don't tell me its another Amo scandal...yeeer that woman ke attention seeker....what did she do now

\*\*\*Naledi turned and looked at him when she heard Amo's name\*\*\*

Detective: you should come down here with him boss man

Heath: what's going on Shapiro

\*\*\*he asked pretending to be worried \*\*\*

Detective: just come down here

Heath: ei man Shapiro just tell me what's going on....do you want me to drive there with Jabu for useless sh\*t

\*\*\*Naledi sighed and she sat up with her nunu throbbing....Anyway the detective sighed too over the phone\*\*\*

Detective: ke crime scene here

Heath: askies

Detective: it looks like a robbery gone wrong and the house looks messed up like they were searching for something.....but we will know soon gore what happened here cause le TV it was taken

Heath: is everyone ok

\*\*\*the detective sighed\*\*\*

Detective: eish boss....sorry but the madam didn't make it...her mother was knocked out but the madam eish...you should come now cause her brother fainted and they just took him and the mother to the hospital

\*\*\* Heath rubbed his eyes keeping quiet\*\*\*

Detective: boss man....hello....hello...

Heath: eish let me go wake Javas

Detective: sho....I'll update you

Heath: you do that

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and sighed...this was it "he thought"\*\*\*

Naledi: what's wrong...what happened

Heath: ahh ba re Amo was killed in a house robbery...let me go wake Javas

\*\*\*he said with a bored tone but deep down he's worried about Sbu....he's writing his last paper in two days' time and what he witnessed and the possibility of him getting arrested stresses him up\*\*\*

Naledi: what....ohh my Gosh

Heath: yeah...let me go wake Jabu up

Naledi: wait baby....you don't seem hurt

Heath: why should I Obim....that witch has caused my brother more harm than good....now Lile o imela ke mmu ( Lile is dead) because of her so I say good ridded to bad rubbish

\*\*\*He kissed her forehead and got out of bed naked and he reached for his pyjama pants wore them and he walked out bare footed as Naledi sat there shocked \*\*\*

Naledi: yho

\*\*\*She clapped her hands together in a dramatic way \*\*\*

.  
.

\*\*\* Heath knocked on Jabu's bedroom and opened the door and he walked in and found Jabu lying on his back with his arm on his forehead facing up with his eyes opened like he was thinking deeply and he sighed\*\*\*

Heath: Shapi called me

\*\*\*Jabu closed his eyes and didn't say anything then he opened them again and Heath sighed\*\*\*

Heath: we need to go to the crime scene because if you don't show up it will look suspicious

Jabu: did you do it

\*\*\*Heath raised his eyebrows\*\*\*

Heath: na me you dey ask that Mjava....me Heath

Jabu: you wanted her dead so ke denke eng Heath heh ( so what should I think)

\*\*\*Heath chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Heath: im not pissed because you're accusing me but pissed because you know that's not my style and I wouldn't quench ( kill) her like that in her home and traumatize the poor old woman like that..... so no I didn't.... and the truth is i was going to deal with her my way but I guess someone beat me to it... now listen here since we got that out of the

way don't ever in your life accuse me of sh\*t you dey hear....i will not take this nonsense from you again Jabu...never accuse me of sh\*t you dey hear me well well

Jabu: o lwelang( why are you fighting)

Heath: hai fok man

\*\*\*Jabu bit his lower lip and he sat up with his legs on the floor and he looked at Heath with a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Jabu: all of you wanted her gone so what was I supposed to think....now my son might be accused of killing her

Heath: wena you dey crazy...na juju dey make you go pong pong in that your stupid head....don't try me ooo...not today when im stressed about Sbu Jabu....i go vomit all my insults on that stupid head of yours that's full of Amo's sh\*t and traumatize you for the rest of your miserable life so don't try me ooo...i swear I go enter you just now ( I'll beat the hell out of you) ....mxm don't look for my trouble Jabu....don't wake a sleeping beast.... now stop all this nonsense and get up from that bed and lets go!!!

\*\*\*he said walking towards the door now talking to himself looking pissed\*\*\*

Heath: busy cho cho cho cho cho vomiting rubbish....he thinks I will quench ( kill) that thing and leave her body there as evidence...mxm thaaa tufiakwa ... imagine the insult....she would have disappeared without a trace but no this mumu thinks im that sloppy now...nxa the insult....he dey wake and decide to carry kata kata come my side this early morning mxm

\*\*\*He said as he ranted alone loud enough to hear him with a pissed off tone going back to the main bedroom and Jabu just sighed and he closed his eyes and opened them again and he took his phone and made a call\*\*\*

Castiel: sboshwa

Jabu: sho....

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: Amo was shot and killed at her home and the mother knocked out...it looks like a robbery gone wrong but we both know that might not be the case

Castiel: maybe it was haw....or what you want me to come and console you sboshwa

Jabu: I don't have time for your sh\*t Cass...all I want to know is was is you... I mean you did say you'll handle her yourself

\*\*\*he said calmly and Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: im laughing because I know you are bewitched so this is not you....maybe it's the mkhovu in you waking up because the creator is dead.....

\*\*\*then he became serious\*\*\*

Castiel: don't insult me like this ever again Jabu....a gun and robbery really man?.....im sure you're high from that sage the merman burned in your house.....ungazongijwaela kabi and don't even think of insulting Ruu by questioning him too....

\*\*\*Jabu sighed cause its true it's not him...they would have found her body in pieces if it was him\*\*\*

Jabu: it's not that ....it's just....

Castiel: haai stop it man what's wrong with you.....why do you even care who did it.....im sure you're possessed by a depressed and sexually starved demon from the pits of hell wena...this is not normal...im coming there and you better be ready to ask me that question face to face

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and Jabu sighed as he felt a headache attacking him...he laid down again and closed his eyes...stress is going to kill him " he thought to himself"

\*\*\*

---

## AT AMO'S HOUSE

\*\*\*It's packed outside the gate as Jabu and Heath park their car...Jabu takes a deep breath and sighs\*\*\*

Heath: are you ready

Jabu: I'll never be ready...lets just go

\*\*\*they got out of the car and walked inside ignoring the local paper journalists asking them questions...they walked to where Detective Baloyi ( Shapiro) is and found him with the two policemen that accompanied Amo to Jabu's place that time and Jabu sighed as they approached them\*\*\*

Heath: bantu bomthetho

\*\*\*they greeted back \*\*\*

D.Baloyi: this is Detective Mnguni and Detecti....

Jabu: is what Heath told me true

\*\*\* He said disturbing Detective Baloyi \*\*\*

D.Baloyi: unfortunately yes....the forensic team is busy inside

\*\*\*Heath and Jabu's hearts beat faster but they kept their cool \*\*\*

D.Mnguni: you would know angithi

\*\*\*He said to Jabu with a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Heath: what's that supposed to mean...do you have something on your mind Detective

D.Mnguni: I think we should have this conversation at the police station don't you think  
Mr Vilakazi

Jabu: askies

Heath: are you arresting my brother Detective sh\*t... ohh I mean Mnguni

D.Mnguni: what did you just call me

Heath: Detective Mnguni or are you hearing things now Detective

D.Noah: ok...ok let's all calm down....Mr Vilakazi what my partner here is trying to say is  
he would like to ask you some question with regards to what happened here

Jabu: how would I know what happened here...i just got here

D.Mnguni: did you..i mean not long ago we accompanied her to your house so she  
takes her things and now she's killed brutally

Heath: ok that's enough....is my brother under arrest or what

D.Mnguni: I suggest you follow us to the police station to find out

\*\*\*Heath chuckled looking pissed off and Jabu sighed...he's worried about the forensic  
team finding his son's finger prints on both victims\*\*\*

D.Noah: look just follow us to the police station...we have some questions for Mr  
Vilakazi here we would like for him to answer

Heath: ok does he need to call his lawyer

D.Mnguni: why would he need one if he's innocent

Jabu: innocent people go to jail all the time....ankere sa lona ke tjojjo go ja magwenya le  
none dimpa bo bomba go robala le go phinya mara ge e le mmereko ona wa le palla (  
because all you know is take bribes eat fatcakes and develop big bellies to sleep and to  
fart but as for doing your jobs you fail)

\*\*\*Heath chuckled\*\*\*

D.Noah: you're being disrespectful now Mr Vilakazi

\*\*\*he looked at Heath ignoring the detective\*\*\*

Jabu: nxa lets go get this over and done with Mshikaro

Heath: I'll call Cass on the way....he's at my house now

\*\*\*Jabu nodded and they walked away followed by the two detectives while detective Baloyi stayed behind...he sighed and scratched his head then he walked to the house\*\*\*

---

## AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\*Moera walked inside Masai's room and she sighed looking at her laying there not moving....She further walked in and stood by her bed and looked at her\*\*\*

Moera: hi

\*\*\*then she giggled and put her hand on her mouth to muffle her laugh then she stopped\*\*\*

Moera: ooh I forgot you can't greet back sorry twinny....for what its worth im sorry for hitting you that hard....you just made me angry when you slapped me

\*\*\*she sighed \*\*\*

Moera: Ma beat me and Drench up because of you

\*\*\*she shook her head\*\*\*

Moera: I swear she's lucky she's our mother or is it our mother-father

\*\*\*she huffed rolling her eyes \*\*\*

Moera: she's lucky cause if not she would be worse that you are now....can you believe she embarrassed Drench she hit him with a sjambok as if he's some small child mxm...she's lucky shem....Anyway where's your man....i didn't see him when I came in I hope he's not tired of you already

\*\*\*she walked to her other side and she looked at the beeping machine\*\*\*

Moera: I guess the paying damages “get-together” thingy that is supposed to happen this weekend won’t happen mmh....and its all your fault akere nkebe o se weak ( cause if you were not weak) it would happen even though e no ba di damages fela its not like he’s marrying you

\*\*\*she shrugged\*\*\*

Moera: anyway I hope you wont open a case with the police when you wake up cause that would be the end for us I promise you....and you better tell that boyfriend of yours to stay out of our business cause I know people who know people who can help me deal with nuisance people literally

\*\*\*she sighed calming down\*\*\*

Moera: so you hit me and I hit you back and I just happen to be stronger than you that’s why you are here and im not...we are square now so when you wake up from here don’t you dare act like a victim cause you’re not..... you hit me and I defended myself....its high time you stopped acting like a victim and make me look like a bad person...its ends now Masa

Moera: so when you wake up you better have my back like I have been having yours all these years...tell everyone that what happened was a moment of high emotions and that you forgive me and we are cool ok

\*\*\*the door opened and Alphalette walked in and Moera froze as she looked at him...He walked in holding a bunch of flowers and he put them on top of the side drawer and he bend and kissed Masai’s dry lips and looked at her with a smile on his face ignoring Moera\*\*\*

Alpha: Ntsako wa mina ( my joy)....i have a feeling you’ll wake up any time from now...the dream I had of you has put a smile on my face...damn I miss you....

\*\*\*Moera cleared her throat\*\*\*

Moera: umm hi

Alpha: you’re still here

\*\*\*he said not even looking at her and she swallowed\*\*\*

Moera: she’s my twin Alpha...my family and not yours so don’t you ever say that to me....you shouldn’t even be here...Masai and I may have our differences but I love her

Alpha: that’s not what your mother said when she confronted you....i thought you said you hated her

\*\*\*he said standing up straight looking at her and found her eyes popped out\*\*\*



Moera: mama discussed our family business with you

Alpha: no... you forgot I see and know things....im not just your regular sangoma

Moera....i know you wanted to get rid of her when you thought she's dead

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Alpha: I know you f\*ck married man

\*\*\*she clenched her jaws\*\*\*

Alpha: and I know you're jealous of your twin...you envy her even though you think she's weak....

\*\*\*he put his hands in his pockets\*\*\*

Alpha: I thought you genuinely care for Masai when we met....i thought you were rooting for us to be together but now I see everything clearly.....you thought I'll use her and dump her and you'll play heroine to her but I fell for her and im there for her and you can't have that....you suddenly envied her and wanted what she has...me...you feed of her pain you demon

\*\*\*she looked at him with a serious look on her face.....she's angry now ready to bust\*\*\*

Alpha: I don't like you cause you're pretentious and you're too good at it....now listen to me good....you stay away from Masai and me and I'll keep your evil secret about what you wanted to do to her body when you thought she's dead....its as simple as that

Moera: Masai will always need me Alphalette....we shared a womb and that's a bond you will never break

Alpha: trust me I don't wanna break it cause I know she loves you even though o lebolobolo ( Puff Adder) in her life but what im sure of is you'll be the one that will break the bond yourself

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Alpha: I mean you have already started

Moera: I'll make sure she leaves you.....you don't deserve her....you have turned her against me and she'll soon see you for who you are....i wouldn't be shocked if you used muthi to make us fight cause you cant stand the competition

\*\*\*Alphalette chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Alpha: wa penga ( you are crazy) wena straight up....the wives of the married men you keep f\*ck\*ng will continue to deal with you until you run mad...you haven't seen nothing yet

\*\*\*she bit her lower lip looking angry\*\*\*

Moera: you'll be sorry once im done with you im telling you nxa

\*\*\*she walked away and out of the room and Alpha just sighed shaking his head then he turned to Masai and found her with her eyes opened blinking rapidly with a frown on her face \*\*\*

.  
. .  
.

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

23

AT THE POLICE STATION

\*\*\*The detectives have been questioning Jabu about Amo's death and Jabu has been keeping quiet looking bored and that pissed off the Detectives some more\*\*\*

D.Noah: you do know that keeping quiet makes things worse for you right

Jabu: le tla nchaela when you're done cause langrasetza and ke opa ke tlhogo ( you'll tell me when you are done cause you're busy making noise and I have a headache)

D.Noah: nthwe ya tella ( this thing is disrespectful)

Jabu: eish Trevor Noah go check if my lawyer has arrived or not

\*\*\*Detective Mnguni grabbed Jabu with his shirt and pulled him closer to his face looking angry\*\*\*

D.Mnguni: you think this is joke to you neh.... a woman was killed....a woman that is your wife you don't even look like you care!!

Jabu: offence number one Detective and I'll make sure my lawyer knows about it

D.Mnguni: you think you know the law neh

\*\*\*he said chuckling and he let go of Jabu\*\*\*

D.Mnguni: we are the law and you are the number one suspect....i know you killed her or hired someone to do it for you and trust me....we won't rest until you spend the rest of your life in jail

Jabu: Jail doesn't scare me Detective.....the only thing that scares me is La Parca....you can ask my brother Heath

## OUTSIDE

\*\*\*Castiel got out of the car and he quickly opened an umbrella and he closed the door and locked it then he walked inside the police station wearing a Dolce & Gabbana custom made tailored double-breasted navy blue striped suit feeling himself....Heath spotted him as he walked inside the building and he got up frowning as Cass closed the umbrella\*\*\*

Castiel: how do I look....im a Canali suit buyer I swear I didn't know D&G has nice suits too

\*\*\*he asked turning around showing Heath\*\*\*

Heath: wait a minute...is this my expensive suit you're wearing

\*\*\*he asked with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Castiel: it looks good on me neh

Heath: are you out of your mind...who gave you my suit.... you know what take it off now!!!

\*\*\*he said looking pissed\*\*\*

Castiel: take what off....are you crazy....this suit was made for me....look at me

Heath: Castiel im not playing with you

Castiel: I couldn't come and represent Jabu wearing track pants and sneakers and a round neck shirt....i need to look sharp as a lawyer haw

Heath: not this suit Castiel man....and how did you get it...don't tell me you entered my matrimonial bedroom

Castiel: I asked for permission from your beautiful wife

\*\*\*Heath rubbed his face getting frustrated\*\*\*

Heath: are those my expensive shoes....and my belt and watch....Castiel what the f\*ck is wrong with you...are you out of your mind!!!

\*\*\* everyone inside the police station looked at him as he shouted and Castiel just smiled as he moved his feet checking them out\*\*\*

Castiel: they are nice neh....damn you have taste

Heath: im gonna quench( kill) you im telling you....I'll squeeze the vampire life out of you

Castiel: as long as I get to be buried wearing this suit and shoes...you can kill me all you want bro

\*\*\*then he laughed giving Heath the umbrella and he walked to the counter leaving Heath defeated but also pissed as well\*\*\*

Heath: I swear today is not my day...everyone dey carry kata kata bring my way mxm  
\*\*\*he sat down and waited for them\*\*\*

.  
.

BY THE COUNTER

Castiel: hello Mr officer....advocate Monteiro here and im here as Jabulani Vilakazi's lawyer

Officer: ok let me go call the detective in charge of the case

Castiel: mmmmh....tell him to make it quick i left my wife naked on the bed

\*\*\*the officer cleared his throat and he walked away....after some time he walked back with detective Noah and the detective stopped on his tracks with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Officer: here is the detective

\*\*\*He said to Castiel and Cass kept a straight look on his face as he recognised the detective.... The detective cleared his throat as he approached Cass\*\*\*

D.Noah: Mr Monteiro

Castiel: detective...i didn't know you the one handling this case

\*\*\* The detective cleared his throat again\*\*\*

D.Noah: this is a delicate case...an innocent woman was killed brutally

Castiel: mmmmh innocent you say...so why is my brother questioned like a criminal or he's a suspect?

D.Noah: bro...brother

Castiel: mmmmh....

D.Noah: I...i didn't know you two are related

Castiel: enough chit chatting take me to my client detective

\*\*\*The detective looked around and he cleared his throat and let the way....he opened the door and they walked in and as soon as Jabu saw Castiel he raised his eyebrows surprised by his dressing code cause he has never seen him wearing such a stylish and

expensive looking suit before...detective Mnguni stood up quickly as his eyes met with Castiel's and he looked at him shocked\*\*\*

Castiel: I hope you didn't say anything to these two Sboshwa

Jabu: I know the drill man

Castiel: good....

\*\*\*he rubbed his hands together as detective Noah whispered something to his partner and his partner looked spooked\*\*\*

Castiel: so why is my client here detectives?

D.Mnguni: I didn't know you are at this side of the country

Castiel: why would you know that...we are not family friends or acquaintances and im not here for catching up im here for my client....now why is Mr Vilakazi here....what are charging him with

\*\*\*Detective Mnguni cleared his throat\*\*\*

D.Mnguni: he's not under arrest as of yet....he's only here for questioning concerning his wife's death

Jabu: I want to open a case of assault for mpya ee ( this dog)

\*\*\*he said pointing at Detective Mnguni\*\*\*

Jabu: I need to teach him a lesson to never grab a man's expensive shirt like that....ontlwaela masepa oo....o busy ontshwara ekare ke le pantiti....o nagana gore this shirt ke jumpsuit e orange nxa ( he's full of shit this one....busy grabbing me as if im a prisoner....he thinks this shirt is an orange jumpsuit nxa)

Castiel: really detective

D.Noah: can we all calm down

Jabu: sa tlompotsa ( don't tell me) to calm down wena....why didn't you tell him to calm down when he grabbed me like that

Castiel: Jabu...

\*\*\*he stopped him\*\*\*

Jabu: mxm are you charging me or what

D.Mnguni: you can go but we will call you in again if something comes up so don't leave the province or country

Castiel: is it?

\*\*\*both the detectives looked at each other then looked at Castiel\*\*\*

Castiel: it's a robbery gone wrong and if my brother here or anyone close to him gets arrested for her death cause I know they are innocent then you two popeyes will share a cell with Viper....the man you betrayed

\*\*\*the two detectives swallowed hard with their hearts beating fast\*\*\*

Castiel: im sure he'll give me half of his wealth for bringing you two to him on a silver platter...good day gentlemen

\*\*\*he looked at Jabu\*\*\*

Castiel: lets go man

\*\*\* Jabu got up and he showed detective Mnguni the middle finger and he followed Castiel out of the interrogation room\*\*\*

.  
.

#### INSIDE THE INTERROGATION ROOM

D.Mnguni: I hate this Vilakazi thug nxa....i know he killed her....my instinct never lies to me

\*\*\*he rubbed his head roughly\*\*\*

D.Mnguni: and this weird creep....why is he this side I thought he's still in KZN

\*\*\*he said pacing up and down\*\*\*

D.Noah: he said Jabu is his brother

D.Mnguni: eish

\*\*\*he said as he sat down\*\*\*

D.Noah: let's leave this place so we can talk properly these walls have ears

\*\*\*Detective Mnguni sighed\*\*\*

D.Mnguni: eish this case was gonna give us the promotion we deserve

D.Noah: we need a quick plan asap...lets go

\*\*\*they walked out\*\*\*

.  
.  
.

#### OUTSIDE THE POLICE STATION

\*\*\*Jabu Heath and Castiel are standing next to Heath's car\*\*\*

Castiel: don't be too hard on the boy....he's going through a lot and that's what is making him act irrationally

Jabu: he's writing his exams Cass....he was supposed to be in his room studying and not playing bo James Bond in the middle of the night

Cass: you still don't get it do you....all this is your fault.....you let depression take control of you and you forgot about your son....your son is crying out for help....he's acting out cause his father is not there for him when he needs him the most

\*\*\*Jabu didn't say anything\*\*\*

Heath: he's turning into your younger self and if you're not careful he'll end up in jail too

\*\*\*Still Jabu didn't say anything...then they saw the detectives driving out of the police station\*\*\*

Castiel: I'll handle them myself

Jabu: old acquaintances of yours?

\*\*\*Cass fixed his suit\*\*\*

Castiel: old clients....gents let me love and leave you

\*\*\*he walked to his car and he opened it and got inside then he closed the umbrella and put it on the passenger seat\*\*\*

Heath: wait my suit!!!

\*\*\*Castiel quickly closed the door and he drove off\*\*\*

Heath: mgodoyi wenja nxa

\*\*\*he said shouting\*\*\*

Jabu: he's wearing your suit??

Heath: my expensive suit Mjava....i only wore it once nxa

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Heath: mxm Cass ke m\*t\*t\* straight nxa

\*\*\*Jabu sighed and he looked down\*\*\*

Jabu: who could've killed her

Heath: wa thoma ( you're starting)

Jabu: ke thoma eng ( what am I starting)

Heath: can we not talk about her....im tired of hearing her name Jabu...this woman has taken over your life and head to a point that you're not yourself anymore....your son needs you tse tsa gore who killed her shouldn't even be a priority right now....your son should be...we need to get rid of the forensic report

\*\*\*Jabu sighed....he was drained and tired about the whole thing\*\*\*

Jabu: why don't you all want to understand why im feeling like this....this is not about me wanting her back when she was still alive...this is about me....the love I felt for her....i gave her my all....my everything....i trusted her with my heart and my son's heart... I thought this was it finally I met the one and I didn't even hold back and all of a sudden you want me to erase all that just like that.....the heart doesn't work like that Heath it has the mind of its own

Heath: lets just go Jabu

Jabu: no you gonna listen....that woman before she changed she made me happy....she brought joy into my life and son's life....she became a mother to Sbu and made me want to be a better man....she once turned my house into a home....she once made me a proud man to have a wife like her.....and you all want me to forget all that and forget just like that.... that she once meant the world to me...im not a robot Heath I have a fucken heart and blood running through my fucken veins

Heath: you don't get it do you

Jabu: no you don't get it.....i cant switch off how I feel because all of you want me to...im not a fucken robot...i loved that woman wholeheartedly ...you all are calling me weak but forget that im human too....who said men can't be broken too....who said men can't find it hard to move on too

\*\*\*Heath swallowed hard\*\*\*

Jabu: why can't ya'll let me be human just this once....let me be broken...let me mourn my marriage and daughter's death in peace without ya'll thinking I have become weak.....you are supposed to be my supporting system but you're the ones that are bashing me....im actually disappointed especially in you cause you know me you know how I felt about her and how happy I was until she changed...you know how my house was once a warm home before she changed

\*\*\*Heath sighed\*\*\*

Heath: I understand man it's just...

Jabu: no you don't and never will..... it's hard to let go and accept that my marriage has failed like this...that I gave my son a taste of a warm happy family only for it to crumble within a blink of an eye....this is not about Amo it's about me failing my son once again...i brought that woman into our lives and trusted her with my son and now my son is scarred for life....i was so much in love that I didn't even see red flags about her "if



they were there in the first place"...i feel like a failure I failed my kids. That's why I can't even face Sbu

Heath: damn...look man im sorr...

Jabu: let's just drop it

\*\*\*he opened the door and got in\*\*\*

Heath: Mjava....eish damn it

\*\*\*Heath also got inside the car and he started it buckling up and he drove off \*\*\*

---

## AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\* Doris Hills

Sponsored

AD

Hills AJ and Alphalette are waiting in the sitting area not saying anything as her doctor is busy examining her\*\*\*

Doris: i saw Moera walking out and she just passed us like she didn't even know us

\*\*\*she chuckled wiping her tears\*\*\*

Doris: I don't know where I went wrong with her....i hope she didn't hurt Masai

Alpha: no she didn't

Hills: mama something is wrong with Moera....she cant change out of the blue like that....Mo loves Masai mama so I think something is wrong with her im telling you

\*\*\*No one said anything\*\*\*

Hills: look now at how she ignored us....my sister Mo will never do that

\*\*\*Doris sighed\*\*\*

Doris: mmh I hear you

\*\*\* Alphalette just kept quiet and he just concentrated on his son who's playing a game on his phone sitting on his lap....They got up when they saw the doctor approaching them\*\*\*

Doris: doctor how is she

Doctor: she's awake and the good part is that she remembers who she is where she's from her son boyfriend mother and sisters so it's safe to say she's gonna be ok... with time ofcourse

Hills: ooh Thank you Lord....yho Modimo ke a leboga

\*\*\*Doris hugged the doctor feeling relieved and the doctor smiled\*\*\*

Doris: thank you so much doctor

Doctor: its ok mam....you can go and see her...she's been asking for her son

Doris: ok ok....etla papa

\*\*\*she took AJ \*\*\*

Alpha: you can go in mama I need to make an important phone call

\*\*\*they walked away and Alpha sat down and called Gaza\*\*\*

Gaza: Ntsako

Alpha: bhut...she's awake

Gaza: Masai??

Alpha: yeah

\*\*\*he said smiling\*\*\*

Gaza: eish finally....how is she

Alpha: she's gonna be ok...ummm can we drive to MP a little later so I spend some time with her...i know how important this trip is to you so give me a few hours with her and we will leave

Gaza: don't worry about it....I'll drive down there alone and wait for you at a BnB and you can drive down tomorrow and we will go home together....how's that

\*\*\*Alphalette kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Alpha: you can just wait for me Gee

Gaza: don't over think this....Wena just spend today with your woman and I'll see you tomorrow when you arrive...I'll pin you my location as soon as I find the right BnB

Alpha: why don't you want to wait for me

Gaza: cause I have some things I need to take care of

Alpha: what things

Gaza: personal things

Alpha: Gee...Nyamsoro luya ( that witchdoctor) is dead....i ended him so don't go after him...he's dead

Gaza: he's lucky....and im sorry to disappoint you but my personal reasons has got nothing to do with my enemies....

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: don't worry about me....wena concentrate on your woman and I'll see you tomorrow

Alpha: please don't do something you'll later regret

Gaza: got it

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed again\*\*\*

Alpha: can you believe Moera threatened me....she threatened to break Masai and I up

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Alpha: this girl is delusional

Gaza: I see she's gonna be a problem for you and your woman

Alpha: don't worry I know how to handle her....she's a small child that one

Gaza: mmmmh

\*\*\*then he kept quiet\*\*\*

Alpha: so how's Tshimo

\*\*\*nothing\*\*\*

Alpha: hello...

\*\*\*still nothing\*\*\*

Alpha: Gaza

\*\*\*Gaza cleared his throat\*\*\*

Gaza: yeah

Alpha: ne re how's Tshimo

Gaza: she's good

Alpha: she's not sulking that you're leaving

Gaza: im not leaving im just going to see my father and son...get cleansed and check on my businesses and I'll be back

Alpha: you're moving this side

Gaza: yeah...with my son....

Alpha: for her

Gaza: for myself

\*\*\*Alpha kept quiet shaking his head \*\*\*

Alpha: what about your businesses Gee

Gaza: don't do that...i have made up my mind wena all I need from you is your support and for you to have my back

\*\*\*Alpha sighed...he didn't understand this new Gaza....he just did things differently from the old Gaza and it frustrates him to the core\*\*\*

Gaza: look let me get ready we will talk...shap

Alpha: shap

\*\*\*They ended the call and Alphalette called Mpande\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

INSIDE MASAI'S WARD

Hills: im glad you're ok sis

Masai: yeah me too

\*\*\*she forced a smile then she looked at her son who's now laying on top of her singing a song that he only understand\*\*\*

Doris: this song of his

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Doris: so do you remember what happened

Masai: can we not talk about that....i just wanna get better and get out of here

\*\*\*Doris sighed\*\*\*

Doris: she's your twin Masai

Masai: mama please....dont delay my healing process by stressing me up...i don't wanna talk about it

Doris: hai ke tla reng ( hai what can I say)

Masai: Hills can you please call the property agent I was going to meet to go view the apartment Im interested in...well that's if they didn't take it....you can video call me when you are there so I see it too...i don't know where my phone is...her numbers are stored as Agent Philile Shandu

Hills: ok no problem...anyway let me love and leave you....i need to drop these off at Tarek's office

Masai: divorce papers?

Hills: yep....today I woke up feeling courageous

Masai: yes wena girl

\*\*\*Hills laughed\*\*\*

Hills: I'll see you later neh

Masai: ok

\*\*\*Hills kissed her cheek\*\*\*

Hills: bye Khai

Khai: bye

\*\*\*he said waving goodbye to her and she laughed walking out\*\*\*

Doris: im glad you're ok my baby

Masai: im glad im ok too mama

\*\*\*Doris sighed and she got up\*\*\*

Doris: let me give you and your boyfriend some time to talk....I'll see you in an hour or so there's something I need to do

Masai: ok

\*\*\*she kissed her forehead and Khai's and she walked out and Khai didn't even cry for her.... Masai sighed\*\*\*

Masai: hey papa... did you miss me

AJ: mmh...look mommy

\*\*\*he said showing him what he did with his fingers and Masai giggled but she stopped when Alphalette walked in\*\*\*

AJ: papa look

\*\*\*Alphalette smiled\*\*\*

Alphalette: hey

Masai: hey

Alpha: where is the smile you just gave AJ...i also need it

\*\*\*she sighed and looked away as he tried to kiss her \*\*\*

Alphalette: ok what's going on mamakhe

\*\*\*she kept quiet and Alphalette gave his son his phone to destruct him...he picked him up and put him on a chair and opened a game for him \*\*\*

Alphalette: we not gonna do this Masa....if we have a problem we talk about and fix it...silence is not an option

Masai: so you knew all along that Moera wanted you....you knew why she was like that towards me and you kept quiet

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: so you heard us

Masai: why

Alpha: because I didn't want you two to fight....you love her my love so imagine if I said your sister has a crush on me....it would look like im coming between you two or I want you to hate each other

Masai: but you watched me stressed that maybe I did something wrong to her....you knew why she was like that and you kept quiet about it

Alpha: calm down ok

\*\*\*She breathed out and she quickly wiped her tears off so her son doesn't see her crying\*\*\*

Masai: my heart is sore Phalette....it's so sore I feel like ripping it out of my chest

\*\*\*she said as more uncontrollable tears came out and Alpha cupped her face then he kissed her lips as more tears ran down her cheeks...he wiped them but they kept falling\*\*\*

Alpha: you were awake all along

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Masai: I woke up and I was alone in the room....i couldn't reach the emergency button so I think fell asleep again and I heard her...at first I thought I was dreaming but....she said....

Alpha: shhh...im here....

Masai: you said she wanted to get rid of my body

\*\*\*she said in a whisper with her bottom lip shaking \*\*\*

Alpha: don't stress mama please....you are sick and you know stress is not good for you....calm down...trust me ok....i love you so damn much and I will move mountains for you....im not just passing by im here to stay permanently....

Masai: but why is she...

Alpha: she's always been like that ....its not your fault she's just too good at pretending....now you need to live your life to the fullest....stand your ground....stand on your own...make it on your own and show her that you can do it without her....you're not gullible Masai....you just have been leaning on your twin and trusting her with your life and it was ok cause you two shared a womb

\*\*\*he wiped her tears off\*\*\*

Alpha: let her demons deal with her....do not hate her wena just live your life and let her destroy herself...i know it hurts Ntsako wa mina...trust me I know and im gonna be here for you not to overwhelm you but to support you ok

\*\*\*she nodded doing breathing exercises to calm herself down\*\*\*

Alpha: let it sink in....don't force it....take it one step at a time ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he perked her lips again then a nurse walked in with a tray of food\*\*\*

Nurse: here is your food...you need to eat so you'll be able to take your medicine

Masai: thank you

Nurse: it's a light meal thou.... mashed potatoes gravy vegies and fish....

Masai: thank you

Nurse: press the emergency button if you need anything else

Masai: I will thank you

\*\*\*the nurse smiled and she walked out\*\*\*

---

\*\*\*Hills walked inside the building and she got inside the elevator and pressed the floor she's going to...soon the elevator door opened and she walked out taking a deep breath... she found his PA not in her desk and she proceeded to his office....she knocked on the door but no one answered she knocked again and still no one answered so she took another deep breath and she opened the door and what she found broke her heart some more.... She found him having s\*x with a white woman...they are both butt naked and the woman is laying on the table on her back with her legs wide opened and Tarek is standing between her legs and he's busy pounding at her mercilessly groaning \*\*\*

Hills: Ta...Tarek

\*\*\*she said in a whisper tone as tears ran down her cheeks and he didn't even hear her.... he just continued to ravage the poor woman ...she took a deep breath and walked further in with her body feeling weak....Tarek came back to his senses when he heard

heels clicking on the floor and he turned his head and his eyes popped out when he saw his wife looking pale with tears all over her face....

He immediately pulls out of the woman feeling like his heart is about to stop beating any second...he's not even wearing protection....Hills throws the brown envelope next to him on the floor and she turned and walked back to the door making sure she doesn't collapse as she starts feeling dizzy\*\*\*

Tarek: Babe...it's...it's not what you think I swear

\*\*\*he said as he quickly picked his underwear and he wore it quickly as she walked out slowly\*\*\*

.  
. .  
.

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO



\*\*\*She got inside her car and let out a loud cry as her heart broke into pieces....She put her head on the steering wheel and she cried painful...Yes she's divorcing him but she still loves him and to see him in that position with another woman broke her heart and the worst part is it wasn't even with the baby mama meaning it's possible that he's been cheating with different women all long even before they separated...She calmed down and wiped her tears off and she took a deep breath and buckled up and she started the car and drove out of the premises\*\*\*

\*\*\*She's lost in her thoughts as her mind kept going back to the s\*x scene she witnessed when suddenly she hears a hoot of a car and when she comes back from her thoughts she sees a car in front of her not moving as the traffic lights turned red....she hits her breaks but it's too late as she bumps into the back of the car screaming and shaking....the driver door from the other car opens roughly and out comes Mpande fuming with anger.....Hills unbuckles her safety belt with her mind trying to make out what just happened..... she opens her door crying and shaking unaware that the owner of the car she just bumped into is Mpande\*\*\*

Mpande: uyahlanya yini wena sfeb.... ( are you out of your mind bitc....)

\*\*\*he stopped talking as he saw that its Hills and Hills also recognise him\*\*\*

Hills: im....im sor.... im....so sorry

\*\*\*she said shaking and also crying and Mpande sighed rubbing his head roughly \*\*\*

Hills: I'll pay for your car to be fixed please don't call the cops

Mpande: ok people move right along there's nothing to see here

\*\*\*\*He said to drivers driving slowly to see what happened and people who were now taking videos and pictures of the accident\*\*\*

Mpande: hey fosek man....anizwa yini...

\*\*\*he said shouting and one driver snuck his head out his window looking back at

Mpande\*\*\*

Driver: hai fosek nawe msunu....this is not your father's road

Mpande: I just memorized your number plate shlama....i hope you have insurance and a funeral cover

\*\*\*he said taking out his gun and the driver quickly speed off and people dispensed as Mpande put his gun back....he looked at Hills who was making a call to her insurance with her hands shaking\*\*\*

Mpande: go home we will take care of this later when you are calm

Hills: im sorry...im so sorry.....i wasn't looking and.....

\*\*\*she breathed in and out trying to calm down\*\*\*

Hills: I found him having s\*x with some white woman and i.....i shouldn't have driven in my state...im sorry

\*\*\*she said wiping her tears off with her shaky hands and Mpande sighed\*\*\*

Hills: I promise I'll fix your car...i promise

Mpande: stay here don't move

\*\*\*he turned the hazards of her car on and he went to his car and started it and waited for the traffic lights to turn green and he drove past the traffic lights and packed his car on the side and he got out and closed the door and walked back to Hills' car...she's now inside her car trying to calm down\*\*\*

Mpande: let me help you out

\*\*\* she looked at him confused as he pulled her out of the car and she held on to him as her knees became wobbly....Mpande balanced her and slowly they went to the passenger side and he helped her get in and he closed the door and went back to driver side and got in then he turned the hazards off as he started the car and waited\*\*\*

Mpande: do you have someone you can call to come you pick up

Hills: Moera but I don't think she will come or answer my calls and I can't call Ma or ausVee

\*\*\*she said sniffing and Mpande sighed as he drove passed the green traffic lights and he packed behind his car and switched the car off\*\*\*

Mpande: so what are we gonna do....i have places to be

\*\*\*she sniffed\*\*\*

Hills: its ok I can drive

Mpande: drive how when you're shaking like this...eish

\*\*\*he sighed as she didn't say anything....after some quiet time he spoke\*\*\*

Mpande: that time in the hospital uthe ipipi lami lenzani ( what did you say about my p\*nis)

\*\*\*Hills froze and she swallowed hard....she didn't understand why he would bring that up now\*\*\*

Mpande: ngiyabuza weNtabeni ( im asking Hills)

Hills: you also called me feti boom boom

Mpande: well you're not that big so I exaggerated a bit cause you bruised my ego but I know my d\*ck is not small so why ipipi and not ikhanda ( the head) or my brown eyes or even my big feet... why ipipi pho...ipipi lami lakwenzani walithuka kangaka ( what did my d\*ck do to you for you to insult it that much)

\*\*\*she sighed....she couldn't believe this guy\*\*\*

Hills: sorry for bruising your ego I just got defensive nje

Mpande: ok manje ungizwe kahle wena umama wokuBrais(a) amaEgo we bantu besilisa.... angishayi abafazi kodwa next time ukhuluma amasimba ngepipi lami ngiyokshaya nge spinning kick ekhanda bese ngikushaye nge choke slam mangiqeda ngithi rest in peace yeUndertaker uzinyele (now listen to me Miss ego bruiser ....i don't beat women but next time you talk sh\*t about my p\*nis I'll hit you with a spinning kick on your head then I'll choke slam you and when im done I'll use undertaker's rest in peace and you'll sh\*t yourself)

\*\*\*Hills found herself laughing out loud and Mpande just smiled\*\*\*

Mpande: uya hleka ( you're laughing ) and im serious

Hills: askies but wrestling moves Mpande....really???

\*\*\*she said as she continued to laugh\*\*\*

Mpande: what's wrong with them

Hills: ummm nothing

\*\*\*she said as she held her laugh in \*\*\*

Mpande: or you want me to show you now

\*\*\*he said opening his door and she shook her head no holding in her laughter\*\*\*

Mpande: ngintswenbu kabi ( im too good) with those moves Mrs ego bruiser

Hills: don't call me that

Mpande: ok Ntabeni

Hills: really now

Mpande: mmmmh it suits you better

\*\*\*she looked away\*\*\*

Mpande: so ngitshela la....uthi you found who and who bedlana ( now tell me....you said you found who and who f\*ck\*ng)

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Hills: my soon to be husband and some white woman

Mpande: mmmmh.... so uguy uthanda othekeni boknuka wet chicken feathers (so the guy likes women who smell like wet chicken feathers)

\*\*\*she laughed not looking at him and he smiled again\*\*\*

Hills: stop ok

Mpande: im telling you....bayanuka ( they smell) most of them....so you almost killed me because of that

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Mpande: you're not serious..... so will you forgive him...are you one of those ababekezelayo amasimba( who tolerate sh\*t) in a relationship

\*\*\*she kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Hills: I served him with divorce papers

Mpande: mmmmh that's good

\*\*\*she took a deep breath....she didn't understand why she was still here with him and telling him all these....he's the same guy that called her fat\*\*\*

Hills: I think im fine now....i can be able to drive myself....

Mpande: I'll send you my invoice then

\*\*\*she took a deep breath\*\*\*

Hills: ok...thanks for....everything

\*\*\*he nodded and opened the door and got out then he went to his car\*\*\*

Hills: today is really not my day...shoot I didn't ask for his numbers

\*\*\*she opened her door to ask for his numbers but he was already driving away.....she sighed and got out of her car and went to see the damage and she sighed defeated...she went to the driver side and got in then she drove off\*\*\*

---

AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\*Alphalette went to the cafeteria to buy Masai and his son snacks \*\*\*

AJ: mommy

Masai: yes papa

AJ: a man dush dush dush dush

\*\*\*he said imitating a gunshot\*\*\*

AJ: a woman do this...

\*\*\*he said and he imitated someone falling \*\*\*

AJ: and man took ring and leave

Masai: heh

\*\*\*she said frowning\*\*\*

AJ: mmmmh.....mommy

Masai: yes papa

AJ: don't cry

Masai: but im not crying...you see

\*\*\*she said smiling\*\*\*

AJ: not like hi hi hi....don't cry mommy....Khulu don't want you to cry

\*\*\*Masai frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Masai: which Khulu

AJ: ^wakhulummi Nkhosi....wena wakhulummi ndaba se mkhodo Nkhosi...ohh ohh

ahh....aha ah ah....Khulummi Khosi....^

\*\*\*he sang playing with his fingers and Masai just looked at him not sure what to make of what just happened and this song of his\*\*\*

Masai: Khai

AJ: mommy

Masai: which Khulu

AJ: my Khulu....

Masai: you have a Khulu

AJ: mmmmh

\*\*\*he said nodding\*\*\*

Masai: you mean Khulu at gogo's house?

\*\*\*he shook his head no\*\*\*

Masai: ok...where does he stay

AJ: wa khulumi Nkhosi....wena waKhulumi ndaba se mkhodo Nkhosi...ohh ohh  
ahh....aha ah ah....Khulumi Khosi....

\*\*\*he sang not answering his mother then Alphalette walked in and AJ stopped  
singing\*\*\*

Alpha: look what I bought you champ

\*\*\*AJ smiled and Alphalette gave him his gummy bears jelly sweets and he gave Masai  
her snacks too and he could see something was bothering her\*\*\*

Alpha: what's wrong

Masai: AJ just said something weird to me.... he said Khulu doesn't want me to cry

\*\*\*Alpha frowned\*\*\*

Alpha: which Khulu

\*\*\*she shrugged her shoulders\*\*\*

Masai: I don't know and I think he watched a movie he's not supposed to watch at your  
mother's place....he was telling me about a man shooting a woman and taking her ring

Alpha: I'll talk to Ma about that don't worry

\*\*\*she nodded and opened the plastic\*\*\*

Masai: and this weird song he keeps singing that only he can understand....ai

Alpha: which song

Masai: I think its in Zulu or something.... I mean he doesn't even know Isizulu.....ai your  
son Phalette

\*\*\*Alphalette looked at his son\*\*\*

Alpha: champ

AJ: mmmmh

\*\*\*he answered chowing on his jelly sweets nodding as if he's dancing to a song\*\*\*

Alpha: sing the song you were singing for mommy

\*\*\*He shook his head no\*\*\*

Alpha: please boy sing for daddy

\*\*\*he shook his head no again and he hummed a song eating\*\*\*

Masai: your son is weird

\*\*\*Alpha chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: he's our son...remember we made him together

Masai: mxm like father like son

\*\*\*Alpha laughed\*\*\*

---

Man: im sorry but I can't help you.... I can only give you clarity on some of the questions that are troubling you....im gonna be truthful with you son.....what you have is....beyond my powers

\*\*\*Gaza sighed and the man looked around his ancestral hut and it was filled with black smoke on the ceiling that's moving around in circles...he swallowed hard and he sighed looking down he needed to trust his ancestors for protection cause this is beyond him....he closed his eyes and he could see the dark shadow of some sort of a mystical monster outside his yard standing there looking inside his yard....he knew this was beyond his powers as a strong and well known traditional healer but his ancestors told him not to turn him away\*\*\*

Gaza: then who can help me

Man: the only man I know that can help you is in Congo in a remote village and again he might betray you and stab you in the back cause what you have to a man like him is treasure....if you go to him for help im afraid there's a high possibility that you might not make it back...he will never let you go

\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: is he a friend of yours

\*\*\*the traditional healer sighed\*\*\*

Man: when you have this kind of gift I have sometimes you feel like it's not enough....you get tempted to be more powerful more stronger and you forget the purpose of your gift....you end up entering places you shouldn't enter and being friends with people you shouldn't be friends with....im glad I came back to my senses before

God and my ancestors turned their backs on me....now im content with my gift and I use it for good

\*\*\*Gaza nodded and he sighed\*\*\*

Man: when did you realized you're not alone in that body

Gaza: when I had my first kill ....that one deserved to die...he was evil it was either me or him

Gaza: then....there are others....some deserved it some not so much but it's done

\*\*\*he sighed then he chuckled as tears filled his eyes\*\*\*

Gaza: I knew when I woke up from that place I was kept captive that something was wrong with me....even when I started to remember who I am I knew something was wrong but I kept it to myself...it doesn't bother me and sometimes I even forget I have it .... well that's until....

\*\*\*he kept quiet\*\*\*

Man: it feeds of your emotions.....

\*\*\*the man sighed and he kept quiet thinking\*\*\*

Man: you knew something was put inside you before you escaped didn't you and that when you had your first kill but because you lost your memory that thing stayed in the dark waiting for the day you'll remember who you are and that's when it woke up....and that's why you remember everything that happened to you even when you "lost " your memory

\*\*\*Gaza didn't say anything...he lied to Alphalette that he remembers bits and pieces about when he was abducted but the truth of the matter is he remembers everything....every little thing even the ritual that was done when that thing was put in him\*\*\*

Man: yho!!

\*\*\*he exclaimed...this was beyond him\*\*\*

Gaza: so how do I live with it....i don't think I can control it....it has a mind of its own....when it wants to do something I can't stop it....it can hide its self I think that's why my brother cant see it but he can tell something is off

\*\*\*the man picks his ancestral bones again...his hands are shaking now as he blows on them and he throws them on top of the goat skin and reads them\*\*\*

Man: mmmmh I see

\*\*\*he looked at Gaza\*\*\*



Man: there is a man he's powerful....more powerful than you can think....the bones say he's closer....he knows about you and what was put in you but he might not help you because he once encountered that thing in you and he tried to help the one dearest to him but he failed....it killed her instead

Gaza: someone closer...

\*\*\*he asked himself\*\*\*

Man: mmmh.... there's a lot you're still gonna find out.....just know you're not the only one

Gaza: what does that mean

Man: it means I can't help you but the cleansing will get rid of the bad luck and dark cloud following you around..... Let your father do the cleansing for you

\*\*\*the man looked at Gaza again\*\*\*

Man: it will also clean the blood I see on your hands

\*\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: is my wife involved in what happened to me

Man: when I first threw the bones I saw two older women

Sponsored

AD

a man and a witchdoctor...the two older women and the man are closest to you....those are the ones who plotted to have you turned into that thing each with their own selfish and evil reasons.....as for your wife....she's a pawn in a game....they blinded her but...

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Man: she loves the two of you.....she can't let either one of you go and that has got nothing to do with witchcraft.....and as for that witchdoctor he was experimenting with you what he learned in Congo and he created something beyond him....he's lucky he's dead

\*\*\*the Sangoma shook his head\*\*\*

Man: some people have evil hearts....he didn't even know what he was doing....but im glad you're still alive....just know you're not the only one and only you can chose to be evil or good....once you make that choice then you will really know whether you can control it or not

\*\*\*Gaza kept quiet lost in thoughts.....He took out a stack of money and put it on the floor and he clapped his palms\*\*\*

Gaza: thokoza Mkhulu...

\*\*\*the man nodded then Gaza got up to leave\*\*\*

Man: im always here if you can't talk to your brother....but just know what he knows something is off and he's worried about you

\*\*\*Gaza didn't say anything he just walked out and the man sighed...he got up and called out to one of his initiates and told him to prepare cleansing water for him he needs to cleanse his ancestral hut and yard\*\*\*

---

\*\*\* Tarek is busy pacing up and down in his office feeling hot....he increases the air corn in his office and looked at the torn to pieces divorce papers all over the floor and he huffed and went to sit down\*\*\*

Tarek: does this mean she did cheat and she's leaving me for him

\*\*\*he asked himself\*\*\*

Tarek: nah...not Hills....the way she walked out means she still loves me....that pain on her face means she still loves me....yes she does....but the divorce papers...eish

\*\*\*he huffed and took his phone and as he's about to make a phone call his phone rings and it's his mother...he sighed and answered \*\*\*

Tarek: Ma

His.Mother: hey baby

\*\*\*she said sounding down\*\*\*

Tarek: what's wrong you sound down

His.mother: when was the last time you spoke with your father

Tarek: ummm I don't know its been a while now

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tarek: whats going on Ma

His.mother: your father hasn't been home in a couple of days and he's ignoring my calls....i don't know what to do anymore

\*\*\*she said sniffing\*\*\*

Tarek: what...why didn't you tell me

His.mother: it's not something a mother can talk to her son about

\*\*\*he sighed and rubbed his eyes\*\*\*

Tarek: let me call him

His.mother: ok

\*\*\*he ended the call with her and dialled his father's numbers and he answered\*\*\*

Mazwakhe: son

Tarek: baba how are you

Mazwakhe: im still alive and you

Tarek: im ok...ummm baba....Ma just called me and she told me you haven't been home for a couple of days

\*\*\*Mazwakhe kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Mazwakhe: yes that's true

\*\*\*Tarek frowned because of his response\*\*\*

Tarek: what's going on.....how can you do this to Ma

Mazwakhe: don't get involved son...what is happening is between your mother and I is between us

Tarek: what do you mean I shouldn't get involved...she's my mother or have you forgotten that!!

Mazwakhe: ok mama's boy...tell your mother that I'll come back home when she's ready to tell me the truth about the twins' real father

Tarek: wh..what

\*\*\*his father sighed\*\*\*

Mazwakhe: I have to go....we will talk

\*\*\*then he ended the call leaving Tarek shocked...he dialled his mother's numbers and she answered\*\*\*

His.mother: did you find him

Tarek: ma what does baba mean when he says he will only come back home when you're ready to tell him the real father of the twins

\*\*\*His mother froze\*\*\*

Tarek: ma??

\*\*\*still nothing then the call was dropped....he looked at his phone trying to make out what was happening \*\*\*

---

\*\*\*He took a deep breath before he knocked on the door and soon the door opened and Mdu stood there holding a baby in his arms and his anger shot up....As soon as Mdu's mind registers what he's seeing he almost drops the baby..... his phone falls to the floor as he looks at Gaza with his eyes popped out...Gaza walks in pushing him out of the way stepping hard on his phone on purpose cracking its screen \*\*\*

Voice: who is it....

\*\*\*Marina asked and as soon as her eyes landed on Gaza she fainted\*\*\*

.  
. .  
.

\*\*\*Marina is now awake and sitting on one of the couches sobbing silently and Gaza is just sitting there looking at her....He couldn't believe this is the same woman he loved so dearly that he even changed his old ways because he wanted to be a better man for her....his eyes then went to his cousin who looks shaken even though he's trying so hard to hide that he is.....He cleared his throat\*\*\*

Gaza: why are you still here Mdu

\*\*\*Mdu frowned\*\*\*

Mdu:: what do you mean by that....there's nowhere in hell im leaving my child and Marina alone with you

\*\*\*Gaza chuckled\*\*\*

Gaza: who's house is this dear cousin...or did you perhaps help me build it

\*\*\*Mdu didn't say anything\*\*\*

Gaza: now listen here....take your bastard child and get the hell out of my house and Mdu you have 5 minutes to do so

\*\*\*Mdu looked at Marina for backup but Marina avoided his eyes and he chuckled shaking his head...he got up with his daughter in his arms and he picked the baby bag and walked out and Marina sobbed louder\*\*\*

Gaza: Marina....Marina....

Marina: im sorry Gaza...i....

\*\*\*she sobbed\*\*\*

Gaza: what are you sorry about....the cheating or the baby or the fact that he's my blood cousin or that you two are still f\*cking....which one are you sorry about

\*\*\*she just cried....he breathed out calming himself down\*\*\*

Gaza: why....why him

Marina: I made a mistake

Gaza: how when you're still sleeping with him heh....how!!!

\*\*\*she just cried\*\*\*

Gaza: do you even love me or you just settled because of my money

Marina: I love you I just made a mistake

Gaza: stop saying it's a mistake because it's not damn it!!!!....

\*\*\*she jumped looking scared\*\*\*

Gaza: where is my son

Marina: he....he's with your father

Gaza: so you got rid of him so you two can f\*ck in peace

Marina: your father took him baby...i swear and I couldn't fight him

\*\*\*Gaza chuckled standing up\*\*\*

Gaza: so lying has become this easy for you now

\*\*\*she didn't say anything she just cried\*\*\*

Gaza: ok

\*\*\*he went to their bedroom and Marina got up shaking and she paced around the lounge....she took her phone and made a call to her mother\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

25

Marina: Ma

Her.mother: Marina my baby

Marina: Ma Gaza is alive...he's here at the house

\*\*\*she said panicking\*\*\*

Her.mother: what are you talking about....don't tell me you're seeing ghosts now Marina

Marina: why would he be a ghost mama....he disappeared he hasn't been declared  
dead yet

Her.mother: you know what I mean man....wait Tsakane is calling me hold on

\*\*\*Gaza came back and he stood there looking at Marina who immediately dropped the  
call shaking\*\*\*

Gaza: where are my clothes?

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Marina: i....i put them safely in....in the spare bedroom

Gaza: why

\*\*\*her phone rang and it was her mother...she just let it ring\*\*\*

Gaza: aren't you gonna answer that

\*\*\*she slowly answered the call\*\*\*

Gaza: loud speaker

\*\*\*she slowly put it on loud speaker with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Marina: ma...you're on lou....

Gaza: shhh

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Marina: hello ma

Her.mother: Tsakane uri Mdu was there and he met him too....how is it possible....are you sure its really him Marina

\*\*\*she said with a shaky tone\*\*\*

Gaza: yes its me

\*\*\*Marina's mother froze then the call dropped and Gaza chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Gaza: yah neh.....anyway tell your mother my aunt and your baby daddy that I said let the games begin

\*\*\*Marina frowned\*\*\*

Gaza: tell them they should have had me killed instead

Marina: wh...what.... what do you mean by that....what are you trying to say

Gaza: im giving you a month to vacate my house Marina...only a month since you bore me a son because if not I'll be dragging you out like the trash you are right now

\*\*\*her lips shook\*\*\*

Marina: Gaza wait ummm...look I love you and we can go for marriage counselling and fix us....im sorry...i'll stay away from him....please don't do this im begging you

\*\*\*he looked at her annoyed\*\*\*

Gaza: out of community of property....remember.....a month Marina... a month or I'll get physical and we both don't want that

\*\*\*then he walked to the door\*\*\*

Marina: Gaza wait.... can we talk about this please im begging you

\*\*\*she tried to grab him as tears ran down her cheeks but he shoved her off and she staggered back almost losing her balance and he walked out\*\*\*

Marina: no...no no no...ooh my God no....this is not happening

\*\*\*she said with her hands on top of her head\*\*\*

---

## AT HEATH'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Jabu finds his son sitting outside in the back patio lost in his thoughts and he sighed and sat next to him....he cleared his throat feeling nervous \*\*\*

Jabu: can we talk

\*\*\*Sbu just nodded looking down and Jabu sighed rubbing his palms together\*\*\*

Jabu: I neglected you not because I don't care but because I was ashamed and I thought you see me as a failure

\*\*\*Sbu didn't say anything\*\*\*

Jabu: I couldn't save your sister Sbu and its killing me inside

\*\*\* Jabu swallowed hard so did Sbu\*\*\*

Jabu: ....all I wanted was to give you a family...a mother and a warm home and when she changed I became in denial and I hoped she would change back to the Amo I fell in love with but...

\*\*\*his breath shook as he sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: im sorry I failed you buddy....i failed you with your biological mother and now with Amo....im sorry you lost your little sister and I wasn't there for you

\*\*\*Sbu started sobbing silently\*\*\*

Jabu: I love you buddy and you mean everything to me.... you're the only son and child I have now....i learned to be a father ka wena boy....im sorry I wasn't there for you but im here now....and I'll fix myself and be better for you.....ke flopila blaen ( I messed up bad)



and as parents we will flop here and there but that doesn't mean we don't care or love you...we are human and there's a saying that says to Air is human and to forgive is Devine....so haarde mfanaka ( im sorry my boy)

\*\*\*He pulled him to his chest and held him tight as he let out a loud sob grabbing on to his shirt tight....tears ran down Jabu's cheeks as he consoled his son\*\*\*

Jabu: we gonna be ok I promise buddy....we gonna be ok

\*\*\*He said with a breaking voice and Sbu just cried holding on to his father...after some time he calmed down and is left with hiccups and sniffs but he didn't move from his father's chest\*\*\*

Sbu: I don't blame you thaima

\*\*\*he sniffed\*\*\*

Sbu: ....i just needed you....she broke us and now she died without saying sorry for failing you especially me....i saw a mother in her papa....i once even fought with my biological mother because she insulted her....she made me taste having a loving and caring mother and a warm home then she also took that away from me....i can't even ask her why now....

\*\*\* He sniffed wiping his snort and Jabu swallowed hard and Sbu sobbed again\*\*\*

Sbu: im hurting papa....its hurts so bad.....i miss Lile and her laughter

Jabu: I miss her too buddy.....alot....we gonna be ok...with time we will be ok wankutlwa ( you hear me)

\*\*\*Sbu nodded as Jabu wiped his own tears\*\*\*

Jabu: lets stop these crying sessions cause if people see us we will lose our street cred

\*\*\*he said and chuckled and Sbu got off Jabu's chest and he chuckled lightly wiping his own tears then they heard a car driving in then plus or minus minutes later doors opened and they closed again\*\*\*

Sbu: thaima...am I in trouble for....

\*\*\*he couldn't even say it\*\*\*

Jabu: leave that to me...don't even think about it....me and your uncles have everything under control ok

\*\*\*Sbu nodded\*\*\*

Jabu: but your punishment is still waiting for you

\*\*\*Sbu swallowed hard.... the door opened and in walked MJ followed by Ray and Ray looks annoyed \*\*\*

Ray: I should've requested an Uber for you...fool

Mj: stop hating Big bro....you know you love all this hotness....

Ray: f\*tsek nxa!!!

\*\*\*MJ laughed\*\*\*

MJ: daddy is home!!!!

\*\*\*he shouted as he walked further in using crutches and Sbu quickly got up as his face lit up as he walked inside\*\*\*

MJ: come to daddy my son

\*\*\*he said opening his arms with a huge smile on his face and Sbu laughed shaking his head...he went to him and they hugged tight....Jabu also walked in and bro hugged with Ray\*\*\*

Ray: you good

Jabu: ke mnate ( im good)

\*\*\*Ray nodded and he looked at Sbu who's now talking to MJ looking alive again\*\*\*

Jabu: re ovile....i think re tlo ba grand ( we talked.... I think we will be alright)

\*\*\*Ray nodded\*\*\*

Ray: but I still need to whip his a\$\$ for the stunt he pulled

Jabu: he knows

Ray: good....where's Heath

Jabu: he said he's going to Castiel's house....Cass wore his R53 000 suit and he's not happy at all

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: im not even gonna ask

MJ: King J

\*\*\*they hugged\*\*\*

Jabu: mfanaka...dintshang....and then wena... leoto? ( my boy...how are you...and you... the leg?)

MJ: eish bros....it was a street prank gone wrong.... mxm my ancestors failed me big time

Jabu: what

\*\*\*Sbu laughed\*\*\*

MJ: aah mxm....bros some people have no sense of humour ooo....you see bros my friends and I we dey do prank where one of them walks passed me and bumps into my shoulder by mistake and he doesn't apologise you see.... and as he walks away I dey

grab sand from where he stepped and put it into a calabash tied with black and red cloths in front of people and so we see their reactions.....

\*\*\*he shook his head dramatically\*\*\*

Mj: mxm bros I chose to be the undercover wizard can you imagine ....and bros ahh mxm.....we chose the wrong section of the town to do this ooo

\*\*\*he shook his head and raised his shoulders and he snapped his fingers and folded his arms dramatically \*\*\*

MJ: bros... mxm the beating I got before I managed to escape .....hei Chineke..... I swear even my lazy ancestors cried for me ooo..... bros i don suffer....i ran and climbed over some tall wall and when I landed on the other side I broke my leg

Ray: strained your leg stop lying mumu

MJ: Big Ray I beg....this is my story ah ah...can't you let me tell it the way I see fit

Ray: with lies

MJ: you might see it as a lie but to me it's the truth ooo cause I was there and here is the proof

\*\*\*he said showing him his leg\*\*\*

Ray: I give up with you mxm....Jabu lets go talk somewhere....his story changes every time he tell it to a different person and now I don't even know which one is the truth

\*\*\*Jabu laughed following Ray\*\*\*

Jabu: ntwana later

MJ: I'll tell you the rest of the story later

Jabu: sho

\*\*\*Sbu wiped his tears still laughing cause he knows what really happened to MJ\*\*\*

Sbu: so they don't know you sprained your leg when you jumped over a wall after your girl's father almost caught you two doing the deed

MJ: shhh are you mad....you want me to get a beating of my life

\*\*Sbu laughed\*\*\*

MJ: but bros...she dey sweet well well but her bad breath and stinking armpits made me cum within 6 strokes....mxm

\*\*\*Sbu laughed\*\*\*

Sbu: lies she was just too tight for you to handle

MJ: bros fine girls also have body odour ooo...dont be fooled by big nyash and big milk storages some smell bad but we soldier on cause when Owoh is up and he wants to enter you even lose your mind a bit.... but the truth is virgins are a no no for me from

now on....hei....those creatures will turn you into a two minutes noddles ooo then tell their friends about how weak you are

\*\*\*Sbu laughed....he's glad MJ is here...he admitted to himself\*\*\*

MJ: Anyway lets leave that one..... tell me you punched that fool that left you there alone

\*\*\*Sbu sighed\*\*\*

Sbu: I haven't seen him

MJ: don't worry im here and we will show him his mama... mxm fool....but let me heal first....i need to kick him on the nuts with my good leg

\*\*\*Sbu chuckled shaking his head and they went to the kitchen\*\*\*

MJ: where is the Mamiwata of the house...the obodo ibo...the fine fine mama that my broda used Juju to get or else she wouldn't even look his way

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

MJ: im kidding....its true love....the kind of love I also want

Sbu: yeah me too...anyway she went shopping with the kids

MJ: mmmmh she dey fine that one...you would swear she bathes in milk from a cow that went to private school

\*\*\*Sbu just laughed \*\*\*

Sbu: you're crazy man

\*\*\*he continued to laugh\*\*\*

---

\*\*\*Moera is at a restaurant enjoying her meal while reading her favourite novel Mamiwota when suddenly someone stands in front of her....She lifts her eyes thinking it's her waitress and boredom suddenly engulfs her when she sees that it's just Stevens\*\*\*

Steven: if it isn't the mighty Moera Rapula

\*\*\*Moera rolls her eyes\*\*\*

Moera: go bother someone else RG im not in the mood

\*\*\*Stevens chuckled and he pulled a chair and sat down\*\*\*

Moera: RG I don't have the strength to be going back and forth with you  
assomblief....not today

\*\*\*he sat back and looked at her\*\*\*

Stevens: is it the fact that you're trending or its something else

\*\*\*she frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Moera: what do you mean by me trending....trending where

Stevens: ooh she doesn't know...eish

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Stevens: well apparently you have a crush on your twin's man the sangoma and you're even starting to develop hatred for her or its already there....apparently you're jealous and you envy her....its all information from a source close to the family

Moera: W..what...

\*\*\*she said in a whisper with her heart beating fast

Stevens: what's with that Shangaan's d\*ck cause it can't be his looks...i mean he's dark...i mean there's nothing handsome about a dark skinned nikka....you need to be fair in colour to be seen from afar you see

\*\*\*Stevens said as Moera went online and she found that she's being tagged by her Facebook followers to a post posted by a famous gossip site where a story is written about her....even notifications from Tweeter and Instagram floods in as she enters their apps \*\*\*

Moera: ooh my Gosh...no...no...no

Stevens: so is it true....you also want that Shangaan boy

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Stevens: yah neh the muthi he's using must be strong

\*\*\*she quickly took out some money from her purse and put it on top of the table and she stood up grabbing her bag phone and car keys and she rushed out leaving Stevens laughing.... She hid her face as she rushed to the parking lot and she opened her car and got in fast...

She locks her doors and breathed out....she took her phone and went online again and yep she's trending....she reads the post and the part that got to her the most is when the writer said she's always been jealous and envious of her twin and that she's always been the black sheep of her family....the writer went on to write that she's even dating married men and she washes her punani with muthi to make men not leave her and to always come back for more.... she decides to stop reading and she goes to the comment section and they are grilling her and calling her all sorts of names.

Tears fills her eyes as she continue to read the comments....Some comments caught her eyes cause they posted that they already heard the recording and they can't believe she said all that with her own mouth.....She decides to deactivate all her social media accounts and she sat there crying.....After her crying session she wiped her tears and tried to think of who would sell such story to those vultures...it had to be someone who's got nothing to lose someone close to her enough to record her....

Her mind went to Alphalette but she dismissed the idea cause that would mean he would deliberately hurt Masai and he won't do that especially now that she's in hospital....Her mind then went to Mpande and she quickly dismissed the idea cause to her he's a boring Zulu guy with a bad dressing style and he doesn't even look like he knows what a gossip page is....or maybe he recorded the whole hospital scene but she dismissed the idea again cause that would mean hurting Masai and it looks like he also cares about her so no not him....she bit her lower lip and closed her eyes as her heart broke into pieces

Sponsored

AD

her reputation is ruined " she thought"...Her eyes quickly opened wide and she took her phone and dialled her friend Selina's numbers and they rang unanswered....she dropped the call and dialled her again and it said call waiting....she waited a bit then she dropped the call trying to calm herself down

\*\*\*

Moera: ooh let it not be you Selina....let it not be you

\*\*\*she said as her heart raced as her mind went to the day they were drinking and she said some stuff she shouldn't have to her\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

## INSIDE THE RESTAURANT

Selina: ai she's busy calling me now

Stevens: I hope you can handle her cause she's crazy that one

Selina: well im not scared of her

Stevens: mmmmh if you say so

Selina: anyway how was her reaction

Stevens: she was shocked obviously

\*\*\*Selina laughed\*\*\*

Selina: it was about time someone put her in her place mxm....she always thinks she's all that khante nope she's not....she's just a jealous person who thinks the world owes her something mxm

\*\*\*Stevens chuckled\*\*\*

Stevens: and you sound like a jealous fake friend...ooh my bad.... you are

Selina: whatever....so she didn't faint or feel dizzy or something

Stevens: I told you she just up and left

Selina: mxm ooh well as long as she knows that she's trending and her secret is out then im good

Stevens: you do know she's gonna know its you right

Selina: im not scared of her mina

Stevens: ok....just be ready cause you know she can be ratchet if she wants

Selina: that makes the both of us shame

\*\*\*Stevens chuckled\*\*\*

Stevens: alright ratchet girl

\*\*\*Selina laughed\*\*\*

Selina: so when will I see you again

\*\*\*she said seductively and Stevens made a disgusted face and he got annoyed immediately \*\*\*

Stevens: you're not my type Selina...even your name says it all it sounds like some filthy woman from the streets of Alexandria with a phruza face and missing front teeth...as for your p\*ssy....b\*tch you gave it to me freely that's why I didn't decline it....

Selina: askies...what did you just say....

Stevens: you are excused...never call me again

\*\*\*He then dropped the call and blocked her numbers then he deleted them clicking his tongue....His mind went to Masai laying on that hospital bed and his heart ached....That day he saw her laying there something moved in him....he realized that he still loves her and maybe even more....he realized that he made a mistake by hurting her like that and now that he's realizing his mistakes he's gonna make sure he wins her back....This time he's gonna treat her good and make her happy and even have a relationship with her son cause even if he hates to admit it that boy is his nephew whether he likes it or not....

He knows the only person that can make him achieve winning Masai back is her twin Moera....He doesn't know as of yet how he's gonna play this out but he knows he will find a way\*\*\*

Stevens: where there's a will there's a way Stevens....Masai is gonna be yours again and this time you gonna be a better man for her

\*\*\*he nodded staring into space then he called a waitress\*\*\*

Waitress: good day sir would you like to order something

Stevens: yes sweetness but first clear this up then bring me the menu

Waitress: ooh she left...

\*\*\*she said seeing the money....She took the money and the dishes and she walked away and Stevens sighed\*\*\*

---



AT THE BNB (LATER AT NIGHT)

\*\*\*Gaza just spoke with Alphalette and now he's checking up on Tshimo before she sleeps\*\*\*

Gaza: you sounds down what's wrong...

\*\*\*Tshimo sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: spring cleaning but eish...Gee

Gaza: what's wrong mama

\*\*\*he said sitting up with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Tshimo: I found out that my ex the married one was gunned down assassination style at his home

Gaza: ooh is it?

\*\*\*he said with a bored tone and he laid back again on the bed\*\*\*

Tshimo: bathong Gee

Gaza: what....he's an ex that hurt you and played with your heart so I don't feel sorry for him...let him rest in hell

Tshimo: what about his wife and kids

Gaza: they are alive a swi tano....you're surviving without both parents and siblings at least they have a mother

Tshimo: wow...just wow

Gaza: ok ke.....shame condolences to them mama...time heals so va ta va kahle ( they will be ok )

Tshimo: yho yah neh

Gaza: or you want me to donate some cash to them?...i can do that....i don't mind

Tshimo: on to the next topic assomblief

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Tshimo: ooh yah...heh....well apparently the new doctor at the hospital is missing...well his family reported him missing and the police came to work to question the staff about when they last saw him

Gaza: is it

Tshimo: mmmmh I mean he's new and for him to disappear for days without contacting anyone and taking anything with him means he's really missing

Gaza: mmmmh

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: shame his family must be worried and I heard his patients are also worried about him

Gaza: mmmmh....it sounds like you're worried about him too

Tshimo: he seemed like a nice guy....you could tell by his flirtatious ways that he's a player but he was kind and fun to be around...i mean almost all the ladies at the hospital including nurses wanted him

Gaza: are you included on that almost

Tshimo: bathong

\*\*\*she giggled and he clenched his jaws closing his eyes a bit\*\*\*

Gaza: well he better remain wherever he is then

Tshimo: that's not nice Gee

Gaza: well im not a nice person in general....im just nice and kind to those who matter to me

\*\*\*She sighed...she's experiencing another side of Gaza and she wasn't sure of how to handle it...but she can't complain cause technically she doesn't know much about him or his personality\*\*\*

Tshimo: ok Mr not so nice person

\*\*\*Gaza chuckled\*\*\*

Gaza: don't be like that mama....im a man and I can't sympathise with someone who's interested in you

Tshimo: ummm why not....don't I deserve some action nyana in my life bathong....i also want to get married and have kids gape im not getting any younger Gee

Gaza: you're still young mama...marriage and kids will find you not the other way around

Tshimo: you don't understand Gee

Gaza: trust me I do and I'll make sure you have all that

Tshimo: huh?

Gaza: don't worry you'll get it one day...anyway let me catch some shut eye....we will talk tomorrow morning ok

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: ok good night

Gaza: sleep tight mama

Tshimo: shap

Gaza: shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and Gaza sighed....he got out of bed put his phone under the pillow and he grabbed his car keys and another phone then he left\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\* The man got out of the car and locked it the he looked around and it was quiet....he fixed his shirt cleared his voice and he spoke a few words to check if his voice changed too and yep it changed too...he then took out his phone and made a call\*\*\*

Marina: hello

Man: hey its me Mdu....is he gone

\*\*\*she frowned\*\*\*

Marina: who's phone are you using

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Man: a new one anere xeghora xa wena ( your big bully) stepped on my phone

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Marina: ummm ok let me open for you

\*\*\*she opened for him and he walked in then he knocked on the door and Marina opened and there stood Mdu and she moved so he enters \*\*\*

Marina: Where is Mikateko

Mdu: who??...ummm eish mxm this stress is gonna be the death of me

\*\*\*he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Mdu: she's with Ma

\*\*\*she sighed and went to sit down\*\*\*

Marina: he made me put him on loud speaker while I was talking to ma

\*\*\*she sighed again putting her hands on her face feeling emotional\*\*\*

Marina: he's alive and he's really here....i don't know how to handle that and hala he's saying I have a month to leave this house

Mdu: and I think you should

\*\*\*she raised her head and looked at him with a frown and he cleared his throat and sighed then he sat down next to her\*\*\*

Mdu: think about it....it looks like he has been keeping tabs on us....he knows we are together and he may be back for revenge....maybe he's giving you a way out cause you bore him a male child so I think you should get out while still in one peace...if you cant do it for us then do it for your....ummm our daughter

Marina: I don't mean to offend you but i still love him Mdu...he's my husband the father of my child

\*\*\*Mdu clenched his jaws but the he breathed out calming himself\*\*\*

Mdu: and he almost killed us and this time around he might succeed....if it's his money you're worried about don't worry....you guys are married in community of property so you won't leave empty handed...you'll leave with half off his wealth and we will start life somewhere far and live happily....think about it please

\*\*\*she looked away avoiding his eyes because he doesn't know the truth...not even her mother knows they are married out of community of property....now she regrets it big time but that time she was so in love with him that she wanted to prove her loyalty and dedication to him....how stupid of her " she thought" \*\*\*

Mdu: move out please don't provoke him.....a man scorned like he did is dangerous ....enough about all that....now let me make you feel good....let me decrease your stress levels

\*\*\*he said brushing her bare thick thigh\*\*\*

Marina: now its not a good time Mdu

Mdu: it is...we are both stressed Marina....lets offload so we can think clearly

\*\*\*he said bringing his face closer to hers and she waited for the kiss on her lips but nope it didn't come instead he went to her neck and kissed it instead...she moaned and he stopped then he got up and pulled her up as she looked at him confused and he pulled her to the bedroom....

He pushed her to the bed and she looked at him confused again laying on her back and he got between her legs and pulled her underwear off and he threw it on the floor then he pulled his track pants along with his briefs and he stoke his thick and long pitch black monster that has a pink tip and he directed it to her hole ....He pushed the tip in and Marina moved as it blocked her hole\*\*\*

Marina: Mdu...

Mdu: shhh...relax

\*\*\*he pushed the tip inside forcefully and Marina moved back screaming and the tip slipped out....he pulled her back and held her still\*\*\*

Marina: its painful Mdu

Mdu: you need to relax so it doesn't hurt Marina

\*\*\*he said annoyed\*\*\*

Marina: did your d\*ck grow in size....you always enter without trouble Mdu now why is it painful....

\*\*\*she tried to take a look and Mdu pushed her down\*\*\*

Mdu: you're turning me off now....can we just enjoy this....wena relax so it doesn't hurt

\*\*\*she sighed and tried to relax as he pushed his d\*ck inside...he forcefully pushed half of it in and she cried as it is painful and he started to move....she clenched her jaws grabbing the duvet tight and he increased his speed...he went on for three minutes f\*ck\*ng her hard\*\*\*

Marina: sh\*t Mdu slow down...ahhh

\*\*\*she said as all his d\*ck went in and she felt like he was poking her womb.....and he didn't listen to her instead he increased his speed ravaging her nunu.....tears ran down on the side of her face as the pain was unbearable then out of the blue he grabbed her thighs so tight digging his nails in her skin and he released his semen inside of her...

Mdu: mmmmh...sh\*t....

\*\*\* he grabbed her waist this time and he continued to move as if he didn't just come now having no mercy on her punani....he opened her legs wider and went in and out of her fast and deeper\*\*\*

Marina: f\*ck Mdu slow down its painful....you're hurting me please

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Mdu: you're a big girl now so take it

\*\*\*he said as he continued f\*ck\*ng her with no mercy....he didn't even care about her cries and her begging him to slow down....her mind went to Gaza and how he used to punish her through rough sex whenever she messes up and she shook the thought off as Mdu flipped her over and she laid on her stomach and he pulled her ass up and into the wrong hole he entered and she jumped trying to get away from him but he held her tight\*\*\*

Mdu: where are you going

Marina: Mdu since when do we do this

Mdu: since today....im spicing things between us Marina...can we just enjoy this...please....we are both stressed so just let loose and explore

Marina: Mdu not with that hole!!

Mdu: fine

\*\*\*he pulled her closer and slammed in her punani hole and she screamed and he went hard on her....she tried to move away but he's holding her tight as he f\*cks her hard going in and out of her breathing heavily....she now felt pain mixed with pleasure so she starts moaning enjoying herself when suddenly his d\*ck slips out and "Mdu" pushed it roughly inside her b\*tt hole and she jumps screaming out in pain but he holds her tight and continues to f\*ck her b\*tt hole fast groaning\*\*\*

Marina: Mdu stop....stop....yho mmaweee....Mdu its painful...stop wa ni dlaya ( you are killing me)

\*\*\*he didn't stop instead he went deeper and he came inside of her and he pulled out immediately and slid back into her punani hole and he continued to f\*ck her as she cried with her now burning and bleeding b\*tt hole\*\*\*

Marina: Mdu...

Mdu: sh\*t this is what im talking about....

\*\*\*he said as he hit her g-spot and she moaned loud and he continued to tap it and she called out his name as she chased her own orgasm....he went on and on and her walls inside shrank and squeezed his d\*ck as she released screaming with pleasure.....her body shook and "Mdu" went on f\*ck\*ng her through her orgasm chasing his own happy ending\*\*\*

.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED...

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

26

AROUND 3 IN THE MORNING

\*\*\* "Mdu" slammed into Marina's b\*tthole and he stilled in her filling it up with his s\*men and he pulled out and his d\*ck was covered in blood and Marina collapsed on the bed and she passed out.... Mdu then went to the bathroom and he washed his d\*ck again in the basin and he wiped it and he went back to the bedroom and wore his boxers and track pants that he took off after their 4th round and he looked at Marina and he clicked his tongue he walked out of the bedroom satisfied. He walked out of the house and he closed the door then he locked the security burglar door and went over and he jumped over the wall and he got inside the car and started it then he drove off \*\*\*

.  
.

### AROUND 9 IN THE MORNING

\*\*\* Marina opened her eyes slowly as she heard a loud knock on the door...she closed them and opened them again as the knock went on and louder....The knock stopped and her phone rang she tried to reach for her phone but she felt pain pierce from her b\*tthole straight to her heart and she screamed\*\*\*

Mdu: Marina....Marina open the door....is he in there with you..

\*\*\*He said panicking and he moved the door handle and the door opened and he peaked inside\*\*\*

Mdu: Marina!!!

\*\*\*he said shaking the security burglar door\*\*\*

Mdu: im calling the police...answer me babe....whats going on....Marina!!!

\*\*\*Marina dragged herself off the bed with her teeth clenched together as tears ran down her cheeks....she pulled the white bloodied sheet and she slowly wrapped it around her naked body and she slowly walked out of the bedroom balancing herself with the wall.....she felt weak and pain all over her body and her throat hurt so bad.....

When Mdu saw her his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Mdu: is...is that blood...what happened to you...who did this to you

\*\*\* He asked with a fading voice....some blood was dripping on the floor along with some s\*men\*\*\*

Marina: why...why do you seem surprised

\*\*\*she asked with her face filled with dried tears...dried snort and wet tears\*\*\*

Mdu: what do you mean....what happened....don't tell me he did this to you

\*\*\*he said with his eyes popped out and his heart beating fast\*\*\*

Marina: why Mdu....how can you break me like this....i know....i know we are both stressed by his return but what did I do to you to deserve this

\*\*\*Mdu frowned\*\*\*

Mdu: what are you talking about....Marina what's going on...why are you talking like this.....you know what Im calling an ambulance we will deal with the police later for now im calling an ambulance

\*\*\*He said unlocking his phone with his shaky hands and Marina didn't say anything she just cried a heart piecing cry and she slid down the wall and as soon as her butt touched the floor she screamed jumping and she knelt on the floor instead as fresh blood stained the white sheet....she laid on the floor with her stomach and she just cried painfully\*\*\*

---

AT THE BNB

\*\*\*Gaza woke up to his phone ringing and he answered without looking at the screen\*\*\*

Gaza: yeah

Alpha: you sound asleep

Gaza: I had a nightmare and I failed to find sleep again until in the early morning

\*\*\*Alpha kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Alpha: what was the nightmare about



\*\*\*Gaza sighed rubbing his eyes\*\*\*

Gaza: the day I was abducted....look I don't wanna talk about it...just tell me you're on your way here

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed...he could tell Gaza was hiding something from him and that something is big\*\*\*

Alpha: Gee you do know you can talk to me about anything

Gaza: I know Ntsako....believe me I know it's just....some of the things I went through im not ready to talk about them as of yet

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: as long as you know im here for you....Anyway im about to leave now

Gaza: how's Masai....is she out of the hospital

Alpha: she's better and....

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: she knows about Moera...someone leaked a recording of her confessing sh\*t about Masai and they are both trending on social media...mostly Moera

Gaza: hai this Moera girl is just..... ai....now I just realized that she's not worth it....she has started destroying herself and her reputation I just feel sorry for Masai.... she doesn't deserve this...i hope she's taking all this well....but never underestimate Moera....girls like her don't fall from grace for a long time....she might have an ace up her sleeves...she knows dangerous people so be careful

Alpha: you sound like you know of her more than I do

\*\*\*he asked with a curious tone\*\*\*

Gaza: she almost killed my sister in law so I had to do some digging on her....

Alpha: what digging....dude you just regained your memory and already you're digging on people's pasts....what's going on Gee

Gaza: I was bored....look she's more than a pretty face and guess what....

\*\*\*Alpha sighed....this wasn't his brother.....he needed a new approach of trying to figure him out cause he's acting weird and secretive and that doesn't sit well with him...on top of all that his ancestors are not saying anything....they are quiet when it comes to him\*\*\*

Alpha: what...

Gaza: her dead fiancé is actually alive

Alpha: wait what....

\*\*\*Gaza chuckled\*\*\*

Gaza: yeah...he faked his own death

Alpha: damn.... why the hell would he do that....

Gaza: im still waiting for that info....my boy Beast is the one who got me this info

Alpha: you reached out to your old soldier buddy

\*\*\*He asked surprised and Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: yeah Heath is the one that got me his digits....apparently Big Ray is married to his baby sis....small world right....

Alpha: wow ok....so he's a Khumalo??? isn't his African name and surname Ghananian or something....

Gaza: that's a story for another day

Alpha: so you're going back to your old life now

\*\*\*he asked with a worried tone\*\*\*

Gaza: I tried to change to be a better man for a woman...im never doing it again cause I was played for a fool.....the next woman im gonna be with better be ready to accept me the way I am or jy moet voetsek

\*\*\*Alpha kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Alpha: what if that woman is Tshimo

Gaza: then I'll protect her from afar....I'll keep my distance

Alpha: she means that much to you

Gaza: let's just say her presence in my life since I met her no matter how close she is to me tames the monster in me

\*\*\*Alpha didn't say anything\*\*\*

Gaza: anyway drive safely...let me check up on her then sleep for a bit

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: don't hurt her man....there's something special about her

Gaza: you have no business being concerned about her like this Ntsako....you don't even know her like that...awutwi neh

\*\*\*he said getting pissed\*\*\*

Alpha: calm your tits Gaza....i told you I don't want her...our spirits just connected

Gaza: let your spirit connect with Masai's not with Tshimo's....

Alpha: hebanna...Gee

Gaza: don't Gee me.....Tshimo is off limits....she's mine and mine alone....i dont want no man saying sh\*t like that about her cause it pissed me off....you don't hear me saying sh\*t like that about Masai so stop pissing me off by saying sh\*t like that about Tshimo

Alpha: Gaza what's going on with you

\*\*\*he didn't answer him\*\*\*

Alpha: since when are you this obsessed about a woman you're not even dating

\*\*\*he didn't answer him\*\*\*

Alpha: Gee

Gaza: just stop saying things like that Ntsako...please

Alpha: ok I'll stop but so you know....what I feel is more of a sisterly connection...you know Ma and dad never got together after the incident so what if baba met someone....you get where im going with this

\*\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: I did a background check on her too and her mother cause she doesn't know her father and there's no connection between her mother and your father.....Her mother did meet a man from Limpopo by the name of Isaac Shikwambana and he could be her father so refrain from whatever feelings you have towards her

Alpha: Shikwambana???

Gaza: yeah

Alpha: where did I hear that surname

\*\*\*he asked himself\*\*\*

Gaza: look.... I said my piece or else I'll also let my spirit connect with Masai's and lets see if you'll have peaceful nights

\*\*\*Alpha chuckled not believing what he's hearing but that surname stayed in his head\*\*\*

Gaza: anyway what time will you arrive

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed...he can feel that something big is off with Gaza....this is not the Gaza he knows before he was abducted....something is off and he's more worried now\*\*\*

Alpha: im not sure with the traffic....I'll call you when im nearer

Gaza: ok let me call Tshimo...I'll wait for your call

Alpha: Gee

Gaza: yeah

Alpha: don't give in to whatever is changing you to be this impulsive and obsessed person....i know you have a not so kind other side of you but this is too much bhut....whatever it is don't let it control you...don't let Tshimo and Nyiko meet this heartless side of you cause they might take things to heart unlike me

\*\*\*Gaza sighed brushing his face\*\*\*

Alpha: im just saying

\*\*\*Gaza kept quiet for a bit and he sighed again\*\*\*

Gaza: im sorry bhuti...i just....she's mine and....

\*\*\*he sighed feeling like sh\*t\*\*\*

Gaza: she's making me lose my mind.....even now that im not near her I feel like im not functioning well... I know you won't betray me it's just that I can't help it....

Alpha: that's called obsession and its dangerous Gee

Gaza: I want her and only her....i can't help it

Alpha: the big question is do you love her

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Gaza: I care a lot for her.....i want to always protect her....i want her to be happy always and I want to give her everything she desires

Alpha: that is you loving her man but the obsession needs to go man...it's actually a turn off Gee

Gaza: then what did I feel for Marina then

Alpha: you also loved or still love her

Gaza: well I guess not enough to kill for her...i guess she wasn't worth it but Tshimo...

\*\*\* sh\*t " he thought to himself"

Alpha: wait what....

\*\*\*he asked shocked and Gaza cursed internally of this stupid mistake he just made\*\*\*

Gaza: I meant...

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Gaza: you know what let's talk when you get here...shap

Alpha: wait.... what did you do Gazankulu Mabunda...

\*\*\*Gaza dropped the call and he put his phone on Mute and he sighed looking up in the ceiling...He picked his phone again and waited for Alphalette's incoming call to end then he unlocked his phone and called Tshimo\*\*\*

---

## AT THE HOSPITAL (MASAI)

\*\*\*Im sitting here staring into space thinking of where everything got messed up...I wonder when did Moera started hating on me....im asking myself if she's been pretending to care for me since we were kids or it all started now....did Alphalette's presence in my life trigger something in her or she's always been like this....huuuh (sigh)... Im more heart broken than angry right now I don't even know how I will face her from now on after I heard how she really feels about me....I mean she was rooting for me and Alpha to be together was all that a lie...why would she waste her energy like that only for her to fall for him (sigh)...i wonder who leaked that recording maybe it's one of her friends that's why I don't have friends....

Im glad Phalette rushed here after he found out about the leaked recording and the talk he gave me helped a bit even though it couldn't un-break my heart or undo the whole thing.... Im glad he's in my life cause yho...if he wasn't who knows how I would've handle this whole thing....As for Ma....she's not coping at all she got here and found me and Alpha and you could see the relief on her face....I know she loves Moera and I and I also know she doesn't know how to handle he whole thing....

If you see Doris Rapula- Smith not looking all glam and beautiful know that she's not coping at all but im glad ausVee is there and she's helping with Khai until Phalette comes back....Yep he left to help his brother....shame I feel for him he's stressed about his brother and he's been here for me since day 1 and now its this trending recording (sigh)...im sure he's regretting dating me now (sigh)...Imagine him experiencing so much drama in my life in such a short period of time of us dating ( sigh)\*\*\*

Voice: stress is not good for you Masa

\*\*\*I turned and Stevens is standing there.....good Lord why...\*\*\*

Stevens: I had to come and see if you're alright

Me: you didn't have to

\*\*\*he walked in\*\*\*

Me: stop...stop right there

\*\*\*he stopped...good..... cause I don't want him near me \*\*\*

Me: I don't want to see visitors

\*\*\*I said holding the emergency remote showing him that im about to call a nurse in here and I see him sighing \*\*\*

Stevens: look I mean no harm....i just wanted to make sure you're ok that's all

Me: why

\*\*\*he keeps quiet a bit\*\*\*

Stevens: cause I still love you Masai...

\*\*\*I found myself laughing\*\*\*

Stevens: I know it sound like a lie because of how I hurt you but it's the truth

Me: just leave Stevens...

Stevens: I really do

Me: no you don't...you think you do because you see how good your brother is to me....because you see your brother is doing what you failed to do.....it's not love

Stevens its regret so go deal with your regrets somewhere else not here or anywhere close to me...please

\*\*\*he looked down with a sad face...mxm....satan....i pressed the emergency button and turned and faced the other way \*\*\*

Stevens: I'll prove to you that im genuine....i know I messed up and I'll earn you trust again....I'll do better and I'll be better....our love story is not over Masai...this is just the beginning

Me: yho motho wa Modimo leave....im going through a stressful period in my life so I don't need your stress too Stevens....i don't want to be dealing with your craziness....stay away from me or I'll get a restraining order again you!!

\*\*\*I said all that turning to face him...khante where is the damn nurse nx....ooh here she is mxm\*\*\*

Me: he needs to leave and please don't allow him in here again

\*\*\*the nurse frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Nurse: aren't you the guy that her man kicked out of here when she was in a coma

\*\*\*wait what?....I see Stevens sighing and he walks out\*\*\*

Nurse: how did he get here....Miss Rapula im sorry...i don't know how he got in here....I'll talk to the Matron and we will get to the bottom of this

\*\*\* huuh im feeling overwhelmed right now\*\*\*

Nurse: im sorry again Miss Rapula....i was busy with the other patient so I didn't see him come in I would've called security on him like I was told to

Me: its ok nurse don't worry about it....just make sure he never comes in here again

Nurse: we will make sure...im sorry again....do you need anything

\*\*\*I just shook my head no\*\*\*

Nurse: let me go talk to the matron and she'll deal with this and make sure it never happens again...im sorry again

\*\*\*she walked out\*\*\*

Me: God please give me the strength to deal with all these....in fact please take control and deal with all these for me cause me dealing with it myself will put a strain on my health....so please take control Modimo waka...please

\*\*\*I quickly wiped my tears as the door opened and Ma walked in looking all glamorous with her make up on fleek....she's even wearing her expensive red bottoms....ok mama what's going on\*\*\*

Me: wow you look.... good

Ma: I guess all I needed was a good d\*ck from my old flame....

Me: Ma!!!

\*\*\*I don't like it when she talks about d\*cks and s\*x positions....its just wrong

Sponsored

AD

he's stressed about his brother and he's been here for me since day 1 and now its this trending recording (sigh)....im sure he's regretting dating me now (sigh)...Imagine him experiencing so much drama in my life in such a short period of time of us dating ( sigh)\*\*\*

Voice: stress is not good for you Masa

\*\*\*I turned and Stevens is standing there.....good Lord why...\*\*\*

Stevens: I had to come and see if you're alright

Me: you didn't have to

\*\*\*he walked in\*\*\*

Me: stop...stop right there

\*\*\*he stopped...good..... cause I don't want him near me \*\*\*

Me: I don't want to see visitors

\*\*\*I said holding the emergency remote showing him that im about to call a nurse in here and I see him sighing \*\*\*

Stevens: look I mean no harm....i just wanted to make sure you're ok that's all

Me: why

\*\*\*he keeps quiet a bit\*\*\*

Stevens: cause I still love you Masai...

\*\*\*I found myself laughing\*\*\*

Stevens: I know it sound like a lie because of how I hurt you but it's the truth

Me: just leave Stevens...

Stevens: I really do

Me: no you don't...you think you do because you see how good your brother is to me....because you see your brother is doing what you failed to do.....it's not love

Stevens its regret so go deal with your regrets somewhere else not here or anywhere close to me...please

\*\*\*he looked down with a sad face...mxm....satan....i pressed the emergency button and turned and faced the other way \*\*\*

Stevens: I'll prove to you that im genuine....i know I messed up and I'll earn you trust again....I'll do better and I'll be better....our love story is not over Masai...this is just the beginning

Me: yho motho wa Modimo leave....im going through a stressful period in my life so I don't need your stress too Stevens....i don't want to be dealing with your craziness....stay away from me or I'll get a restraining order again you!!

\*\*\*I said all that turning to face him...khante where is the damn nurse nx....ooh here she is mxm\*\*\*

Me: he needs to leave and please don't allow him in here again

\*\*\*the nurse frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Nurse: aren't you the guy that her man kicked out of here when she was in a coma

\*\*\*wait what?....I see Stevens sighing and he walks out\*\*\*

Nurse: how did he get here....Miss Rapula im sorry...i don't know how he got in here....I'll talk to the Matron and we will get to the bottom of this

\*\*\* huuh im feeling overwhelmed right now\*\*\*

Nurse: im sorry again Miss Rapula....i was busy with the other patient so I didn't see him come in I would've called security on him like I was told to

Me: its ok nurse don't worry about it....just make sure he never comes in here again



Nurse: we will make sure...im sorry again....do you need anything

\*\*\*I just shook my head no\*\*\*

Nurse: let me go talk to the matron and she'll deal with this and make sure it never happens again...im sorry again

\*\*\*she walked out\*\*\*

Me: God please give me the strength to deal with all these....in fact please take control and deal with all these for me cause me dealing with it myself will put a strain on my health....so please take control Modimo waka...please

\*\*\*I quickly wiped my tears as the door opened and Ma walked in looking all glamorous with her make up on fleek....she's even wearing her expensive red bottoms....ok mama what's going on\*\*\*

Me: wow you look.... good

Ma: I guess all I needed was a good d\*ck from my old flame....

Me: Ma!!!

\*\*\*I don't like it when she talks about d\*cks and s\*x positions....its just wrong she's our mother for heaven's sake....i don't need to hear about how she was....aaaarg\*\*\*

Ma: keng ( what)....i was reaching my breaking point with this leaked recording...but don't worry my lawyers and PI will get to the bottom of all this..... whomever leaked that recording will pay dearly...the law suit that is waiting for her

\*\*\*she chuckled\*\*\*

Ma: im just waiting for Moera to get back to me so she tells me who that b\*tch is....

Anyway how are you my baby

\*\*\*I just shrugged my shoulders\*\*\*

Ma: allow yourself to feel betrayed and hurt so you can start healing my baby.... I don't think Moera wa itira waitsi... ( i don't think Moera is doing all these things intentionally)

Me: how can you say that mama

\*\*\*she looked away\*\*\*

Ma: look im not disputing what she did to you but she can't just turn into this horrible person just like that.... why go to all the trouble of protecting you and being there for you only for her to change just like that

\*\*\* wow\*\*\*

Ma: I don't want you two to hate each other Masai....you are both my babies...i love you so much....i don't want to disappoint or fail your late mother....i swear I'll fix this

Me: you cant fix my broken heart ma....and you cant undo what she did to me and said about me.....lefoko ga le boe mama go bowa monwana so even if the whole scandal disappears it won't change the fact that it happened and that I'll never look at her the same way

\*\*\*tears ran down my cheeks and she tried to touch me but I moved my hand\*\*\*

Me: she came here and she wasn't aware that I was awake from coma....the things she said to me mama....she didn't sound remorseful to what she did to me....she said when I wake up I shouldn't play victim and....

\*\*\*I tried to swallow a lump that's stuck on my throat\*\*\*

Me: ...she said a whole lot....She wasn't sorry that I almost died.... she sounded bitter and heartless towards me and all for what...a man...jealousy and envy....i don't even know what she envies from me or what she's jealous about cause im always sick....i have a boring life...most of the time im depressed ....I can't believe she's talking about me getting all the attention....

\*\*\*I just chuckled\*\*\*

Me: does she think I enjoy getting sympathy from people all the damn time....does she think I enjoy getting petty looks when I walk like a robot cause all my joints are painful....i enjoy not being able to get out of bed cause I can't move my body....that most of the time I can't do things for myself.....i forget things easily and sometimes I can't even reconstruct a simple sentence I have to always write important things down cause I might forget them.....sometimes I even forget my own birthday or Khai's birthday because of a brain fog.....

\*\*\*I wiped my falling tears\*\*\*

Me: my pregnancy was a high risk most of the time I spend it in hospital because of LUPUS...i can go on and on about how my life is affected by this Lupus disease and I never complain mama I just soldier on cause this disease will be part of my life until a cure is found which might never happen cause its autoimmune disease that comes with other chronic diseases on top which some I already have....and she envies that....she's jealous of that???....as for relationships mine never worked out...i was cheated on....all the guys I dated cheated on me and hurt me while she was engaged to the love of her life and I never envied or got jealous of her....i was actually happy that at least one of us will have a happy ending

\*\*\*mama is just looking up blinking rapidly to prevent tears from coming out\*\*\*

Me: do what you have to do to help her with this scandal but please make sure she stays away from me....i don't want to see her....i want peace mama that's all  
\*\*\*I turned and faced the other ways as a sob escaped my mouth....im broken....Moera broke my heart straight\*\*\*

---

AT THE HOSPITAL ( MARINA)

NARRATED

\*\*\*Marina is still passed out from pain medication she got she's now admitted at the hospital...She got three stitches on her nana and she's also on antibiotics and they also gave her morning after pills after she asked for them...she couldn't fall pregnant again for Mdu the man that just broke her like this and her baby girl is just four months old for her to be falling pregnant again not to mention that her husband is back and now more than ever she wants to fix her marriage cause Mdu just showed her the other side of him she hates....he didn't have mercy on her even when she begged him to stop he didn't .... even her cries didn't move him so she's done with him....Her mother is sitting there looking sad as she looking at Marina ....

As for Mdu he's outside in his car trying to figure out what happened....He knows he didn't go back to see her last night but she said he came.....right now he's even questioning his sanity cause Marina swears he came but he knows he didn't and the fact that she even banned him from coming close to her means she's not making this up....His phone rings and he answers\*\*\*

Mdu: ma

His.mother: what's going on papa.... what did you say happened to Marina

\*\*\*He sighed\*\*\*

Mdu: she says I came last night and...i was rough with her in the bedroom... when I came to see her in the morning she looked in pain Ma...she was bleeding and she seemed weak....she says I did that to her but I didn't

His.mother: I don't understand you Mdu u ri yini

Mdu: im as confused as you ma....i didn't go to see her last night but she swears I did and we even talked

\*\*\*his mother kept quiet\*\*\*

Mdu: Ma she looked bad...her neck is even red like she was strangled and she says I did that to her....did I leave the house last night

His.mother: I didn't hear you driving out last night

Mdu: am I losing my mind....

His.mother: no you're not...let me go see someone...he will tell me what the hell is going on....i'll get to the bottom of this don't worry

Mdu: please ma....i love Marina and I would never hurt her especially like that

His.mother: im your mother....i got you Marina so I'll make sure you don't lose her....let me find out what's happening

Mdu: ok Ma...thank you

His.mother: everything will be ok...trust me

\*\*\*they ended the call and Mdu sighed\*\*\*

---

\*\*\*Gaza walked out of the doctor's office when his phone rang...he took it out of his pocket and he answered\*\*\*

Gaza: Beast

Beast: the witch is calling him

Gaza: let her call until Jesus comes back....i want them to live in fear....to sleep with one eye opened....to always look over their shoulders

Beast: so you wont strike now

Gaza: just watch and see... how is she

Beast: what really happened to her man....my guy says she got stitches on her p\*ssy.... was she...violated

Gaza: I have no idea I just know she was admitted..... I thought maybe she tried to commit suicide after my visit.... anyway have your boys started with the transactions

Beast: yeah I don't know if he has noticed but yeah they have....you still want it put in a trust fund for his baby girl

Gaza: he will...that bastard loves money and married women's p\*ssy

\*\*\*Beast chuckled\*\*\*

Beast: but why think of the baby...she will be a constant reminder of your wife's betrayal

\*\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: she didn't ask to be born to those two f\*ck\*rs so she shouldn't suffer for their sins....if they both live to see her 21st birthday they will be shocked...i want everything he makes to be taken from him and put in that trust fund with a water tight claws and given to her as a birthday gift and she will receive it like an allowance until the money runs out well that's if they are still alive but if they both die before she reaches her 21st birthday or even after her 21st birthday then she'll have access to all of it at once

\*\*\*Beast laughed\*\*\*

Beast: damn but I still don't understand why though....you could save that money for your son or something

Gaza: im doing that for someone who means a lot to me and she doesn't even need to know I did this....the fact that I will know I once did good for someone I could've

strangled to death with just one hand will always remind me that there's also good in me....i don't wanna be all bad

Beast: what if she changes like your wife

Gaza: then she'll also witness my evil side

\*\*\*Beast kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Beast: what is it that you're not telling me man

Gaza: we will talk on Tuesday

Beast: hai....ok... I'll wait for Tuesday then....ok Gee.....over and out!!!

Gaza: roger that Beast

\*\*\*they both chuckled and ended the call...he opened his car and got in then he closed the door and sighed looking at the pills he was given\*\*\*

Gaza: let the games begin ....

\*\*\*he buckled up and started the car then his phone rang and he answered it driving away\*\*\*

---

\*\*\*Mdu's mother is pacing up and down in the hospital waiting area and Marina's mother is just sitting there trying to make sense of what is happening\*\*\*

Emelda: did you just say Manganye has been missing for a while now

Tsakane: that's what his wives said....even his hut in the forest has burned to ashes....they said human remains were found there and the fact that...that useless boy is still alive it means he killed him and escaped nxa

Emelda: yho....xekwebu xa mina ( yho my God)....what are we going to do Tsakane

Tsakane: eish

\*\*\*she took off her head wrap and she wiped her face then she wrapped it around her head again...she went and sat next to her friend\*\*\*

Tsakane: this time he needs to die for real....he knows that we are responsible...he saw us Emelda....eish we shouldn't have gone to see him after he was abducted....we celebrated too early man

\*\*\*she whispered to her\*\*\*

Emelda: Manganye said he did the ritual but he's here as himself....do you think he lied to us

Tsakane: msatha nyoko lowo....nyaa ooo lowo....nkongwa mmayena entlek nxa....he lied to us....yho and to think we paid him a lot of money Emelda and we even let him have his way with our bodies and all for what....that boy was supposed to be under our control...to work for us...nxa

\*\*\*she shook her head feeling angry\*\*\*

Emelda: im telling you this boy is out for revenge...he knows everything....im sure he even tortured Manganye and he told him everything

Tsakane: I hope Manganye burns in hell nxa

Emelda: what about Marina....she doesn't want to tell me who did that to her....she didn't even wanna tell the doctor...she just cries they even suggested she sees a therapist ...yho ngwana mina....she had to be stitched again Tsakane....she just healed from her stitches of child birth and now this

\*\*\*Tsakane swallowed hard and she looked away as Emelda wiped her tears off \*\*\*

Tsakane: we will get to the bottom of this

Emelda: once I find out who did this to my child they will wish they were never born...a ni tlange when it comes to my children so his parents better be ready to bury him !!!

\*\*\*she said angrily and Tsakane swallowed hard looking down\*\*\*

Emelda: im just glad Mdu went to see her or else who knows what would've happened....that's why I trust him with her

\*\*\*Tsakane cleared her throat...she needed to save her son no matter what\*\*\*

Tsakane: what if it's that boy Gaza or he send men to rape her.... remember he's out for revenge so he might have already started with Marina

\*\*\*Emelda swallowed hard as her heart beat fast \*\*\*

Emelda: then it's on....like I said not with my child....

\*\*\*Tsakane smiled a bit looking away then she kept a serious face looking at her friend...now all she needs to do is convince Marina that Gaza send someone to rape her and he used muti to make Marina see that man as Mdu....he could say it was Gaza himself who did that to her but what if he has an alibi so saying he send a man to do that will definitely convince her....she took a deep breath calming down\*\*\*

---

\*\*\*Moera sat there in the bedroom waiting while tapping her right foot on the floor impatiently...the way she's angry she hopes she can control herself when she see her....After some time she heard the key turning on the main door and Selina walked in and closed the door then she locked it and she put her keys on top of her kitchen counter along with her handbag and she sighed taking off her shoes....In the bedroom Moera stood behind the bedroom door and waited....

Selina in her small kitchen-lounge area she opened her fridge and it was almost empty...only a bottle of water butter and jam and milk and some hot chilly sauces were left....she sighed and closed it and she went and took out her phone and made a call to her blesser but he didn't pick up....she sighed frustrated and she put her phone on the kitchen counter and she proceeded to her bedroom....she pushed the door open and



she walked in then she felt it close itself and when she turned a punch landed between her eyes breaking her nose in the process and she fell on the floor passing out\*\*\*

Moera: nxa...b\*tch

\*\*\*she checked her pulse and she was still alive so she pulled the plastic chair that's inside the bedroom and she put it next to her then she opened her school bag and took out a rope and she went back to her and she pulled her using all her energy and put her on the chair and she tied her on it...she breathed out once she's done and she went to take a duct tape from her school bag and she put it on her mouth and sat on the bed looking at her bloodied face....she looked at her bruised knuckles and she thought of ways to make them heal faster \*\*\*

Moera: aarg I'll find a way

\*\*\*she got up and went to the kitchen-lounge area and she went to her phone and put it on flight mode and she put it inside her bag and she went back to the bedroom holding a jug filled with cold water\*\*\*

Moera: let's get this over and done with...right bestie...ooh damn I forgot you can't hear me but you can betray me like that....ooh Selina...Selina..... what have you done sweetie

\*\*\*she chuckled\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO



\*\*\*Selina opened her eyes slowly and she found Moera looking at her....she blinked rapidly as she felt dizzy and she shut her eyes and opened them again then Moera removed the dug tape on her mouth roughly and Selina screamed\*\*\*

Moera: shut up!!!

\*\*\*she said slapping her hard and tears ran down her cheeks \*\*\*

Selina: Mo

\*\*\* she whispered but Moera didn't say anything she just looked at her with a serious look on her face\*\*\*

Selina: what's going on

\*\*\*she tried to move but she couldn't \*\*\*

Selina: Moera what's all this

\*\*\*she saw a machete knife on Moera's hand and she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Moera: was it you

Selina: what are you talking about Mo and what are you going to with that knife

Moera: I asked you a question Selina

\*\*\*Selina swallowed hard with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Selina: I don't know what you're talking about

\*\*\*Moera slapped Selina so hard on her face that she saw stars\*\*\*

Moera: answer my question and if you scream I'll slit your throat open so don't test me!!!

\*\*\*Selina swallowed hard looking scared....she has never seen Moera like this before\*\*\*

Selina: Mo this is not you...just let me go and we will pretend like this didn't happen

Moera: pretend??....did you just say pretend Selina

Selina: look....i don't know what's going on with you....why are you doing this....you need help

\*\*\*Moera laughed\*\*\*

Moera: you're the one that needs help....i mean are you that threatened by me that you pretended to be my friend so you can stab me in the back

\*\*\*Selina chuckled still feeling dizzy\*\*\*

Selina: threatened by you...ooh please....

\*\*\*she said rolling her eyes and Moera clenched her jaws looking at her\*\*\*

Moera: so you did record me without my permission

Selina: I don't know what you're talking about

Moera: ok I'll refresh your memory then

\*\*\*she put the dug tape back on Selina who was moving her face trying to stop Moera\*\*\*

Moera: good now let me refresh your memory ok besty

\*\*\*Selina tried to talk but she couldn't as she saw Moera moving her middle finger on the sharp part of the knife....Selina tried to move on the chair but she's tied on it....Her head is pounding hard and her face is in pain....she tried to speak but it was a futile thing to do...The next thing Moera stabbed Selina on her right thigh and he twisted the knife then left it there making Selina scream with her mouth dug taped as tears ran down her cheeks...the pain she's feeling is out of this world\*\*\*

Moera: damn...i never thought I'll ever do this to you but you pushed me to do it....i asked you nicely but you decided to play dumb....well guess what....i have all the time in the world so keep playing dumb and I'll keep stabbing you

\*\*\*Selina just cried as she took in the pain\*\*\*

Moera: so you'll tell me when you're done being dramatic

\*\*\*Selina just cried helplessly\*\*\*

---

AT THE HOSPITAL ( BUSHBUCKRIDGE)

\*\*\*Marina is looking outside the window with her mind wondering around....She's asking herself questions she has no answers to right now she's regretting cheating on her husband and also falling pregnant for Mdu.... Even though she still loves Mdu but she wishes she can turn the hands of time and not be influenced by her mother she would still be a respected married woman now everyone that knows about her and Mdu judges her....They talk about her behind her back and even belittle her....She didn't care that much about them but now that Gaza is back and they find out he is and that he's divorcing her and even kicking her out of their house they'll have a filled day with her...She swallowed hard and tears filled her eyes....Someone cleared their throat and she quickly lifted her head and her eyes met with Gaza's....Tears ran down her cheeks as she froze\*\*\*

Gaza: is this a bad time

\*\*\*she blinked rapidly surprised then she quickly wiped her tears off \*\*\*

Gaza: you look like you seeing a ghost

\*\*\*she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Marina: how....how did you know im here

Gaza: you're still my wife even though you're f\*cking my cousin

\*\*\*she looked away and swallows a big lump stuck on her throat\*\*\*

Gaza: so what happened to you

\*\*\*she swallowed again as memories of what happened to her played in her mind....a loud sob escaped her mouth\*\*\*

Gaza: ok don't tell me if you don't want to...its not like I'll care anyway

\*\*\* what he said was like a dagger stabbing her heart\*\*\*

Gaza: im only here to make sure you're still alive because of our son.....he still needs you so when you have time call him

\*\*\* she cried silently ....she couldn't believe he was this cold towards her\*\*\*

Gaza: and tell your boyfriend that he better not step his backstabbing feet in my house...if you two want to meet do it at his house....ooh and I'll know if he does I have people watching it I have people watching it its my property after all

\*\*\*she just sobbed and the door opened and in walked Mdu's mother...Gaza turned to look and he met Tsakane's eyes and Tsakane dropped whatever she was holding with her eyes popped out....Gaza chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Gaza: wow

\*\*\*he turned to Marina and she looked down embarrassed wiping her tears off \*\*\*

Gaza: your soon to be mother in law is here and she bought goodies.....enjoy

\*\*\* he then walked towards his aunt who seems shaken \*\*\*

Gaza: whatever lie you plan to say to wifey over there abort it woman....im not the Gaza you know Tsakane my demons have woken so this time I'll wipe the floor with your ugly wrinkled face while you're naked for everyone to see if you dare me....so tread carefully witch

\*\*\*Tsakane swallowed hard....he could see he meant every word....he then turned to Marina\*\*\*

Gaza: when you have time call your son

\*\*\* then he walked out\*\*\*

Tsakane: he's really alive

\*\*\*she said to herself still shaken\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

AT SELINA'S PLACE

Moera: are you done being dramatic besty

\*\*\*Selina just cried\*\*\*

Moera: I asked you a question Selina

\*\*\*she said twisting the knife a bit and Selina screamed through the dug tape on her mouth with more fresh tears falling down her face\*\*\*

Moera: are you done

\*\*\*she nodded feeling weak....her head is pounding really hard and she's losing too much blood and the pain is just unbearable\*\*\*\*

Moera: if I take off the dug tape you wont scream right

\*\*\*she nodded thinking that maybe she'll let her go if she confesses.....she could feel that she's losing her strength and her eyes are now blurry....Moera took off the dug tape roughly and Selina just closed her eyes as she felt the pain\*\*\*

Selina: please Mo...please don't do this

Moera: that's not what I want to hear besty...

Selina: im...im sorry I wasn't thinking straight

\*\*\*she said with a weak voice\*\*\*

Moera: now we are getting somewhere....what are you sorry for

\*\*\*Selina sobbed\*\*\*

Selina: im...im the one that sold the recording to Stevens

\*\*\*Moera frowned\*\*\*

Moera: which Stevens

Selina: Masai's ex

\*\*\*Moera kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Moera: why him

\*\*\*Selina kept quiet\*\*\*

Moera: why him damn it!!!

\*\*\*she said moving her hand to touch the knife stuck on Selina's thigh\*\*\*

Selina: I knew you two hated each other so he will pay well for it

Moera: wow

\*\*\*she was hurt that the person she considered her ride or die betrayed her like that\*\*\*

Moera: why Selina.... what did I do so bad to you that you would do this to me

\*\*\*Selina closed her eyes and Moera slapped her hard on her cheek and she cried \*\*\*

Moera: I asked why damn it!!!

Selina: because you think you're better than anyone yet you have flaws far deeper than most people.....you envy your sisters life so bad that you pretended to love her and understand what she's going through in her daily life with her sickness so she can depend on you....you think her depending on you makes her inferior to you but no...Masai has more class than you

Moera: shut up!!!

\*\*\*she said through her teeth\*\*\*

Selina: she's so simple but the way she carries herself speaks volumes

Moera: I said shut up!!!

Selina: you asked me a question and im answering you....you always think you're better than anyone when you're nothing but married men's dumping site

\*\*\*Moera slapped her hard across her face and Selina laughed as more blood came out of her nose\*\*\*

Selina: you can kill me Moera but your twin will always be better than you...she has the man you want a child and im sure he's gonna marry her while your own fiancé died to escape your rotten vagina....im sure he found out about your whore ways and got involved in that accident

Moera: what did you just say

\*\*\*Selina laughed again\*\*\*

Selina: even me Selina is way better than you....look at me well a ke nyomba nna ( im not barren)....a ka fetsa sebelego sa ka ka di abortion tsa go gana go fela ( I didn't damage my womb with endless abortions)

\*\*\*Moera out of anger she pulled the knife out quickly from Selina's thigh and stabbed her on her chest then she pulled it out and slid her throat then she continued to stab Selina's lifeless body on her chest until her hand got tired then she stopped and looked at her dead friend shaking.....she looked at her bloodied hands as they shook moving backwards with her heart beating fast...

She rushed to the bathroom and washed her hands thoroughly then she looked at herself on Selina's small mirror that is on the wall inside the bathroom and tears ran down her cheeks....she sniffed and took her towel and wiped herself of all Selina's blood....she went to Selina's small built in wardrobe and took one of Selina's shirts and leggings and changed her bloodied clothes and put her bloodied clothes and the towel in her schoolbag she came with along with the knife and she took out her phone and walked out of the bedroom....

She went to her main door and put her ear on it to listen to any movement and it was quiet....she slowly opened the door and peeked outside and there was no one outside so she quickly got out and closed the door then she quickly locked it with her shaking hands and that's when Selina's neighbour also opened her door and she came out with her man....Moera quickly knocked on the door\*\*\*

Moera: Selina....Lina

\*\*\*she said knocking then she took out her phone from her schoolbag and called Selina's phone\*\*\*

Moera: damn it!!!

\*\*\*she said as it took her to voicemail knowing fully well she put it on flight mode\*\*\*

Neighbour: im sure she's not yet back....she's hardly at home....i swear her partying ways and changing different men every damn day will put her in trouble some day

Man: baby no



Woman: what.... it's the truth

Moera: well concentrate on your low class man and stop minding other people's business le seriba sa mpya

Woman: askies o reng

Moera: move right along before o nnyela wena nxa

\*\*\*the man pulled her girlfriend away and they walked away with the woman throwing insults at Moera who just showed her the middle finger then she breathed out when they disappeared down the stairs\*\*\*

Moera: that was close

\*\*\*she went to the stairs and climbed down and she looked around then she walked out of the complex making a call\*\*\*

---

\*\*\*Alphalette walked in and Gaza closed the door and he went to the couch and he sat down while Alpha put his bag down and sat down too\*\*\*

Alpha: you look like someone who's guilty of something

\*\*\*Gaza chuckled sitting back\*\*\*

Gaza: a drink???

Alpha: no drinking until you're cleansed Gee...you know that

Gaza: ooh yah...almost forgot

Alpha: so start talking

Gaza: I went to see Marina and I found her with Mdu and their offspring

\*\*\*Alpha raised his eyebrow\*\*\*

Alpha: why would you go see her

Gaza: I don't know....but I did anyways

\*\*\*he said shrugging and Alphalette sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: I see blood on your hands....dried blood....what did you do Gee please be honest with me

\*\*\*Gaza looked at his hands and there was no blood...he sighed and rubbed his eyes\*\*\*

Alpha: did you kill for Tshimo....what's going Gee....you're secretive and acting strange and why cant you talk to me like you used to

\*\*\*Gaza didn't say anything and Alpha sighed feeling hurt\*\*\*

Alpha: you know what...its fine....im tired Gee....im done begging you to tell me things ...i see you don't trust me anymore and its cool....after this cleansing do your shit and I'll do mine

\*\*\*he got up and picked his bag and he walked out without Gaza saying anything\*\*\*

Gaza: eish

\*\*\*he said feeling sadness taking over him.... His phone rang and it was Tshimo\*\*\*

Gaza: hey mama

Tshimo: hey

\*\*\*she said sounding down\*\*\*

Gaza: whats wrong...he said sitting straight up

\*\*\*and she sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: I was taking a nap and had a bad dream....about you

\*\*\*Gaza kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Gaza: tell me about it

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: you had blood in your hands Gee....and you were smiling looking at the blood then you licked it and started laughing with a devilish laugh

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Tshimo: there were three dead bodies on the floor....they were women and the third one was decaying

\*\*\*Gaza swallowed hard and Tshimo kept quiet\*\*\*

Tshimo: whatever you're planning to do Gee please don't do it....im begging you....if they crossed you please don't taint your hands with their blood....let God and your Ancestors deal with them please

Gaza: im sure its just a dream mama

Tshimo: really Gaza....just a dream

Gaza: yeah....i haven't killed anyone and I don't plan to so i think it was just dream....

\*\*\*she kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Tshimo: I feel insulted now....i cant believe you're the one belittling my gift

Gaza: wooh im not belittling your gift Tshimo

Tshimo: then why are you dismissing a message from my ancestors as a mere dream

\*\*\*she said getting angry\*\*\*

Gaza: why are you fighting me mama

Tshimo: mxm why am I even arguing with you....it's your life anyways....i did my part so the rest is on you....

\*\*\*she dropped the call and Gaza sighed...he called her back but she dropped the call again and Gaza clenched his jaws then he took a deep breath and send her a massage\*\*\*

Gaza: "answer your phone...we need to talk"

\*\*\*he called her again and she dropped the call again and he huffed\*\*\*

Gaza: eish

\*\*\*he said getting up and he went to his mini fridge and took out a bottle of beer and opened it with his teeth and he took a large sip\*\*\*

.  
. .

INSIDE ALPHA'S ROOM

Alpha: he doesn't trust me anymore

Masai: im sure that's not the truth baby....remember he was abducted maybe he's not ready to talk about what he went through...o ngaka babe the fact that you said even your ancestors are not showing you anything it mean its not yet time for you to know cause he's not ready

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: maybe you're right or maybe he just doesn't trust me

\*\*\*Masai sighed she could tell he's hurt by this\*\*\*

Masai: trust me when I say he'll talk to you when he's ready...don't force him wena just be there for him...be that peace he needs...im sure ke trauma babe....be that familiar place he had before he was abducted cause trust me when I say the brother you knew before he was abducted is not the same brother you see now....trauma does that to people....just give him time and oska mo fella pelo babe please

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: ok....thank you Ntsako ya mina

Masai: you don't have to thank me.... i got you

\*\*\*Alpha chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: im loving this serious relationship thing

\*\*\*Masai laughed\*\*\*

Voice: mommy is that papa

Masai: yeah you wanna talk to him

\*\*\*AJ nodded\*\*\*

Masai: babe your son wants to talk to you....we will talk later

Alpha: ok randzo ra mina ( my love)

Masai: before I forget I might be discharged the day after tomorrow

Alpha: ooh ok we will talk later about it then...i love you

Masai: I love you too

\*\*\*she gave AJ the phone and he walked to the en-suit bathroom as he put the phone on his ear \*\*\*

AJ: hello papa

Masai: AJ o ya kae ( where are you going)

AJ: mommy im coming

Hills: why are you talking in there

AJ: Golo itj a shishkrit....

Hills: heh

\*\*\*he walked inside and closed the door leaving Hills and Masai shocked\*\*\*

Hills: Masa

\*\*\*she called her name with a shocked expression and Masai sighed\*\*\*

Masai: his father will handle this nna ka lwala (cause im sick)

Hills: Amen...

.  
. .  
.

## INSIDE THE BATHROOM

Alpha: o right champ

AJ: mmmmh...papa

Alpha: my boy

AJ: where is uncle

Alpha: which uncle...Mpande??

AJ: my uncle papa....uncle Nkulunkulu

\*\*\*Alpha kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Alpha: you mean Gazankulu

AJ: mmh

Alpha: how do you know about him

AJ: Khulu told me

\*\*\*Alpha rubbed his eyes....this was getting serious "he thought" \*\*\*

AJ: give him the phone papa...Khulu want to talk to him

Alpha: which Khulu my boy

AJ: papaaa....give uncle the phone

\*\*\*Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: ok hold on

\*\*\*he got up and walked out of his room and he went to Gaza's room with his mind all over the place....he kept asking himself whether his son has a gift or not.....but it looks like he does "he thought"....he needed to consult with his ancestors to find out cause this is getting serious....he knocked on Gaza's door and Gaza opened the door shirtless with a beer on his hand and Alphalette just shook his head while Gaza just sighed caught red handed\*\*\*

Gaza: im stressed man....Tshimo is...

Alpha: AJ wants to talk to you

\*\*\*he said interrupting him and he pushed his way in and he sat down looking at the three bottles on top of the table...he put his phone on his ear\*\*\*

Alpha: Champ

AJ: hello...papa

Alpha: yes...here he is

\*\*\*\*Alpha looked at Gaza and Gaza cleared his throat sitting down as Alpha put the phone on loud speaker\*\*\*

Gaza: hey boy....this is your uncle Gee

AJ: Khulu say I shoul call you baba Nkulunkulu

\*\*\*He wants to say bab'mkhulu\*\*\*

Gaza: which Khulu

\*\*\*he said frowning looking at Alpha and Alphalette just shrugged\*\*\*

AJ: my Khulu

Gaza: ooh....ok

AJ: Khulu say you shoul tell papa abat the monster

\*\*\*Gaza's heart skipped a bit and he froze a bit and Alphalette caught that\*\*\*

Gaza: what...what monster

AJ: Khulu say.... don tes him....he will beat you black an blue

\*\*\*Gaza chuckled\*\*\*

AJ: Khulu say trush your blada and tell him abat the monster or he take you

\*\*\*Alphalette just looked at Gaza with a serious look on his face and Gaza just looked down as he popped his knuckles \*\*\*

AJ: baba Nkulunkulu...where ish my blada

\*\*\*Gaza cleared his throat\*\*\*

Gaza: your bla...oohh you mean brother

AJ: yes Niko....Khulu say bling him to me

\*\*\*Alphalette swallowed hard....this was extremely serious cause he has never told him about Gaza's son or his name....Gaza and Alphalette looked at each other shocked\*\*\*

AJ: hello....baba Nkulunkulu???

\*\*\*Gaza cleared his throat\*\*\*

Gaza: yes boy...i'll bring him to you

AJ: yeeei

\*\*\*he said excited and Alphalette swallowed hard\*\*\*

AJ: ok papa

Alpha: yes champ

AJ: love vu

\*\*\*Alpha chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: I love you too champ

AJ: baba Nkulunkulu

Gaza: yes boy

AJ: love vu

\*\*\*Gaza smiled feeling smitten\*\*\*

Gaza: love you too my boy

AJ: baba Nkulunkulu tell Niko Love vu

\*\*\*Gaza laughed\*\*\*

Gaza: I will tell him I promise

AJ: papa

Alpha: yes champ

AJ: bling my jelly bear

\*\*\*Alphalette chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: I'll bring them

AJ: ok shap

Alpha: shap

\*\*\*Alphalette ended the call then he sighed rubbing his eyes\*\*\*

Gaza: he has a gift

Alpha: I think so....eish

\*\*\*he got up\*\*\*

Alpha: he's too young for all these nx

\*\*\*he said walking towards the door\*\*\*

Gaza: im sorry Ntsako

\*\*\*Alpha stopped on his tracks\*\*\*

Gaza: give me until Wednesday and I'll tell you everything.....and when I say everything I mean everything

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: I'll wait for Wednesday then

\*\*\*he walked out and Gaza sighed then he picked his phone and dialled Tshimo's phone and luckily she answered\*\*\*

Tshimo: Gazankulu

Gaza: im no longer Gee to you

Tshimo: ke busy abuti ne o reng

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Gaza: you mean everything to me mama....i wanna give you the world....i wanna make you happy and give you your heart's desire.....i swear I was not belittling your gift...i just  
\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: im not a saint....i've done bad things in my life....being an ex-military man means I have taken lives....i have blood in my hands as for the dead bodies you saw....maybe it's the suicide bombers we used to take out while i was still in the military...i don't know....Maybe that dream was me being told to get cleansed or something

\*\*\*he lied through his teeth and Tshimo sighed....it made sense but she was still unsettled about that dream....why was he smiling like that.....why was the other body decaying while others were still fresh\*\*\*

Gaza: forgive me mama...im losing my mind here.... you can't get mad at me like this....im your patient so you cant get mad at me

Tshimo: really now

Gaza: please mama...forgive me

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: its fine I forgive you

Gaza: smile for me then

Tshimo: bathong

Gaza: smile for me mama

\*\*\*she laughed and Gaza smiled\*\*\*

Gaza: don't get mad at me mama....i lose my mind when you do....you are my peace mama....my sanity

\*\*\*she swallowed\*\*\*

Gaza: we good right

\*\*\*she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Tshimo: yeah we good

\*\*\*Gaza smiled\*\*\*

Gaza: great ....I'll check on you later

Tshimo: ok...later then

Gaza: and mama

Tshimo: mmmmh

Gaza: nako randza....always remember that

Tshimo: huh???

\*\*\*he dropped the call\*\*\*

.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO



\*\*\* Mpande sat on the edge of his bed and sighed looking at his wet briefs they are wet from a wet dream he just had of him making love to Hills....It felt so real that he enjoyed it and even came hard screaming her name right now he's embarrassed and angry at himself for dreaming about her like that\*\*\*

Mpande: this is witchcraft

\*\*\*he said to himself as he looked at his wet briefs\*\*\*

Mpande: or maybe it's an evil spirit disguising as Ntabeni....yah that's it

\*\*\*he nodded as he tried to convince himself....he picked his phone and made a call\*\*\*

Voice: hello....Mpande

Mpande: Ma

Mom: yebo Mpande...is everything ok....wa founa ekseni kangaka ( why are you calling this early)

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Mpande: ma ugogo Shlahla u sa phila ( ma is gogo Shlahla still alive)

Mom: heh...ummm yebo why are you asking

Mpande: are you two still fighting

Mom: yebo asikhulumisani namanje ( we are in no speaking terms even now)...why

Mpande: ingathi uyangiloya ma ( I think she's bewitching me)

Mom: heh

Mpande: uthumela izinto zakhe ma....ngiphupha ngilala nentobazane yesdudla ( she's sending her evil things to me ma...I dream having seggs with a fat lady)

Mom: uthini wena Mpande ( what are you saying Mpande)

Mpande: she's bewitching me ma....im coming home tomorrow you need to take me to a strong sangoma....uAlpha is not around and I can't wait for him to come back

Mom: ok...ok.... don't worry I'll take you....but why do you think it's her sending otokolosi to you

Mpande: how can you ask that ma.... you know that woman hates you and she used to bewitch us while I was growing up...remember that time she said she won't rest until you suffer just because her cat died in our yard and we don't know what killed it

\*\*\*his mother sighed\*\*\*

Mom: yes I remember but....

Mpande: ma ngilala notokolisi....uyangiloya logogo.....ubundoda bami is being abused ( ma im sleeping with evil spirits...that old woman is bewitching me...my manhood is being bewitched)

Mom: ok..ok I'll take you

Mpande: ok.... and I swear if its really her im going to kill her nxa

Mom: hai Mpande...dont talk like that

Mpande: otokolosi bakhe ( his evil things) are raping me Ma

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Mom: we will get help don't worry

Mpande: we better or she's dead

Mom: yho..ok ke...i'll see you tomorrow

Mpande: ok...shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and he sighed....his mind went to the dream and he felt butterflies in his stomach and he quickly got up shaking his head\*\*\*

Mpande: no...no...no....no ways....mmh mmh

\*\*\*he shook his head no as he went to his bathroom....he took off his briefs and it had his cum all over it and he sighed\*\*\*

Mpande: what the hell is going on

\*\*\*he asked himself then he washed his face and he heard his phone ringing....he hurried to it and answered\*\*\*

Mpande: Gee

Gaza: Root

Mpande: skhiphani

Gaza: nothing much....i missed your call last night....i was busy with something and I forgot to call you back

Mpande: no worries.... about that...Jabu was taken in for questioning

Gaza: damn it....why...is he a suspect

Mpande: you know when the wife gets killed the husband is the first suspect

Gaza: yeah.... eish is it bad

Mpande: nah...they let him go but the two detectives handling the case have some sort of beef with him

Gaza: get me their names and numbers and I'll handle it

Mpande: sure...eish

Gaza: what

Mpande: there's another problem.... they found fingerprints on the bodies....my source says they are not Jabu's but someone close to him

Gaza: I don't understand

Mpande: me too Gee.....this whole shit is confusing....my source said he'll get me the name of the person whose fingerprints they found

\*\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: keep me updated

Mpande: sure I will and what's happening that side

Gee: I got those witches where I want them.....i want them to live in fear...to always look over their shoulders and as for wifey and cousin well....lets say I also got them where I want them

Mpande: let me know if you need my help

Gee: you know I will

Mpande: what about Alpha

Gee: have you noticed something weird about his son

Mpande: AJ....nah he's a good boy and loves jelly bears sweets

Gee: mmh....do you think he's gifted like Ntsako

Mpande: ummm I don't think so....maybe he is but I haven't noticed anything weird about him....why

\*\*\*Gaza sighs\*\*\*

Gee: he said something weird to me but I guess he's just being a child.....anyway let me get going....Ntsako is waiting for me

Mpande: sure...I'll keep you updated

Gee: yeah nakhensa bro

Mpande: sure

\*\*\*they ended the call and he dialed Masai's numbers\*\*\*

Masai: hello

Mpande: koti..its Mpande here

Masai: ooh hey Mpande

Mpande: skhiphani.....i hope you're getting better now

Masai: yeah im feeling better

Mpande: that's good news koti...good news indeed and otherwise with everything else uright

\*\*\*she sighed...she knew what he was asking\*\*\*

Masai: I cant change what happened so I just need to deal with it and move on if I can

Mpande: kuzolunga don't worry....dont stress too much and wena just let her deal with the aftermath of her actions...i know it affects you too but don't dwell too much on that....just for your own health let everything be and concentrate on getting better

\*\*\*she smiled\*\*\*

Masai: I hear you and thanks for your encouraging words Mpande

Mpande: ahh when you have me uphethe ingakara....bosso ya di bosso

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Mpande: bona koti....i need a favour man

Masai: ok im listening

Mpande: I don't know if your sister Hills told you that she bumped into my car not long ago

Masai: what

Mpande: mmh....and she asked not to involve the police cause she said she'll fix my car....its not bad but you can see the damage but eish I forgot to take her numbers so if you don't mind...

Masai: why didn't she tell me

Mpande: you're in a hospital koti and you're also going through a lot so understand

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Mpande: its nothing serious and no one was hurt I just want my car fixed nje....if I had insurance on it I wouldn't even bother her but I don't...plus she said she has insurance so....

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Masai: yeah she does.... im just sad that she's going through things alone because she doesn't wanna stress me.... Hills has a good heart Mpande and she tends to bottle things inside...she's dealing with a lot right now and im just scared that one of these days she's gonna crack....She was once depressed after her twins death and I don't want her to go back to that dark hole again....she deserves a break

\*\*\*she sighed as tears ran down her cheeks and she wiped them\*\*\*

Masai: I'll pay for your car just let her be please

Mpande: ummm

\*\*\*he hesitated\*\*\*

Mpande: I don't think Alpha will be happy with me

Masai: its my money Mpande

Mpande: look its not about the money....its the....principle

\*\*\*she frowned\*\*\*

Masai: what are you taking about

Mpande: you won't get it...look I won't stress her or harass her...i just wanna tease her a bit to never use her phone while driving

\*\*\*he lied\*\*\*

Masai: mara Mpande

Mpande: let me have some fun Masai man.....maybe she'll forget her troubles for a bit...its just some harmless tease nje haw

\*\*\*she just shook her head not believing what she was hearing\*\*\*

Mpande: im no monster or a creep....i could use my ways to get them but I don't wanna seem like a creep that's why im asking you.....i mean no harm kotis

\*\*\* what the hell is he doing " he thought to himself" and Masai just sighed over the phone \*\*\*

Masai: ok I'll give them to you but I'll tell her to expect your call

Mpande: no problem ...sho koti

Masai: shap

\*\*\*they ended the call\*\*\*

Mpande: what the hell am I doing....uyahlanya Mpande

\*\*\*he huffed roughly brushing his hair\*\*\*

Mpande: I need to get cleansed....im being bewitched here

\*\*\*he shook his head and went back to the bathroom\*\*\*

---

MOERA ( NARRATED)

Drench: what the hell is wrong with you Moera....have you now turned into a serial killer huh

\*\*\*She's sitting there crying with her head all over the place and Drench is busy pacing up and down\*\*\*

Drench: first it was your twin now your friend

Moera: I didn't mean to I swear

Drench: you slid her throat Moera right after you stabbed her multiple times so yeah you meant it

\*\*\*she just cried\*\*\*

Drench: what's happening with you...do you see the path you're on...you're losing yourself Mo and I don't like it one bit

Moera: she betrayed me Dre.....and she's not my family so she deserved it

\*\*\*Drench stopped pacing and he looked at her with his hands on his waist and he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Drench: you think taking someone's life is child's play huh

\*\*\*she didn't say anything she just wiped her tears off\*\*\*

Drench: well its not!!!

Moera: its not like it's the first time

Drench: what

\*\*\*he asked with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Moera: stop judging me Dre....i know you've done worse so please....

\*\*\*Drench chuckled\*\*\*

Moera: I just need help with cleaning up and you can shout and judge me all you want please

\*\*\*Drench just looked at her clearly and he saw why his brother doubted marrying her....She was too much for him...he couldn't handle her...he was never gonna be able to handle her...she's just a rare crazy breed all together and he needs to tame her or

she'll be his downfall cause she acts irrational when she's under pressure ....he sighed and sat back down\*\*\*

Drench: my boys are busy cleaning up

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Moera: thank you

Drench: don't thank me as of yet..... you owe me your life from now on

\*\*\*he said with a serious look on his face and she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Moera: just make this disappear please

Drench: remember if I do this I own you

\*\*\* she looked at him shocked she could see he's serious.....she looked down....she knew she cant make this go away on her own and she cant asks help from her mother cause she will never hear the end of it and even though there are some unresolved issues with her she cant have her involved in this....She raised them and gave her a better life and for that she loves her even though she favours Masai over her....Masai "she thought" .....

She wonders how hurt she is and how much she hates her now.....Now she accepts that Selina deserved it

Sponsored

AD

she just ruined her reputation and now she just signed her life away to a devil...yes Drench is the devil himself.....he can be heartless and cold hearted and now she owes him her life she should've called her uncle instead but it's too late now cause she didn't think this through....She panicked and made a hasty decision...she sighed defeated....she should've tortured Selina some more before killing her "she thought"\*\*\*

Moera: ok

Drench: just like that

\*\*\*he raised his eyebrow\*\*\*

Moera: what choice do I have

Drench: you do have a choice Mo....you can choose to go to jail...i mean you planned the whole thing so you knew the consequences

\*\*\*she swallowed hard....she cant believe how quickly he changed from being a concerned Drench to a cold one\*\*\*

Moera: you didn't have to put it like that

Drench: you said it yourself that its not the first time so you knew what you were doing

\*\*\*he said getting up and he went to pour himself a drink\*\*\*

Drench: don't you want to know what me owning you mean

Moera: im sure you gonna tell me

\*\*\*she said rolling her eyes and Drench chuckled\*\*\*

Drench: I own that body of yours and your soul

Moera: askies

\*\*\*she said frowning\*\*\*

Drench: from now on you're my sex toy....whenever I need to f\*ck you avail yourself and

ooh sweetie...i don't share....if you give what's mine to another trust me you'll regret

it....your punishment will be jail for premeditated murder

\*\*\*she froze looking at him\*\*\*

Drench: I clean up but I don't get rid of the evidence for the future and insurance so

betray me in any way or give what's mine to another and you'll feel my wrath

\*\*\*he put his glass down after taking a huge gulp\*\*\*

Drench: stay here for two nights then you can go back to your place...ooh and call your

family back before they open a missing persons case...remember you don't need the

popos to be involved

\*\*\*he winked at her and he walked out and Moera's tears ran down her cheeks as she

started to shake\*\*\*

Moera: what have I gotten myself into

\*\*\*she asked herself shaking\*\*\*

---

AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION



\*\*\*The man held his baby and smiled at her.....She was beautiful like her mother....Her mother huh.....tears filled his eyes and he put a baby dummy on her mouth and she sucked with tears in her eyes....his eyes got more teary as he looked at her and images of his wife being killed flashed his mind and tears dropped on top of the blanket he wrapped his baby with....he groaned as the pain from being stabbed got worse and he smiled weakly at his baby\*\*\*

Man: I love you princess....grow up to be a good and successful woman and never bow down to anyone except God and always acknowledge your ancestors...

\*\*\*he chuckled weakly\*\*\*

Man: I guess me and your mother will also be your ancestors so never label us as demons please...we will watch over you and protect you always....Always pray to God my angel...be strong never doubt yourself and always trust your instincts

\*\*\*he coughed as he got weaker but he maintained his weak smile looking at her\*\*\*

Man: I pray and hope the man your mother went to see comes to your rescue.....the fact...the fact that she went to see him for help it...it means she trusted him

\*\*\*he groaned as the pain made him weak\*\*\*

Man: I love you my angel....Shariana Ndoniyamanzi Simbine

\*\*\*he held his child to his chest with the strength he has left and he collapsed on his back still holding her....the door got kicked in and in walked one of the man that stabbed him and he smiled when he saw Ayanda Simbine and his daughter....the child started crying hysterically and he laughed\*\*\*

Man: well well well....you thought you could run from us huh

\*\*\*Ayanda coughed out blood and he tried to hold his daughter tight to his chest as she cried\*\*\*

Ayanda: shhh its ok baby

\*\*\*he looked at the pale man with dark eyes weakly\*\*\*

Ayanda: please....don't hurt her....she did....nothing to you

Man: she's our sacrifice...her blood mixed with some potions will give our master immense powers and her skull will serve as a beautiful souvenir in his office

\*\*\*he gave Ayanda a creepy smile moving his eyebrows up and down and he laughed\*\*\*

Ayanda: no...please...she...she's just a baby

Man: no she's a powerful tool in our world....and master said whomever brings her to him he will give the person a taste of her special blood and the person will move up the ranks and I cant wait....imagine me dining with the big dogs in our world....those lower ranked fools calling me sir....bowing down to me

\*\*\* he laughed happily and Ayanda closed his eyes as tears gushed out\*\*\*

Ayanda: please...

\*\*\*the man walked closer and he grabbed the baby roughly with her tiny leg and lifted her up as her head faced down ....Ayanda tried to rise his arm to stop the man and the man kicked him and he flew over and hit the wall hard and he fell to the floor\*\*\*

Man: you ugly little thing....if it wasn't for master I would be draining your blood right now....aarg maybe I should and lie to him that I couldn't locate you....yes....yes I should do this...your blood smells divine...im sure I'll get some powers from drinking it...yes...yes

\*\*\*the baby continued to cry and Ayanda opened and closed his eyes as he got weaker....he wanted to say something but he lost so much blood and he could see his end....the man unwrapped the blanket on the baby and he ran his long fingernail on her lower arm scratching it so hard that blood started coming out of the scratch....he sucked on the blood on his fingernail and he moaned loud as the blood tasted good and different from all the blood he drank since he became a Vampire...it has a unique taste to it an acquired taste that is addictive and fulfilling \*\*\*

Man: damn tinny human...no wonder master has been searching for you and your mother.... it's a pity she asked to be burned to ashes if she doesn't make it while giving birth....she knew....but you don't know right

\*\*\*he laughed then he licked the blood on her scratch and immediately his fangs came out and as he was about to bite her tinny neck his head detached from his neck and a hand took the baby from his hand as his body and detached head fell to the floor....Ayanda opened his eyes and saw another man holding his baby gently in his arms trying to calm her down even though his vision is a bit blurry..... the man went to Ayanda with the baby and he crouched next to him\*\*\*

Man: hey...im sorry im late

Ayanda: my dau...daughter

Man: she's safe....she's still alive....im Castiel....i don't know if your wife told you about me

\*\*\*Ayanda forced a smile on his face and he coughed out some blood giving in now that her daughter is safe \*\*\*

Ayanda: Shariana Ndoniyamanzi Simbine....that's her...name

\*\*\*then he succumb to his injuries...Castiel sighed and he looked at Ndoni and she was no longer crying\*\*\*

Castiel: I hope you make it Ndoni cause this is far from over

\*\*\*he got up and he grabbed Ayanda's hand and dragged him out of the house....he set the house on fire and he looked at Ayanda's dead body and the baby in his arms \*\*\*

Castiel: I guess I have to bury daddy now

\*\*\*he huffed...after he's done burying Ayanda he made a call to his wife\*\*\*

Mpumi: hey baby is she safe

Castiel: yeah.... Eish i almost didn't make it on time

Mpumi: as long as she's safe

Castiel: yeah but her parents didn't make it

Mpumi: shame....did they harm her

Castiel: that bastard scratched her nx...but she'll be ok

Mpumi: I should've come with you....i would've taught him a lesson first before killing him

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: listen to you talking about killing someone

Mpumi: mxm wa bora....he was gonna be my first kill

Castiel: you know I don't want you to do that unless its necessary...

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Mpumi: yeah yeah...anyway are you coming with her

Castiel: no I know someone I trust who'll raise her well....she's also a witch so she'll also teach her on how to control her powers and also live a normal life

Mpumi: mmmh ok

Castiel: I know you wanted a baby girl but not this one my love...lets wait for Theo to have a baby and we will raise him or her ourselves

Mpumi: wait for what twenty plus years for that to happen....yho hae

Castiel: you'll never grow old so relax and wait....in the meantime lets f\*ck and travel the world

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Mpumi: we can't travel with Theo baby

Castiel: he has his uncles and aunties to take care of him...anyway the lady is here I'll see you later

Mpumi: ok I love you

Castiel: I love you too baby

\*\*\*they ended the call and Castiel waited for the woman \*\*\*

.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

29

\*\*\* Gaza and Alpha parked their car outside his father's yard next to his car ....as soon as his father saw him tears filled his eyes...Gaza and Alpha got out of the car and walked to Gaza's father\*\*\*

Father: my son

\*\*\*he said touching his face to make sure he's not dreaming\*\*\*

Father: it's really you

\*\*\*Gaza swallowed hard\*\*\*

Gaza: it's really me baba

\*\*\* His father pulled him into a tight hug and they hugged feeling emotional while his father's tears betrayed him and they ran down his cheeks..... then his father also pulled Alpha into the hug and the three of them hugged\*\*\*

.

.

.

INSIDE THE CAR ON THEIR WAY TO THE SANGOMA'S PLACE

Father: I want to ask what happened but im scared of hearing the answer

\*\*\*Gaza sighed and Alpha just continued to drive silently\*\*\*

Gaza: just know that your sister her son and my mother in law are involved

Father: what...wh....

\*\*\*he said shocked...yes he went to consult when his son disappeared and they did tell him someone in the family is involved in his disappearance but he never thought it could be his beloved sister....She was the one consoling him and checking on him and also helping him "search" for his son....he was suspecting his half-brother all this time cause they don't get along or have any siblings relationship whatsoever\*\*\*

Father: that...that can't be

Gaza: well they came to see me where I was kidnapped except for Mdu ofcourse that's how I knew they are the ones responsible

\*\*\*his father swallowed hard with his heart beating fast...he couldn't believe what he just heard....he looked outside the window lost in thoughts....after sometime Alpha spoke\*\*\*

Alpha: baba is this the short left we are supposed to take

\*\*\*Gaza's father cleared his throat\*\*\*

Father: ye...yes

\*\*\*he said wiping sweat from his forehead....he couldn't believe his beloved sister did this to his son....In his mind he was over playing all the time she showed concern and even cried when she saw the state he was in...He couldn't believe she was faking it all\*\*\*

Alpha: stop overthinking things baba or you will suffer a stroke or heart attack

\*\*\*Gaza's father sighed wiping sweat from his forehead again....the fight he had with his half-brother when he falsely accused him....what has he done " he thought"\*\*\*

Father: I cant.... I cant believe the person I trust and also raised is the one responsible for my misery.....God why....how....

\*\*\*he swallowed hard and unbuttoned the top buttons of his shirt \*\*\*

Father: she...

Gaza: you didn't know tatane....and you did tell me you raised her after your parents died so kuri yena she chose to be evil is not your fault.....some people are born like that they just need something to trigger that evil side of them for them to show you who they really are....so stop beating yourself about it

\*\*\*silence filled the car....after some time Alpha spoke\*\*\*

Alpha: do I continue to go straight

Father: no turn right and a blue main house on your left hand side with many roundovals inside the yard is where we are going

Gaza: I can't wait to see and hold my son

Father: I told your younger sister to keep him inside the house until we leave....the Sangoma said you cant hold him until you're cleansed...he's too innocent

\*\*\*Gaza just kept quiet...he wondered if getting cleansed will be enough to help him....after a while they saw the house and Alpha parked outside the yard and he sighed....he could feel his ancestors closer which means they want to come out...he started burping with a weird scary sound coming out of his mouth\*\*\*

Gaza: are you ok

Alpha: mmh

\*\*\*he got out of the car and Gaza and his father followed....Gaza kept looking at his brother wondering what he was thinking the Alpha he knows talks a lot but ever since he arrived this side especially since this morning he's been quiet...way too quiet for his liking.....Closer to the gate under the big tree inside the yard an old man and his initiate got up and walked to the gate...greetings are exchanged between the sangoma and the guests and the initiate lays on his side on the ground and clapped his hands together\*\*\*

Initiate: Thokozani banu la ba nkulu

Them: Thokoza

Initiate: minjani

Them: hai hi pfukile wena unjani

Initiate: na mehe nipfukile

\*\*\* he got up and dusted himself and he knelt on the floor looking down and the old man looked at Alphalette and he nodded\*\*\*

Sangoma: they are close don't prevent them from coming out to greet us

\*\*\*he said smiling at him and Alpha chuckled\*\*\*

Sangoma: Mabunda you can go inside with Mkhulu here....his ancestors are impatient

\*\*\*he looked at Gaza and his expression changed....he now had a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Sangoma: but you stay behind I need to talk to you before you enter

\*\*\*Gaza returned the serious look and he nodded\*\*\*

Sangoma: Mahlebezulu

Initiate: babaa

Sangoma: take them inside

\*\*\*Mahlebezulu clapped his hands together and he got up\*\*\*

Mahlebezulu: follow me please

\*\*\*Gaza's father and Alpha followed Mahlebezulu and the old man stood there looking at Gaza\*\*\*

Sangoma: you will not enter my yard with that thing behind you

\*\*\*Gaza didn't say anything\*\*\*

Sangoma: tell it to remain outside the yard along with that dark cloud over your head

\*\*\*Gaza swallowed hard\*\*\*

Gaza:i...i don't know how

Sangoma: but yet you wanna keep it....you don't want to get rid of it

\*\*\*Gaza didn't say anything and the figure took a step closer and the Sangoma moved back a bit\*\*\*

Sangoma: you better not try it demon

\*\*\*it stood still facing him and the sangoma looked at Gaza\*\*\*

Sangoma: use your inner voice to talk to it....we don't have all day

\*\*\*Gaza looked at the sangoma and sighed then he spoke with his inner voice\*\*\*

Gaza: "stay outside this gate....i won't get rid of you I just want to be cleansed so I can give you the child you want with her and to touch and hug my son"

\*\*\*he felt tingles all over his body and he growled \*\*\*

Gaza: "calm the f\*ck down!!!"

Voice: "if you get rid of me I'll kill your son before I evaporate...keep that in mind"

\*\*\*a voice inside his head spoke and the tingles stopped as it moved away from him so did the dark cloud....Gaza swallowed hard and he breathed out\*\*\*

Sangoma: Thokozani!!!

\*\*\*he called another initiate and instructed him to bring the bucket with water inside mixed with traditional muthi and his traditional ( Letshobo) then they heard a deep scary scream inside the sangoma's ndomba ( ancestral hut) \*\*\*

Gaza: what the hell

Sangoma: that's your brother...his ancestors are now ready for him to see everything you went through

Gaza: what....why now...eish

\*\*\*the sangoma chuckled\*\*\*

Sangoma: he's gonna see everything you went through...he's gonna know everything and don't worry Mahlebezulu knows how to handle mekwembu (ancestors)

Gaza: damn it

\*\*\*he said it in a whisper but loud enough for the sangoma to hear\*\*\*

Sangoma: damn it indeed

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head and the initiate brought the bucket and he sprinkled the water on Gaza using his Letshobo (ishobo)\*\*\*

Sangoma: and before you enter this yard release that boy.....you cant kidnap another man just because he likes a woman you also like....thats being a coward my boy

\*\*\*Gaza's eyes popped out\*\*\*

Sangoma: fight for her love the right way cause one of these days her ancestors will warn her about you and your shenanigans and trust me you will lose her....she will want nothing to do with you

\*\*\*Gaza swallowed hard as he remembered the dream she had about him\*\*\*

Sangoma: she's gifted....never underestimate her.....she saved you didn't she....

\*\*\*Gaza sighed and he took out his phone and made a call\*\*\*

Voice: boss man

\*\*\*Gaza cleared his throat looking at the Sangoma\*\*\*

Gaza: release him and remember what we talked about

Man: yes.... Use his brother as bait

Gaza: yes....tell him if his brother doesn't leave my territory his parents and his siblings will meet their ending ....make all of them shake with fear Taboo...show me what you can do...impress me

\*\*\*Taboo laughed\*\*\*

Taboo: roger that boss man....let me impress you....its nice to have you back boss man....im happy

\*\*\*they ended the call and Gaza cleared his throat as the sangoma just shook his head disappointed\*\*\*

Sangoma: you know the real reason you kidnapped him....

Gaza: im killing two birds with one stone...it's a pity I knew about his brother when I did a background check on him cause he's interested in what's mine

Sangoma: coward

Gaza: im improvising....Tshimo is mine and mine alone



Sangoma: yet you want her to carry a demon shapeshifter's baby..... on top of that you did unspeakable things some in her name...just pray she doesn't find out about any of those things....no one in their sane mind will overlook them

\*\*\*Gaza swallowed hard \*\*\*

Sangoma: it wont be an easy road....the question you should ask yourself is.....will her ancestors allow it to happen....will they accept you nah

\*\*\*he pointed at him and he walked inside the yard humming a song and Gaza followed him while the demon/shapeshifter stood there watching\*\*\*

Voice: "show her this love humans thinks is more important than wealth.....make her the centre of your universe....shower her with money and gifts...humans love that especially women....and you shall see she will never leave you"

Gaza: "shut up"

\*\*\*he said with his inner voice closing his eyes as he suddenly had a headache\*\*\*

Voice: "I want a baby with her....those children will have both pure and dark blood within them.....They will grow my lineage...even if you die and I evaporate my lineage will never die...it will go on from generation to generation and remember the power im giving to you the wealth.... No one will ever dare you....you are now one of the strongest people alive....i know you can feel the power within you....its addictive I know so give me what I want and you'll always get what you desire...it's a win win situation"

Gaza: " stop it you're giving me a headache damn it"

\*\*\*he said with his inner voice stopping on his tracks as he held his head\*\*\*

Voice: "they will never get rid of my sons and daughters she's gonna give birth to cause getting rid of them will kill them where else with me it's a different story so you better not even think of getting rid of me cause you know what will happen human....i wont evaporate alone....im gonna take everything and everyone you hold dear with me...me and you are one always remember that"

Gaza: stop it!!!!

\*\*\*he said shouting out loud and blood came out of his nose and he bend holding his knees feeling weak....the sangoma rushed to him\*\*\*

Voice: I forgot human species are weak

\*\*\*he huffed as they carried Gaza inside the Ndomba ( ancestral hut) and as soon as his father saw him he quickly got up but the sangoma stopped him\*\*\*

Voice: “you love our chosen one and I accept her fully.....do you know that she was betrothed to your brother.....your brother was supposed to marry her to pay off a debt made by your useless ancestor”

\*\*\*the voice laughed and Gaza screamed as he held his head as the headache got worse...the sangoma mixed Mpepho ( sage) and some traditional medicine and he burned them and blew them on Gaza’s face chanting some words \*\*\*

Voice:” but your brother already has his soul mate and he loves her dearly plus his father was gonna make sure that wedding never happens so he made you meet her instead but....but her father want her to marry your brother instead for his own selfish reasons...that’s why he was charmed by her when they met....you’re not off the hook yet her father wants her to marry him not you and we can’t let that happen....never”

\*\*\* the demon said angrily and the connection got cut off as Gaza passed out and the sangoma sighed\*\*\*

Sangoma: yeses

\*\*\*he sighed and looked at Mahlebezulu\*\*\*

Sangoma: is he still in a trans mode

Mahlebezulu: yebo baba

Father: what’s happening with my sons

\*\*\* he asked shaking....looking worried and scared at the same time....the sangoma looked at Alphalette as he sat there on the grass mat with his legs crossed and a traditional cloth covering his crossed legs and his arms stretched forward with his hands resting on his knees facing forward with his eyes opened....his eyes have changed colour now they look like that of a snake...scary ....and his forehead looks deformed like it grew a thicker rough skin with scales on it ...you could see he wasn’t here spiritually ...he didn’t move or blink...it was an amazing sight to see for the sangoma....he was extremely impressed cause he has never seen something like this with his own eyes. He only heard about it from his elders that there are people with gifts like Alpha’s in this world and they are rare \*\*\*

Sangoma: Mkhulu here is ok they are showing him what his brother went through and other things and this one will also be ok

\*\*\*Gaza’s father swallowed hard and he wiped sweat all over his face using his jacket\*\*\*

Father: these boys will kill me with heart attack one of these days I swear they will

Sangoma: stop talking about death and go take your wife from that coloured fool...she’s not happy

Father: don't start ...not now assomblief...this is not the time man

Sangoma: mxm stop being a coward and go take your wife from that fool....that's the instruction given to you by your brother before he died to marry her but wena Mr faithful man with principles didn't want to take a second wife cause it will hurt your now dead wife...I did warn you anere

Father: stop it ok

\*\*\*he said through his clenched teeth looking at his sons\*\*\*

Sangoma: does your son know who his mother died with in that car

\*\*\*Mr Mabunda swallowed hard\*\*

Sangoma: your brother is disappointed in you Mabunda that's why all the women you dated and wanted to marry cheated and left you....even now you're facing the same predicament anere....she has started being shady anere

\*\*\*Mr Mabunda swallowed hard looking down\*\*\*

Sangoma: the only woman your brother will let you marry is her so make peace with it....

Sangoma: you were faithful to a snake and let a good woman get married to another snake

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Sangoma: its not too late....this time around she will leave him cause she's had enough of him and that brat she birthed that took after his father....it will make these boys happy trust me

\*\*\*Mr Mabunda swallowed hard and he kept quiet\*\*\*

---

AT DORIS APARTMENT

AusVee: o reng wena ( what are you saying )

Hills: im telling you ausVee...Khai walked out of that bathroom and when we asked him  
gore why he went in there to talk to his father a re itj a shishkritis ( it's a secret) imagine  
\*\*\*they laughed as they folded their washed clothes sitting in the lounge.....Doris and  
Khai are sleeping and Masai is still in hospital\*\*\*

Hills: Masai a re he's weird these days....he keeps on talking about Mkhulu this and  
Mkhulu that

AusVee: why are you surprised...his father ke thokoza Mkhulu akere

Hills: yeah I guess maybe he also has a gift

AusVee: mmmmh mara eish he's still young bathong....let hope his father will help him  
or ba ba ribege until he's old enough.... yah something like that

Hills: they can do that

AusVee: I don't know...im not sure akere we hear people talking so you'll never know if  
ba bua nnete ( they are telling the truth) or not

\*\*\*she said shrugging\*\*\*

Hills: hai he's way too young to be seeing bo Mkhulu...my poor Khai

AusVee: I believe papagwe o tlike go mo thusa so don't worry ( his father will help him  
so don't worry)

Hills: mmh...Im happy for Masai gore she got pregnant by a responsible man like  
Alpha....even though her pregnancy was horrible and ka mo she didn't have any support  
from him because it was a once off thing but as soon as they met again

Sponsored

AD

they look like that of a snake...scary ....and his forehead looks deformed like it grew a thicker  
rough skin with scales on it ...you could see he wasn't here spiritually ...he didn't move or blink...it  
was an amazing sight to see for the sangoma....he was extremely impressed cause he has never  
seen something like this with his own eyes. He only heard about it from his elders that there are  
people with gifts like Alpha's in this world and they are rare \*\*\*

Sangoma: Mkhulu here is ok they are showing him what his brother went through and  
other things and this one will also be ok

\*\*\*Gaza's father swallowed hard and he wiped sweat all over his face using his jacket\*\*\*

Father: these boys will kill me with heart attack one of these days I swear they will

Sangoma: stop talking about death and go take your wife from that coloured fool...she's not happy

Father: don't start ...not now assomblief...this is not the time man

Sangoma: mxm stop being a coward and go take your wife from that fool....that's the instruction given to you by your brother before he died to marry her but wena Mr faithful man with principles didn't want to take a second wife cause it will hurt your now dead wife...I did warn you anere

Father: stop it ok

\*\*\*he said through his clenched teeth looking at his sons\*\*\*

Sangoma: does your son know who his mother died with in that car

\*\*\*Mr Mabunda swallowed hard\*\*

Sangoma: your brother is disappointed in you Mabunda that's why all the women you dated and wanted to marry cheated and left you....even now you're facing the same predicament anere....she has started being shady anere

\*\*\*Mr Mabunda swallowed hard looking down\*\*\*

Sangoma: the only woman your brother will let you marry is her so make peace with it...

Sangoma: you were faithful to a snake and let a good woman get married to another snake

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Sangoma: its not too late....this time around she will leave him cause she's had enough of him and that brat she birthed that took after his father....it will make these boys happy trust me

\*\*\*Mr Mabunda swallowed hard and he kept quiet\*\*\*

---

## AT DORIS APARTMENT

AusVee: o reng wena ( what are you saying )

Hills: im telling you ausVee...Khai walked out of that bathroom and when we asked him gore why he went in there to talk to his father a re itj a shishkrits ( it's a secret) imagine \*\*\*they laughed as they folded their washed clothes sitting in the lounge.....Doris and Khai are sleeping and Masai is still in hospital\*\*\*

Hills: Masai a re he's weird these days....he keeps on talking about Mkhulu this and Mkhulu that

AusVee: why are you surprised...his father ke thokoza Mkhulu akere

Hills: yeah I guess maybe he also has a gift

AusVee: mmmmh mara eish he's still young bathong....let hope his father will help him or ba ba ribege until he's old enough.... yah something like that

Hills: they can do that

AusVee: I don't know...im not sure akere we hear people talking so you'll never know if ba bua nnete ( they are telling the truth) or not

\*\*\*she said shrugging\*\*\*

Hills: hai he's way too young to be seeing bo Mkhulu...my poor Khai

AusVee: I believe papagwe o tlile go mo thusa so don't worry ( his father will help him so don't worry)

Hills: mmh...Im happy for Masai gore she got pregnant by a responsible man like Alpha....even though her pregnancy was horrible and ka mo she didn't have any support from him because it was a once off thing but as soon as they met again Alpha took responsibility and he's an amazing father and partner to them....im happy for her...she also deserves to be happy

AusVee: mmmmh....there were times where I thought she won't make it....she fought for Khai to be born alive...i remember the doctors told her to abort the baby cause they might both die and she stood her ground and said no.....yho Masai o tla re o di bone

shem ( yho Masai has been through a lot shame)...and now Moera o tla ka motete wa gonkga nxa....

\*\*\*Hills sighed\*\*\*

Hills: yho Moera wanstressa ausVee ( Yho Moera is stressing me ausVee) and now she's not even answering our calls and she's not even at her apartment ...ke gore she doesn't care about how worried we are about her...what if she's hurt or she harms herself...eish

AusVee: she'll never harm herself that one....she'd rather harm someone else but not herself.....ka mo rata Moera but what she did to Masai

\*\*\*she shook her head\*\*\*

AusVee: before Doris went to take a nap today she got a text from her a re o right o nale that coloured guy Doris beat up

\*\*\*she shrug her shoulders\*\*\*

Hills: wait you mean Elex's brother

\*\*\*ausVee nodded\*\*\*

Hills: amen

\*\*\*she shook her head in disbelief\*\*\*

Hills: maybe he's helping her track down the person responsible for the leaked recording and story

AusVee: but Doris is doing the same thing mos

\*\*\*Hills sighed\*\*\*

Hills: a kitsi ge ( I don't know then\*\*\*

\*\*\* She's worried about Moera and she's hurt she's ignoring her like this....she's wondering why Moera is not leaning on her for support like she always does when she (Hills) leans on her whenever she goes through things...it pains her deeply.....Anyway Doris walked inside the lounge limping and she sat down on the couch then she groaned in pain and decided to lay down instead\*\*\*

AusVee: and then wena...keng...o tswile skaku mo leragong ( whats wrong with you...do you have a boil on your bum)

Doris: eish emanyana lwena Vee man ( eish not now Vee man)

AusVee: emanyana ya eng....or ke di piles ( what do you mean not now...or is it piles)

\*\*\*Doris looked at Hills\*\*\*

Doris: tsamo koropa paiving ko ntle kwa o tla be wa utlwa ditaba tsa batho ba bagolo ( go and mop the pavement outside I don't want you listening to old people's conversations)

Hills: bathong mama

\*\*\*Vee laughed\*\*\*

Doris: keng...tla be o re im traumatizing you so tsa mo penta ceiling geh ko kamoreng since kontle gwa fisa ( what...the next thing you'll say im traumatizing you so go and paint the ceiling in the bedroom since its hot outside)

\*\*\*Vee continued to laugh her a\$\$ off and Hills rolled her eyes and she got up taking her phone and went to the bedroom\*\*\*

AusVee: wa bora Hunadi...mmmh bothata keng ( you are too much Hunadi...mmh what's the matter)

Doris: eish wena Vee....Mazwakhe onjele ka mo morago wena....anal Vee...yho bothoko bo ke bo utlwang ( yho Mazwakhe f\*ck\*d me on the other hole....an\*I Vee...yho the pain im feeling)

\*\*\*Vee busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Doris: don't laugh....im in pain wena wa tshega ( and you're laughing)

Vee: before ba go fa kuku ya fake (before you were given a fake p\*ssy ) you were once a man so why cant you handle an\*I

Doris: kuku ya fake ke dichubaba tseo o naleng tsona (a fake p\*ssy are those dark blemishes on your face)

AusVee: wannyela a ke sana dichubaba nna ( p\*ss off I don't have dark blemishes)

Doris: mxm then kuku ya fake ke mokhino oo ( then a fake p\*ssy is that gap of missing teeth you have )

\*\*\*Vee got up and she went closer to her\*\*\*

Doris: Vee im warning you

\*\*\*Vee grabbed her and pushed his index finger between her butt cheeks and Doris screamed....she poked her again through her leggings and Doris screamed again...Hills rushed in and she stopped\*\*\*

Hills: keng... aah mxm

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes bored\*\*\*

Doris: Vee wampolaya man ( you're killing me man)

Vee: e re sorry ( say sorry)

Doris: sorry....sorry bathong



\*\*\*she let go of her and Hills rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Hills: I forgot how childish you two can be mxm....keep it down please Khai is still sleeping

\*\*\*she went back to the bedroom and Vee went to wash her finger in the bathroom and she came back and she sat back down and continued to fold the clothes\*\*\*

Doris: eish gwa baba now...mara Vee o swile pelo shem ( eish its more painful now...but Vee you have cold heart shame)

AusVee: you deserved it

Doris: mxm....anyway eish that man ravaged me wena Vee

AusVee: that's what you get for opening your legs for a married man

Doris: hai suka married man ya eng....he was mine first

AusVee: and now he belongs to vasplanka ( a\$\$less)

\*\*\*Doris rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Doris: she doesn't deserve him...she's even making him raise another man's children mxm

AusVee: se se salang ke the wife lala ( at the end of the day she's the wife lala)....i cant believe o jaja Moera ( you're judging Moera) for dating married men while you're being f\*ck\*d by one...double standards Hunadi....you need to check yourself

Doris: mxm wa bora ( you are a bore)

\*\*\*she got up slowly\*\*\*

Doris: ko robala.... Im going to drink painkillers and a sleeping pill maybe I'll wake up mosoba o tswallegile le pain e didimetse ( my an\*I hole closed and the pain gone)

\*\*\*Vee laughed\*\*\*

Doris: lwena o tlo mo kereya monna a go ny\*be mot\*t\* oo and I'll laugh at you until o lla

\*\*\*Vee continued to laugh her a\$\$ off\*\*\*

Vee: nna mine is made to take a sh\*t and to fart not go nny\*biw\*ke bakgalabe ba di bisexual ba go tshwara ke tshukiri ( to get f\*ck\*d by old men who are bisexual and have diabetes)

Doris: mxm wa phapha wena le mokhino ( you are forward wena with missing teeth)

\*\*\*Vee laughed\*\*\*

Vee: go and sleep or I'll poke you again

\*\*she said attempting to get up and Doris rushed to her bedroom and Vee

laughed....after she was done she took the clothes to the bedrooms and she packed them nicely in the cupboards then she took Khai from Doris's bed and she went to put

her in the bedroom she's using cause she knows that once Doris drinks her sleeping pills she wont hear him when he wakes up....she decided to also take a nap\*\*\*

.  
. .

\*\*\*Hills is now sitting in the lounge replying to her emails....She owns a beauty salon and three boutiques in Gauteng she's doing good for herself and its all thanks to Doris who adopted her after her twin committed suicide when they were doing grade 12 they were both orphans who grew up in the system ( orphanage) ....She stops replying to her emails and her mind takes her to a miracle that happened to her years back....It was a miracle that she was best friends with Masai and Moera and Doris decided to adopt her when he heard her story.....She was ready to die with her twin Mhlaba but fate had a surprise for her and the surprise is Doris....She smiles as she thinks of how fortunate she has been since that day she was told someone wants to adopt her.

She couldn't believe that someone wanted to adopt her in her age she even thought it was a prank and to top it all Masai and Moera accepted her as part of the family when the adoption process became successful ....It was a miracle for her and she's grateful that Masai and Moera told Doris about her predicaments and Doris saved her from herself cause she was ready to take her life to follow her twin.....and now if she wasn't strong enough or had the strong support system she has she was gonna go through what her twin went through.....putting a man before herself....loving a man so much that she cant imagine life without him..... or even taking her life for a man just like her twin did.... She sighed as she thought of her late twin...the pain is still there and she still misses her dearly...A knock on the door disturb her train of thoughts and she gets up and go to see who it is and she got the shock of her life\*\*\*

Hills: Tar...how did you...

Tarek: thank God you're the one that answered the door....your mother scares the sh\*t out of me

\*\*\*he said chuckling nervously\*\*\*

Hills: what are you doing here...how did you find me...wait...are you stalking me

Tarek: how can you say that...you are my wife Hills

\*\*\*she breathed out to clam herself down\*\*\*

Hills: please leave Tar

Tar: we need to talk

Hills: talk about what huh...talk about what!!!

\*\*\*she said getting angry\*\*\*

Tar: there's no need for you to talk to me like that....i come in peace so drop that attitude

\*\*\*\*Hills chuckled shaking her head...she moved back and tried to close the door but

Tar quickly blocked it\*\*\*\*

Hills: remove your hand or I'll scream

Tar: I didn't come here to fight sthandwa sam...please lets go somewhere and talk please

Hills: remove your hand Tarek....remove it

\*\*\*she said loudly \*\*\*

Voice: you heard the lady shlama ( fool)....remove it

\*\*\*a voice said behind Tarek and it was Mpande....Tarek turned frowning and that's when Hills saw him\*\*\*

Tarek: stay out of this wena....this is between my wife and i....and who the f\*ck are you

\*\*\*Mpande raised an eyebrow looking at Hills and then at Tarek\*\*\*

Mpande: so this is the cheater the one that f\*cks white women

\*\*\*Hills looked away and Tarek got angry looking at Hills\*\*\*

Tar: so you tell just anybody our business....our business Shalate

Hills: Tarek please leave

Tar: im talking to you Hills damn it!!!....you've always been dumb so im not surprised

Hills: wow

\*\*\*she chuckled blinking fast trying not to cry....she didn't want to cry in front of him and give him the satisfaction....she's done with him....she's done being embarrassed by him

\*\*\*\*

Mpande: hey hey hey shlama senja....that's not how you speak to a woman wena ms\*nu

Tar: what did you just call me

Mpande: Shlama....ms\*nu

\*\*\*Mpande said to his face and Tarek grabbed Mpande with his shirt and Mpande also grabbed him with his shirt also and Hills screamed\*\*\*

Mpande: what do you think you're doing...do you know how expensive this shirt is wena ms\*nu k\*nyoko

Hills: guys stop it...Tarek let him go!!!

\*\*\*Tarek pushed him letting him go and Mpande did the same and he fixed his linen shirt\*\*\*

Tar: so this is what you're cheating on me with... with this thing that dresses like this....this farm boy...who dresses like this in his age....how dare you embarrass me like this Shalate....how dare you cheat on me with this thing that's way below my level like this

\*\*\*he said sizing Mpande up and down\*\*\*

Mpande: ms\*nu k\*nyoko shlama....golo loyihlo....you see her....im gonna take her and make me mine....she'll forget about your tiny d\*ck and fake accent....continue advertising your disability to white women I mean they are used to small d\*cks anyways.....women like Hills here deserve a real man with a manly d\*ck

Hills: yho Jehovah...Tarek leave bathong ...leave....Mpande stop insulting him please

\*\*\*she said with her hands on top of her head...this was bad...really bad \*\*\*

Hills: im sorry Mpande...im so sorry....this is...yho

\*\*\*she said moving forward and closing the door behind her..... as for Tarek he's asking himself if what Hills said that other time she called drunk was true....was his d\*ck really small....was all the women he slept with faking it all including Hills...his heart is beating fast and he wonders if Hills and Mpande talked about the size of his manhood during pillow talk cause no man can talk about another man's d\*ck size like this if he doesn't have the inside info about it.....As for Mpande his fuse is about to bust....Tarek's insults got to him \*\*\*

Mpande: weeh Ntabeni go inside and get ready I need to talk to this boy alone

Hills: Mpand....

Mpande: Ntabeni assomblief...

Hills: no there won't be any fighting here Mpande please

Mpande: who said im going to fight this fool

Tar: hei...this...this is my wife...who the hell do you think you are....how dare you disrespect me like this....this is my wife damn it!!!

Mpande: Ntabeni....

\*\*\*the door opened and ausVee got out\*\*\*

AusVee: and then leshata ( what's with the noise)

\*\*\*Hills heart is pounding fast as he looks between Tarek and Mpande\*\*\*

AusVee: and then wena cheating husband forward slash polygamist o batlang mo ( what are you doing here)

\*\*\*she said looking at Tarek with a frown\*\*\*

Hills: he was just leaving ausVee...is mama awake

\*\*\*ausVee shook her head no and Hills breathed out feeling relieved then she looked at Mpande who was still looking angry\*\*\*

Hills: this is Alpha's brother Mpande

AusVee: ooh ok so leshata ke la eng ( what's all this noise for)

Mpande: Ntabeni im still waiting....im sure Masai called you

\*\*\*Hills swallowed hard\*\*\*

Tarek: you're not going anywhere with my wife!!!

Hills: Tarek leave

Tar: im not going anywhere until we talk....im done being lenient with you...now you're letting things like this disrespect me like this....does he know who the f\*ck I am....how dare he disrespects me like this....in fact you know what go take your sh\*t we are going home now!!!

AusVee: o rasetasang....kao bona o batla ke tlogele Bokgatla ba ka ke ntse bopitori ba ka cause ka bona o na le lenyatso mosimane ( why are you making noise...i see you want me to put aside my Tswana side and take out my Pretorian side cause I see you're now being disrespectful boy)

\*\*\*Tarek clenched his jaws and ausVee looked between Tarek Mpande and Hills and Mpande chuckled containing himself because of ausVee...he's mad angry...the last time he was this angry he.....\*\*\*

AusVee: mmmmh...im going inside to boil a kettle of water and when I come out here the one that is not supposed to be here will wake up in hospital a tlhobegile letlalo ( with his skin burned) nxa

\*\*\*she left them there\*\*\*

Tarek: go take your things and lets go home!!!

\*\*\*she swallowed hard with tears in her eyes....then she heard the kettle being turned on and the water starting to boiling\*\*\*

Hills: Tarek leave now...ausVee is serious and when mama wakes up all hell will break loose so go if you value your life

\*\*\*Tarek swallowed hard...he couldn't believe she was choosing Mpande right in front of him...he has never been humiliated like this before...right then ausVee came back and

Tarek moved back with his heart beating fast thinking she had the kettle with her..... she looked at Hills\*\*\*

AusVee: so ke mang a tlhobiwang (who am i burning) the water is boiling nicely...im sure its you Mr forward slash cause im sure abuti Mpande here is here to see his nephew

\*\*\* Tarek swallowed hard...he looked at Hills thinking she will change her mind but she didn't say anything then he looked at Mpande with an angry look on his face and he walked away fuming \*\*\*

AusVee: thought as much nx....Mr polygamist ya masepa

\*\*\*she went inside leaving Mpande and Hills there\*\*\*

Hills: im sorry about what just happened...im really sorry

\*\*\*she said with a shaky voice\*\*\*

Mpande: go and get ready....we are going out to talk about the accident....i have the invoice in my car...I'll wait for you there

\*\*\*he then walked away and that's when her tears ran down her cheeks....she walked inside wiping her tears off\*\*\*

AusVee: yah Doris o tlo swa ka pelo shem...sebeta sa forward slash ka se respecta ( yah Doris will die of a heart attack shame...i respect forward slash's guts)

\*\*\*she said picking a now awake Khai up\*\*\*

AusVee: a reye o tlhapa papa ( lets go and bath papa)

\*\*\*they walked away and Hills threw herself on the couch\*\*\*

Hills: God give me the strength to deal with all these

.  
. .  
. .

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

## AT THE SANGOMA'S PLACE

\*\*\*Alpha's face transformed back to normal and his eyes also turned back to normal he blinked three times then he sneezed....he looked around and he found everyone looking at him except for Gaza who's still passed out....right then Gaza coughed opening his eyes....Mahlebezulu helped Gaza to sit up and Alphalette just looked at him intensely....Alphalette moved his eyes and looked at the sangoma and he clapped his palms together bowing his head a little\*\*\*

Alpha: thokozani

Sangoma: thokoza Mkhulu

\*\*\*Alpha then did the same thing to his uncle\*\*\*

Mabunda: thokoza Mkhulu

\*\*\*He then did the same thing to Mahlebezulu and Mahlebezulu laid on the floor on his side\*\*\*

Mahlebezulu: thokoza baba

\*\*\*he said clapping his hands together then he sat up and kneeled on the floor facing down....he's now scared of Alpha after what he witnessed.....Alpha then looked at Gaza for some time then he clapped his palms together\*\*\*

Alpha: thokozani

\*\*\*Gaza swallowed hard....it was the look he has on his face that scared him \*\*\*

Gaza: thokoza Mkhulu

\*\*\*Mahlebezulu rolled some tissue for Gaza and he wet it with some water and he handed it to him telling him to wipe off the blood....he did so with Alpha still looking at him intensely\*\*\*

Alpha: why don't you want to get rid of it

\*\*\*he said out of the blue and Gaza swallowed hard\*\*\*

Gaza: you won't understand

Alpha: so it's for power and wealth

Gaza: like I said you won't understand

Mabunda: what are you two talking about

Alpha: the is someone who can help you and I know you were told that but you don't want to get rid of it...why

Gaza: I don't want to get rid of it and my reasons shouldn't matter....the fact is I don't want to get rid of it period

Mabunda: you don't want to get rid of what....what are you two talking about

Alpha: so you rather sacrifice Tshimo's safety for that evil thing in you

Gaza: sacrifice Tshimo's safety how....how is me loving her marrying her and having kids with her sacrificing her safety

Alpha: you know what those kids with have....you don't even know how her pregnancy will be like

Gaza: and how is that your business....you don't see me sticking my nose in your business with Masai

Alpha: that girl is innocent Gaza....she doesn't deserve what you're about to put her through

Gaza: and Masai deserves to be in a polygamist marriage....she deserves to be married to a man who has a merman spirit inside of him

\*\*\*Alpha kept quiet\*\*\*

Alpha: I now know that it wont happen

Gaza: because they just showed you now.... but you were willing to put her through that rubbish even though she's sick....you were willing to put her through sh\*t by marrying another woman to pay off a debt so don't sit there and act like you're a saint

Alpha: you still don't see anything wrong with what you're about to put Tshimo through

Gaza: im not putting her through anything..... I love her and I will make her mine....we will build a family together and nothing will stop me except her from giving her that

Alpha: are you even listening to yourself

Gaza: kahle nje

Alpha: if you love her Gaza you will get rid of that thing...its gonna destroy you....it doesn't have good intentions

Gaza: you're a fine one to talk

Alpha: don't even go there

Gaza: why....you're here judging me maybe I should start judging you by your past

Sangoma: ok that's enough boys

\*\*\*Gaza and Alpha looked intensely at each other\*\*\*



Sangoma: there's no need for all this

Mabunda: what the hell is going on!!!

\*\*\*Alphalette sighed and he looked down\*\*\*

Alpha: Gaza was put something evil inside of him by the witchdoctor paid by your sister and his mother in law....he was experimenting with him and he ended up putting something beyond this world inside of him.... They wanted to turn him into something evil they could use for their own selfish reasons but they invited something evil...they opened a gate way for something evil

\*\*\*Gaza clenched his jaws looking down as his father swallowed hard with his eyes popped out and Alphalette got up and he walked out....the sangoma sighed and he also got up and followed Alphalette...he found him sitting on a benched under another tree\*\*\*

Sangoma: I know you care about him....a lot

\*\*\*he said sitting next to him\*\*\*

Sangoma: his wife made him feel weak....she bruised his ego and made him feel like he's not man enough and now he experienced a great deal of power and you think he'll let it go just like that....he feels invincible

Alpha: but Tshimo is the one who's gonna suffer

Sangoma: and why does it bother you so much

\*\*\*he didn't answer him\*\*\*

Sangoma: you think you fell for her the first time you met her right?

\*\*\*Alpha didn't say anything and the Sangoma chuckled\*\*\*

Sangoma: well you didn't.....what you felt when you met her is all orchestrated by her foolish ancestors and father .....you know where your heart is.....you late father fought hard for you not to go through what he went through...he wants you to be happy and to make your own choices that's why he changed your fate or whatever it was and made her meet your brother instead

Alpha: all im saying is she doesn't deserve what she's about to go through

Sangoma: and the mother of your child deserves your merman....and also seeing her child talking to his ancestors as if it's a normal thing at that young age...im sure she didn't grow up in a family full of sangomas and now she has to adjust to this life just because she loves you you know how you got that merman....you sacrificed a lot to have it...it wasn't a gift from your ancestors but something you went to seek...but you want to judge your brother....

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Sangoma: your merman wasn't this calm before....you know what you had to do to tame it

\*\*\*Alpha swallowed hard\*\*\*

Alpha: lets not visit the past please

Sangoma: then stop judging your brother....he supported you and its your turn now...i don't approve his decision but its his decision to make and im sure he knows all the consequences that comes with that decision

\*\*\*Alpha clenched his jaws....that thing it evil...what happened to Marina horrified him cause that's his wife the mother of his son but he broke her like that he asked himself what will he do to Tshimo if she messes up....death was even better than what she went through all because she cheated "he thought"\*\*\*\*

Sangoma: you have a special gift....a serpent of clear water....the great Nkanyamba....you haven't even experienced 30 percent of your gift and you also have the merman....you should be focusing on your family and your gift but here you are worried about another woman....indeed humans are ungrateful most of the times

Sangoma: did they show you how it saved him from a serial killed in the forest right after he escaped from that evil hut

\*\*\*Alpha sighed and he nodded\*\*\*

Sangoma: he would've died by the hands of that evil man but it took over and saved him...whether it was for its own twisted reasons or not but it saved him....it was either him or that evil man that killed for fun and trust me if he didn't have that demon inside of him he would be dead for real now...buried along with those victims that killer buried there

\*\*\*the sangoma sighed and Alpha swallowed hard\*\*\*

Sangoma: your brother's girl is not your business and you being worried like this about her will cause a rift between you and your brother and soon the rift will be between you and the mother of your son...are you prepared to lose her

Alpha: I love Masai....she's my life

Sangoma: but you're here worried about another woman.....you don't even see the bigger picture here Mkhulu....

\*\*\*he got up and walked away whistling and Alphalette sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: this old man knows a lot for my liking....

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Alpha: eish

.  
. .  
. .

## INSIDE THE ANCESTRAL HUT

\*\*\*the Sangoma walked in\*\*\*

Sangoma: Mahlebezulu go and prepare cleansing water for him....he'll steam first....he can't go to the river gogo would be furious and she might kill us because of that demon....ku labeka a fembiwa a noveni ( he needs to be exorcised in a forest ) first before I can take him to the river for a serious cleansing but since he doesn't wanna get rid of it im not about to take chances with our lives by angering gogo

\*\*\*Mahlebezulu swallowed hard\*\*\*

Mahlebezulu: thokoza baba

\*\*\*he said clapping his palms together and he got up and walked out of the hut\*\*\*

Sangoma: are you ok Mabunda

Mabunda: I need some air...its too hot in here and I need to use the toilet...i think I have a runny stomach

\*\*\*he said getting up and walking out with his left hand on his stomach and the sangoma sighed....he took different containers filled with muthi and he put them down then he sat down and started mixing them in one container for Gaza\*\*\*

Sangoma: he's not taking this well....keep an eye on him

Gaza: I'll talk to him

Sangoma: talk to your brother also

\*\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: maybe we need some time apart

Sangoma: no you don't....the only person that can help you tame that thing...well if it can be tamed your brother knows him.....you gonna need his support son....leave this thing of him being the one that is supposed to marry your girl alone cause she has fallen for you....and to tell you the truth its not love he's feeling for her...you know where his heart is....that's what her foolish ancestors and father wanted to happen when they meet for the first time for them to feel like its love at first sight....there's no love at first sight here its just manipulation so relax and focus on the bigger picture and stop fighting your brother man....yeeerrr

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Sangoma: I reminded him about the past so don't worry....you two will be fine

\*\*\*Gaza swallowed painfully\*\*\*

Gaza: she was supposed to marry him

\*\*\*this was not sitting well with him\*\*\*

Sangoma: not for love but for duty

Gaza: he has fallen for her I know....what if....

Sangoma: he loves his soul mate and he's not prepared to lose her for anything or anyone....remember there are also evil forces involved....her father....he's alive and manipulating everything....he's angry that she has fallen for the wrong brother....he's gonna try to cause chaos between the three of you

\*\*\*Gaza looked down...he asked himself how this man knew so much \*\*\*

Sangoma: your uncle wants you and your brother to be happy...to experience happiness...something he never got to experience fully

Sponsored

AD

by making sure you ended up with women good for you but this world is full of evil people....your own blood betrayed you and a demon was put inside of you messing up his plans but he fought hard for you to meet that girl cause she's good for you but not for your brother cause he wasn't gonna marry her for love.....why do you think the mother of his child she fell pregnant and gave birth to a healthy baby even though doctors said they both won't make it

Gaza: it doesn't change the fact that her ancestors want Ntsako and not me

Sangoma: its her father's ancestors and remember tatane wa yena angahlaolang.....na yena ntombi anga bikiwang ka bona....( her father didn't pay for damages and the girl wasn't introduced to her father's ancestors too) they don't have any claim to her but they still want to claim her nxa....if it was her mother's ancestors who wanted your brother to marry her I would understand but them.....

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Sangoma: hei ta vuya lamsaveni ( this world is hectic )....witches never sleep or rest

\*\*\*he said as he continued to mix herbs in one container\*\*\*

Sangoma: so tshikani kulwa engaku metembyana ( stop fighting like dogs) and fight this together man...mekhegorile na swekanda swa ku tala malevu ( you're old with faces full of beards) but you fight like school children

---

HILLS ( NARRATED)

\*\*\* Mpande walked to the steps instead of the elevator dialling Heath's numbers on his phone\*\*\*

Heath: sho Roots

Mpande: sho...i need a favour fast fast man

Heath: ok im listening

Mpande: im about to beat the crap out of someone who disrespected me in front of someone....

\*\*\*he paused a bit\*\*\*

Mpande: so can you mess up the CCTV footage on this complex im in right now....i won't kill him but I wanna teach him a lesson he will never forget

\*\*\*Heath chuckled\*\*\*

Heath: who pissed you off

Mpande: I'll tell you all about it some other time so can you do that for me

Heath: give me the address...I'll let one of my boys handle it...im about to attend a meeting.....

Mpande: ok thaa foza...shap

\*\*\*he dropped the call and stopped climbing down the stairs and he send him the address then he rushed out....he found Tarek pacing up and down talking on the phone looking angry....he upped his pace to him angry as hell and he grabbed his right shoulder turning him around to face him roughly and a punch landed on Tarek's face

and he fell flat to the ground...then Mpande got on top of him and he punched him repeatedly with Tarek trying to block his punches but it was a futile thing to do especially if you are caught off guard\*\*\*

Mpande: ungiywaela amasimba msunu wakho!!

\*\*\*he said throwing in punches until Tarek couldn't block them anymore....he punched him one last time then he got up from him and he kicked him severally until he heard voices not far of women talking and he moved from him and rushed to his car....he quickly opened it and he got in closing the door not satisfied....he heard screams and he clicked his tongue....he took out his handkerchief and wiped the blood on his knuckles\*\*\*

Mpande: nxa....he's f\*ck\*n lucky....b\*stard!!!

\*\*\*\*he watched the whole scene from his side mirrors until he saw Hills approaching the scene....he got out of the car as Hills screamed when he saw Tarek on the ground with a bloody face...he was still conscious and a woman is busy on the phone calling the paramedics\*\*\*

Mpande: Ntabeni!!!

\*\*\*he called her and she raised her head as she was about to kneel next to Tarek \*\*\*

Mpande: asambe ( lets go)

Hills: Mpande he's...

Mpande: ngithe asambe....manje!! ( I said lets go now)

\*\*\*Tarek raised his hand\*\*\*

Tarek: don't go please

\*\*\*Mpande walked to her just as Tarek held her leg\*\*\*

Mpande: fuseg!!!....let go of her shlama

\*\*\*he said angrily and Tarek let go of her leg\*\*\*

Woman: haw abuti cant you see he's hurt....there's no need for you to be this rude

Mpande: uyaphapha nempandla ( you're too forward with your bald head)

Woman: askies

Mpande: I don't know why ungoro kera ichiskop ( you don't just cut all your hair off) cause hairline is gone ngapha uyaphapha nobubi ( on top of it you're too forward with your ugly self)....concentrate on the patient and keep your mouth shut mpandlane ( baldy)

Hills: Mpande....

\*\*\*she said reprimanding him\*\*\*

Mpande: lets go

\*\*\*then he looked at Tarek as they helped him sit on his butt\*\*\*

Mpande: izintaba kphela ezingahlangani lova...usazonya

\*\*\*he said with a scary look on his face and he grabbed Hills' hand and pulled her to his car with her looking back at Tarek\*\*\*

Hills: Mpande wait...he's...

\*\*\*she said trying to pull back her hand \*\*\*

Mpande: Ntabeni!!!

\*\*\*He said firmly looking at her with a pissed off look on his face and she swallowed hard....he opened the door for her and she got in with a worried look on her face.... then he closed the door and went to the driver side and he got in and started the car and he reversed and drove away\*\*\*

.  
. .

BACK AT THE PARKING LOT

Woman: wannyela that guy nxa...all I said was he shouldn't be rude ga fetsa yena o tlompotsa masepa (and he decides to tell me sh\*t)

\*\*\*she said angrily\*\*\*

Woman: sa wara abuti an ambulance is on its way

\*\*\*She said to Tarek who was wiping his bleeding nose with his shirt he just took off\*\*\*

Woman2: I wouldn't even be surprised if he's the one who did this to this poor guy

\*\*\*they saw security rushing to them....another tenant called them\*\*\*

Woman1: nx bona fela le bontsho ke gona ba tlang....nxa useless

Woman2: mxm oho ba useless ba ( they are useless these ones)...you can even bribe them to enter dimpya tse ( these dogs)

Woman1: something needs to be done about them...the first ones were top class but these ones are useless

Woman2: did you see who did this to you abuti

\*\*\*Tarek ignored them and he slowly blocked his nose from all the bleeding....he could tell by the blood still coming out and the pain that it was broken....he searched for his

phone and one of the woman went to pick it for him and he called his friend but he didn't answer his phone\*\*\*

Security: what happened here

Woman1: we should be asking you that....askere its your job to guard this place

\*\*\*she said with an attitude\*\*\*

Security: haw sister we were busy by the gate that's why im asking

Woman1: im not your sister wena

\*\*\*they continued to argue back and forth and Tarek just closed his eyes as the pain accompanied by a headache got worse....he laid back down and waited as he heard sirens of an ambulance getting closer\*\*\*

---

## AT AMO'S HOME

\*\*\*Jabu was called by Amo's mother to come they have something important to talk to him about so he decided to take along Ray cause he's the sensible and matured one.... He doesn't know what he's been called for and taking Heath with him and knowing how short tempered he is all hell might break loose if they piss him off.....They parked the car outside the gate they can see mourners outside sitting and drinking tea with scones\*\*\*

Ray: are you ready

\*\*\*Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: if they say they are burying her let them

\*\*\*Ray nodded\*\*\*

Ray: and if they want you to bury her

\*\*\*Jabu kept quiet\*\*\*

Jabu: I don't know big Ray...eish I don't know



\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: ok lets go hear what they have to say

\*\*\*they got out of the car and wore their jackets and Ray locked the car and they walked in.... people inside the yard looked at them some are even whispering among themselves \*\*\*

Woman1: what if he sacrificed poor Amo for riches....i mean look at that car and the clothes he's wearing

\*\*\*she whispered to his friend\*\*\*

Woman2: mmmmh and I heard he even kicked her out of his house right after their daughter died

Woman1: e re wayaka ( say you're lying)

Woman2: im telling you

Woman1: yho

\*\*\*she clapped her hands dramatically.....Jabu and Ray greeted the ones closer to the door and they walked inside...the room became quiet instantly as they entered.....They greeted and the people inside the room greeted back and they sat down....One woman got up and he went to the bedroom where Amo's mother is and whispered to her that the husband is here and Amo's mother instructed her to let them in...it was only Amo's mother her uncle and aunt inside the bedroom\*\*\*

Woman: you can come in

\*\*\*she said to Ray and Jabu who felt uncomfortable with how tense things have become since they got here...they got up and followed her...they got inside the room and they greeted sitting down and things got more intense....Jabu sighed and he looked down and played with his wedding ring waiting.....Ray cleared his throat\*\*\*

Ray: my elders ....we came as soon as we heard you wanted to see him

Man: why come now....isn't he the husband...so my sister had to call him for him to show his face

Ray: with all due respect Jabu and Amo were separated and your sister knows that....a meeting was even held by both families and your niece did and say the unthinkable.....you were not there so don't talk about things you know nothing about  
\*\*\*he said with a firm tone\*\*\*

Woman: but she was still his wife...they had a child together....we heard he was even arrested as a suspect for her murder and more importantly where are your elders they should be the ones here with him

\*\*\*Jabu clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ray: I am his elder and if you have a problem with that then we can just leave

\*\*\*he then looked at Amo's mother\*\*\*

Ray: Ma you called us here

Amo'smother: Jabulani

Jabu: ma

Amo'smother: I know you and my daughter had your differences

\*\*\*Jabu wanted to laugh at that statement\*\*\*

Amo'smother: ....after the death of Jabulile things got worse but I know you loved her....you fought for her...you fought to make her your wife when her father..... when her father was against the idea.....She was a happily married woman who glowed until the devil entered your marriage

\*\*\*she sighed and Jabu clenched his jaws still looking down \*\*\*

Amo'smother: I will not lie and say Amo was perfect and a saint...a lot happened which you know about....so as Amo's mother I want you to bury her....i think this is the closure you will need my son...it is the right thing to do

\*\*\*Jabu raised his head to look at her with a frown on his face and he saw her wiping her falling tears off \*\*\*

Amo'smother: I know you didn't kill her.....i was there when those thugs pointed the gun at us....the leaders voice is imprinted in my mind...his aura was evil...it was like he was the devil himself....i feared him more than I feared the gun he pointed at us with

\*\*\*Jabu looked down frowning while Ray listened carefully\*\*\*

Ray: is there anything else you remember about them....a tattoo or ring or something ma

\*\*\*she shook her head no wiping her falling tears\*\*\*

Uncle: why....onyako timetsa motlhala ( you want to get rid of the evidence)

Amo'smother: Tshepo....

\*\*\*she reprimanded him then she looked at Ray\*\*\*

Amo'smother: Whoever killed my daughter knew what he was doing...that wasn't just a robbery....she was the target

Uncle: her wedding ring was also taken now why would a thug take a mere wedding ring heh... unless it held sentimental value to that person

Jabu: that ring cost R35 000 and it didn't hold any sentimental value to her because she still cheated wearing it so why should it hold such to another person

\*\*\*he said looking at the uncle\*\*\*

Uncle: heh...30 what....

\*\*\* Amo's mother and aunt gasped\*\*\*

Uncle: that ring needs to be found.....the police need to find it now!!!

\*\*\*Ray just shook his head looking down....this uncle was just something else " he thought"\*\*\*

Jabu: why didn't you tell the police about Mondli...why isn't he a suspect too...you know what happened between them and....

\*\*\*he breathed out to calm himself down\*\*\*

Jabu: your daughter hurt me deeply ma.....Jabulile died because of her...

\*\*\*Amo's mother looked away\*\*\*

Uncle: hei hei how dare you say that about Amo....you killed my niece now o tlo bolela ka di hurt mo ( you're busy talking about being hurt)

\*\*\*Jabu frowned looking at the uncle\*\*\*

Jabu: wooh uncle....nna lwena a re jajane first of all.... (you and I don't know each other first of all)

Ray: Jabu....

\*\*\*he tried to stop him because he could see he was now angry\*\*\*

Jabu: ema pele big Ray ( wait big Ray).....die uncle is out here talking as if he knew Amo.... why don't you ask your sister gore what did her daughter do heh....she was going around sleeping with cultists that ended up killing my daughter as a sacrifice...if I wanted her dead I could've killed her then and ka yo pantita ko suncity ( and go serve my time in jail) but I let her live and only asked for a divorce

Ray: Jabu...

Jabu: ma the fact that you said you know I didn't kill your daughter means you went out to consult ....i know it's the reason you're saying I should bury her since she's still my wife cause if you suspected I was responsible I wouldn't have been allowed to enter into your yard....what im seeing is o batla go fitlha botlhaswa ba ngwana gao le diketso tsa gae tsa bosatane using me....ke playground nna ankere ( you want to hide your daughter evil doings using me...im a playground right) ....people use me and I should just forgive and forget....no one cares about what your daughter put me through...ke chipi nna ( im made of steel) I don't get hurt right

\*\*\*Amo's mother just cried\*\*\*

Woman: mokgwenyana ( son in law).....i think we should let bygones be bygones...Amo is gone.....what we should be focusing on is laying her to rest so we can all heal and move on....gore what she did or didn't do doesn't matter now...she's gone

Uncle: you're not the first man to be hurt by their wife....lenyalo ga se papadi seun (marriage is not for the faint hearted son) so bury your wife....o monyetse wa re ( you married her and said) through thick and thin....for better or for worse so ke yona worse e ( so this is the worse part)

\*\*\*Ray looked at the uncle with an intense look \*\*\*

Ray: ok we will start with the funeral arrangements then...we will keep you updated

\*\*\*he said and he got up\*\*\*

Ray: let's go Jabu

\*\*\*Jabu also got up \*\*\*

Uncle: just like that

Ray: is there something else

Uncle: we need to discuss the funeral arrangements....where she will be buried....her casket....food and drinks and which funeral parlour you're going to use.....my niece can't use just any funeral parlour....we have a standard we have to keep...she's married to a rich man so people need to see that

Ray: will you pay for all the things you just mentioned

\*\*\*the uncle looked at Amo's mother then at Ray\*\*\*

Uncle: he's the husband so he has to pay for everything

\*\*\*Ray looked at him for a while until the uncle swallowed hard and looked away and that's when Ray looked at Amo's mother\*\*\*

Ray: ma we will keep in touch

\*\*\*Jabu looked at the uncle intensely too until the uncle felt uncomfortable then they walked out\*\*\*

Amo'smother: Tshepo keng ka wena mara ( Tshepo what's wrong with you)

Tshepo: what did I do

Amo'smother: couldn't you just keep quiet

Tshepo: keep quiet for what....he has to bury her.... we wont bury my niece like a pauper while she's married to a rich man...never and plus we are not even sure if he's responsible or not

Amo'smother: he's not

Tshepo: you don't know that...maybe ngaka ya gao ( your traditional healer) lied to you

\*\*\*Amo's mother sighed and she laid down ignoring her brother\*\*\*

Woman: Tshepo wena wa lapisa man aarg.... re boletse pila and wena wa senya dilo ( we spoke about how we are going to handle the talk and you decided to ruin things)

Tshepo: a ke tlo tella ke bafananyana nna....they think just because they have money re tlo utlwa ka bona...never ( I will not be disrespected by small boys....they think just because they have money we will take whatever they say...never)

Woman: no wonder your wife left you....you have no sense at all

Tshepo: ke tlaobotsa ditaba tsa gao wa swaba le dichubaba tsa memeza

Amo'smother: hai man enough!!!

\*\*\*they kept quiet and Uncle Tshepo got up and he walked out looking angry\*\*\*

Woman: askies man.... Tshepo le yena wa tena....as long as they agreed to bury her im sure this will stop people from speculating rubbish about her

\*\*\*Amo's mother didn't say anything\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

31

INSIDE THE CAR

Jabu: wannyela dai man

Ray: calm down

Jabu: nx....mar\*t\* a gae entlek nx

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: we got this Jabu so don't worry....the wives will handle all the funeral arrangement...we are burying her on Thursday... we gonna do it like white people do it...it will only be family members

\*\*\*Jabu didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ray: I got this don't worry...im just glad we didn't bring Heath along or that uncle was gonna feel his wrath and we don't need to stress Gogo and Mkhulu about this nonsense we will just keep them updated about everything else...they are too old for this sh\*t  
\*\*\*then they kept quiet\*\*\*

Ray: La Parca will take her soul on Thursday night...its time she went to answer for her sins

\*\*\*Jabu swallowed hard looking at Ray\*\*\*

Ray: I think he's making me aware of this because she's a daughter in law in the family or maybe there's another reason.....i don't know cause im just his vessel

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ray: she slept with a witchdoctor to have you back.....she basically sold her soul to have you be her puppet not knowing she entered the wrong ndomba....she thought it was just sex with him to have you back but it wasn't he played her he planted something in her and before it could work she was killed ....she was naïve and stupid to think she was gonna succeed

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Jabu: how...how do you know all this

Ray: Ruu told me and I have a demon attached to my soul Jabu.... each day im learning to live with it and to know how it operates....i also do researches about it.....its stuck with me whether I like it or not and I have no one to blame but myself

\*\*\*Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: she did all that too and they still want me to bury her

Ray: maybe they know or maybe they don't know but what I know is you will bury her then you'll move on...this is the end of a dark tunnel for you Jabu....this is it....don't let anything or anyone distract you....you're almost there

\*\*\*Jabu just sighed thinking about what Ray just said to him\*\*\*

Ray: something is off here.....that man....that witchdoctor....

Jabu: what about him

Ray: something is off even Ruu said it...he tried to use his crystal ball to see him but his face becomes blurry then he laughs....

Jabu: is he after us or me

Ray: I don't know but something is off but we will get to the bottom of it

Jabu: why didn't you tell me all this

Ray: Ruu called me when I was still in Nigeria and he was a bit worried.... we were gonna tell you after the funeral or when you are back to your usual self

\*\*\*Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: so Im back to my usual self

\*\*\*Ray looked at him then he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: yeah you can even smile now

Jabu: mxm

\*\*\*Ray laughed\*\*\*

Ray: Cass already took care of the finger prints so don't worry about Sbu

Jabu: remind me to thank him....at least I don't have to worry about that

Ray: im still gonna whip his butt for that stunt he pulled nxa

.  
. .  
.

## ON A CONFERENCE CALL

Thandi: hei bafazi I just got a call from Ray

Mbali: about the funeral arrangements.....he also called me

Thandi: yeah

Phumi: ooh so Jabu will bury the dead witch

\*\*\*Thandi laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: ha ah Phumi

Phumi: it's the truth moes

Mbali: where is Star

Thandi: she's standing in for Heath in a meeting with some suppliers because he had to attend another important one since Jabu and Ray went to Amo's place

Mbali: that's nice.... hubby and wifey standing in for each other.... I can already see her cat walking in a room full of horny men glowing in her high heels.....im sure by now all those perverts envy Heath shem

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: im sure Heath won't allow her to go to a meeting with a room full of men only its just the suppliers Mbali...yho he would die of heart attack my poor brother

Phumi: he likes to act like he's not obsessed with her but we see him....

Mbali: mmmmh

Phumi: uthi mmmmh....wena Ray is worse with you

\*\*\*Thandi laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: and Ruu is not?

\*\*\*Phumi laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: wena Cass even turned you into his female version to keep you as his forever and ever

\*\*\*they laughed some more\*\*\*

Mbali: hai we are f\*ck\*d shem....anyway we will update Star later then

Thandi: yep anyhoo....we have three days to arrange it because the guys ba re she should be buried on Thursday....

Mbali: yeah hubby said they will make sure the body is moved from the government mortuary today to a private funeral parlour

Thandi: mmmmh money talks akere so....catering ya a black kasi funeral (a traditional township funeral catering) or sandwiches and drinks

Mbali: sandwiches and drinks and im thinking the funeral service should be at a nice venue(nyana) and not at Jabu's

Phumi: mmmmh she will move from the funeral parlour to her mother's house where she died so they collect her soul...well that's if the angel of death hasn't collected it already.... then she will go to the venue for like an hour or so then to the grave yard and Amen...

Thandi: Mbali should be the one to know if hubby has collected the soul or not

Mbali: tsek Thandi the wizard's wife!

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: anyway from the grave yard then back to the venue to eat then we are done

Thandi: ok I agree too but nna I won't go to the graveyard I'll remain at the venue to make sure everything is fine cause im still breastfeeding

Phumi: as for me you know the sun is my enemy so someone should take a live video for me

Thandi: ai wena le allergy ya letsatsi (sun)



\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: but she died painfully bafazi

Thandi: yah...ne e le moerskond ya mosadi but she didn't deserve to go out like that man

Phumi: well her husband satan called for her so who are we to say no

\*\*\*Thandi laughed her butt off\*\*\*

Thandi: Phumi o savage

Phumi: pretty girl Lile is dead because she couldn't keep her legs closed so I don't feel any sympathy for her shame

\*\*\*they kept quiet when they thought of Lile\*\*\*

Phumi: anyway you remember the daughter in law I told yall about

Mbali: the one that is not yet born....yho mara this family iNetflix nje

\*\*\*Thandi laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: true...i cant even keep up and its strange that we all have accepted everything the way they are

Mbali: love and loyalty bafazi

Thandi: plus sejeso ( love potion)

\*\*\*they laughed \*\*\*

Phumi: wena Mbali you are worse...you share a bed with the grim reaper and you gave birth to a little cute demon child

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: love mfazi...love

Thandi: plus sejeso ( love potion)

Mbali: you know I thought I will get married to a normal guy and have a normal marriage with normal kids but fate or whatever it was...was like uyanya shame....you gonna get the worst of them all

\*\*\*they all laughed\*\*\*

Phumi: eish we even diverted from what I wanted to tell yall...anyway the mother and father are both dead but she survived

Thandi: hai wena.... what....what happened

Phumi: some evil Vamps wanted her blood so yah....Hubby saved her but her parents didn't make it shame

Mbali: shame mara...where is she...so are you gonna raise her

Phumi: Cass said its not a good idea so she's gonna be raised by someone Cass trusts  
mxm

Thandi: askies I know how much you want to raise a baby girl

Phumi: Cass seems to believe Thea's first child will be a girl so for now im waiting

Mbali: heh Phumi...i almost fainted when I saw your son's recent photo....konje how fast  
do Vamp babies grow

Phumi: hai angazi nami but Ruu said its normal

Mbali: like I said this family INetflix nje

Thandi: you can say that again

\*\*\*they continued to chat over the phone\*\*\*

---

## AT THE RESTAURANT

\*\*\*They walked in and Mpande pulled a chair for Hills and she thanked him and sat  
down then he sat down too facing her....she looked at his bruised knuckles and she  
sighed...her mind went back to Tarek she wondered if he's ok and that Mpande didn't  
cause too much damage....She took out her phone not aware that he was staring at her  
as she sighed continuously....As she was about to dial his numbers he grabbed it and  
put it on the table\*\*\*

Hills: ummm excuse me...what do you think you are doing

Mpande: you're not about to disrespect me by calling that boy in front of me

Hills: Mpande....

\*\*\*she sighed closing her eyes for a sec then she looked at him\*\*\*

Mpande: and yes I beat the crap out of him

\*\*\*she looked at him with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Hills: why....you didn't have to hurt him like that...violence is not the answer

Mpande: it is to me if you insult me.....and umtshele ukuthi eyamadoda ayipheli ( and tell him im not yet done with him) so im still gonna panel beat him some more every time I see him until im satisfied ukuthi uzwile

\*\*\*she sighed sitting back and looking at him...this guy is insane "she thought" \*\*\*

Hills: what will you achieve by doing that Mpande

Mpande: satisfaction

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes done with this conversation\*\*\*

Mpande: don't ever roll your eyes at me ever again Ntabeni....that's pure disrespect

Hills: can we just discuss the invoice you got so I pay you

\*\*\*he didn't say anything...he just looked at her\*\*\*

Mpande: you haven't apologized for rolling your eyes at me Ntabeni

Hills: what

\*\*\*\* she asked chuckling a bit but he didn't smile or laugh....he was dead serious\*\*\*

Hills: you're serious

Mpande: im waiting

Hills: wow...ok geh abuti...im sorry for rolling my eyes at you....happy now...can we get this over and done with

Mpande: uyichithe ngo "happy now".....uyabona wena Ntabeni ufuna nje inkonzo yasekamelweni ngiyingenise busuku bonke lakuwena....Umuntu akshaye nje ngenduku emnandi busuku bonke...uchame ungaqedi ukuthi ukwazi ukungihlonipha ( you ruined it with "happy now".... you see Ntabeni you just want me to f\*ck you the whole night....give you a good d\*ck the whole night making you squirt none stop so you'll respect me)

Hills: huh..... ok can you translate that cause im not really that good with Zulu

Mpande: indoda yomZulu ayikhulumi into eyodwa kabili ( a Zulu man doesn't say one thing twice)

Hills: yho Modimo.... ok I understood that one .....so ndoda ya moZulu ( Zulu man) can we talk about what brought us here so I can leave

\*\*\*the waiter brought them their drinks and asked if they are ready to order and Hills said no...Mpande ordered his usual cheddar melt steak she wondered if he's ok and that Mpande didn't cause too much damage....She took out her phone not aware that he was staring at her as she sighed continuously....As she was about to dial his numbers he grabbed it and put it on the table\*\*\*

Hills: ummm excuse me...what do you think you are doing

Mpande: you're not about to disrespect me by calling that boy in front of me

Hills: Mpande....

\*\*\*she sighed closing her eyes for a sec then she looked at him\*\*\*

Mpande: and yes I beat the crap out of him

\*\*\*she looked at him with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Hills: why...you didn't have to hurt him like that...violence is not the answer

Mpande: it is to me if you insult me.....and umtshela ukuthi eyamadoda ayipheli ( and tell him im not yet done with him) so im still gonna beat him some more every time I see him until im satisfied ukuthi uzwile

\*\*\*she sighed sitting back and looking at him...this guy is insane "she thought" \*\*\*

Hills: what will you achieve by doing that Mpande

Mpande: satisfaction

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes done with this conversation\*\*\*

Mpande: don't ever roll your eyes at me ever again Ntabeni....that's pure disrespect

Hills: can we just discuss the invoice you got so I pay you

\*\*\*he didn't say anything...he just looked at her\*\*\*

Mpande: you haven't apologized for rolling your eyes at me Ntabeni

Hills: what

\*\*\*\* she asked chuckling a bit but he didn't smile or laugh.....he was dead serious\*\*\*

Hills: you're serious

Mpande: im waiting

Hills: wow...ok geh abuti...im sorry for rolling my eyes at you....happy now...can we get this over and done with

Mpande: uyichithe ngo "happy now" .....uyabona wena Ntabeni ufuna nje inkonzo yasekamelweni ngiyingenise busuku bonke lakuwena....Umuntu akshaye nje ngenduku emnandi busuku bonke...uchame ungaqedi ukuthi ukwazi ukungihlonipha ( you ruined it with "happy now".... you see Ntabeni you just want me to f\*ck you the whole night....give you a good d\*ck the whole night making you squirt none stop so you'll respect me)

Hills: huh..... ok can you translate that cause im not really that good with Zulu

Mpande: indoda yomZulu ayikhulumi into eyodwa kabili ( a Zulu man doesn't say one thing twice)

Hills: yho Modimo.... ok I understood that one .....so ndoda ya moZulu ( Zulu man) can we talk about what brought us here so I can leave

\*\*\*the waiter brought them their drinks and asked if they are ready to order and Hills said no....Mpande ordered his usual cheddar melt steak French fries and veges and also ordered that for Hills and the waiter left\*\*\*

Hills: im not staying for long so you didn't have to order for me

Mpande: says who

Hills: me....and plus im on a diet so what you ordered for me is not good for me

Mpande: athi diet ( she says diet)....diet for what

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Hills: remember ke fatty boom boom as you called me

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Mpande: but I apologized ntombenhle

Hills: can we just talk about what brought us here

\*\*\*he looked at her and he could see she's still hurt by that....he sighed and smiled\*\*\*

Mpande: what brought us here is food and a good conversation

Hills: no.... its me paying you for damaging your car...you know what I don't even know why Masai gave you my numbers....how did you even found out where I lived cause Masai said she only gave you my numbers

Mpande: I have my ways

Hills: what are you trying to do Mpande....what's all this ...we don't like each other so why all this

\*\*\*he didn't answer her....he just looked at her cause truthfully he didn't have an answer to that question...she sighed\*\*\*

Hills: can we just talk about the payment so I can leave

\*\*\*Mpande's phone rang and he answered\*\*\*

Mpande: foza

Heath: what the hell did that guy do to you man

\*\*\*Mpande chuckled\*\*\*

Mpande: he disrespected me

\*\*\*he said looking at Hills\*\*\*

Heath: damn im sure you dislocated his jaws and broke his nose

Mpande: well next time I'll crush his b\*lls

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Heath: well I took care of the footage

Mpande: ngiyabonga bafo I'll take care of the rest

Heath: sho

\*\*\*they ended the call and Mpande sighed and took a sip of his drink\*\*\*

Mpande: phuza phela isabanda ledlink yakho ( drink up while your drink is still cold)

Hills: you didn't have to say dlink Mpande...you can pronounce the "r" bathong

Mpande: ngumZulu mina so you have to get used to it

Hills: I don't have to get used to anything....will we ever talk about what brought us here

Mpande: ok....imnadi ichedda melt steak ya la neh ( the cheddar melt steak here is nice right)

\*\*\*Hills sighed defeated....this guy is just too much "she thought" \*\*\*

Hills: yho Modimo

Mpande: can we just enjoy our meal first then we will talk about the accident

\*\*\*she sighed giving up....this guy was just impossible to deal with " she thought again"\*\*\*

---

THE FOLLOWING DAY

AT AMO'S HOME

\*\*\*Mbali and Naledi walked inside the yard looking dashing with sunglasses on....they both glowed in the sun and smelt expensive....They dressed to kill today for a purpose you could tell they are rich housewives....Everyone inside the yard felt intimidated by them....They greeted and everyone greeted back like they are forced to do so even other women were giving them nasty looks while men drooled over them....One of Amo's cousins took them inside and they walked inside the room Amo's mother is in

and they greeted respectfully and sat down...the neighbours who were inside the bedroom excused themselves to give them privacy \*\*\*

Naledi: mama I don't know if you remember us....im Naledi and this is Mbali

\*\*\*Amo's mother just nodded with a straight face while the aunt looked at them up and down with what looked like a disgusted look on her face....After Jabu called them and told them that Amo will be buried on Thursday she felt like it was too soon...She tried to reason with him that there are family members who live far and that they won't be able to make it but Jabu stood his ground.....she couldn't even believe it when he told her they have already moved her body from the government mortuary to a private funeral parlour without informing her....She regretted agreeing to having her daughter to be buried by Jabu just to save face...the worst of them all was that she won't be able to go bath her daughter's body one last time because the funeral parlour bathes the bodies themselves and they also dress them themselves\*\*\*

Mbali: ummm we are sorry for your loss mama and the whole family...duduzekani

UncleTshepo: ro duduzeka byang ( when they killed her and the killers are out there enjoying themselves....kamo that boy is doing as he pleases....my sister here cant even go and bath and dress her daughter for the last time cause her daughter's husband decided to do as he pleases with this funeral!!!

\*\*\* the uncle said angrily and Mbali sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: ummm baba thina we are just daughter in laws send here to get info for Amo's obituary....we were told yesterday to arrange the funeral so asazi lutho nathi ( we know nothing)

Uncle: lies!!...do you see how broken my sister is...do you...how can that boy do this to her

\*\*\*Mbali sighed...she was getting annoyed\*\*\*

Mbali: ngenhlonipho nokusthoba baba maybe you should talk to the elders about this.....you are directing your anger at the wrong people

\*\*\*the aunt clapped her hands dramatically\*\*\*

Aunt: so us saying he should bury her you all decided to show us your true colours

Naledi: aunty that's not true

Tshepo: its true.....im sure that boy got her killed....he paid people to do it I know it...how can he bury my niece so quick as if she's an orphan.....why is he not doing the right things....everything is quick quick

Mbali: then you should've buried her then

Aunty: askies

Mbali: yho im so done with this

\*\*\*Naledi sighed she could see tempers are high now and Mbali is getting angry\*\*\*

Naledi: maybe we should leave

\*\*\*she said getting up\*\*\*

Tshepo: nyenyi we should leave.....sacrificial lamps tsa dimpya tsa go thwala ( for cultists)

Naledi: askies

Aunty: trophy wives pampered with blood money nxa

Mbali: heh heh

\*\*\*she laughed getting angry\*\*\*

Tshepo: they failed to come and ba romela difebe tsa bona ( their whores) thinking we will pretend all is well...bannyile

Mbali: what did you just call us....ulale nathi wena for you to call us that

Naledi: lets just leave Mbali they are not worth it

Tshepo: wena ke tla go tlosa botshwafe boo ka mpama ( I'll remove that albinism with a slap)

\*\*\*Naledi laughed wearing her sunglasses\*\*\*

Naledi: botlose uncle.....o Modimo wena ankere ( remove it uncle....you're God right)

Mbali: see you at the funeral

\*\*\*she got up and wore her glasses too\*\*\*

Tshepo: that's funeral wont happen....go tell that blood sucking family of yours gore ke re that funeral wont happen

Aunt: aiyyeee trophy wives tsa go apara designer clothes tsa go rekiwa ka blood money ( trophy wives that wear designer clothes that are bought with blood money).....you think we don't know

Mbali: says a shameful and greedy family of a whore that sleeps with cultists....i hope sacrificing Jabulile made ya'll rich nxa

Naledi: Mbali lets go let's not stoop to their level

Aunt: o reng wena

Mbali: maybe everyone outside should know the kind of child you raised....you judged Jabu when he wanted to marry her because of his lifestyle not knowing you gave birth to a witch

Tshepo: voetsek leave!!!



\*\*\* He said getting up and Mbali laughed walking out followed by Naledi and they found people in the dining room looking towards the passage leading to the bedroom...they walked out and went to their car...They got in and Naledi drove off leaving dust behind.....Mbali called Ray\*\*\*

Ray: my love

Mbali: I've never been insulted like I was today Ray.....we were called names Ray....he called us izifebe...thina Raymond.....do they know who the fuck I am....where I come from and who im married to

Ray: what

Mbali: they called us sacrificial lamps Ray....that we are wearing designer clothes bought with blood money

Ray: they said what!!!

Mbali: I asked you if you're sure about burying that bitch Ray....now...now...you know what f\*ck them...they can bury her for all I care

\*\*\*Naledi just kept quiet as she drove\*\*\*

Ray: drive to Jabu's straight ....where is Star

Mbali: she's the one driving

Ray: drive carefully.... don't worry they will pay for insulting you...they will

Mbali: they better....im no one's sacrificial lamp mina.... nxa with a house that smells like potpourri and urine mixed together

\*\*\*Naledi laughed\*\*\*

Ray: calm down my love you don't want Saint to react

Mbali: maybe he should....they deserve to be taught a lesson...in fact he should torment them until they run mad especially that ugly fat fool that called us whores as if we once sold imomozi kuye nxa ( p\*ssy to him nxa)

\*\*\*Ray sighed... he knows that when his wife is this pissed off Saint will wake up and react\*\*\*

Ray: my love calm down and drive safely...i love you

\*\*\* they ended the call\*\*\*

Naledi: o re potpourri mixed with what

\*\*\*Mbali laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: but vele that house had a funny smell

\*\*\*Naledi sighed\*\*\*

Naledi: im worried about Heath's reaction...gape that husband of mine ke letlhanya nyana ( is a little crazy)...all hell will break lose

Mbali: im so angry right now that even if he decides to go there and deal with them I'll accompany him

\*\*\*Naledi sighed\*\*\*

Naledi: yho ratla ra rugiwa tjo

---

## AT JABU'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Tiara gets out of the car and she takes her bag with...Since the schools are closed she went to visit Mbali her aunt and today she was bored at home since Mbali left in the morning to go to Jabu's place for the funeral arrangements so she asked Mbali if she can come to Jabu's place since Heath's first daughter Omphile is there and they go to the same school. ...

The grannies are looking after the babies while Mbali and Naledi firstly went to the caterer's place and then they'll go to Amo's home for Amo's obituary ( well that didn't go well) then they will go print out the programs ( which will not happen) and go back to Jabu's ...while back home Thandi is busy on the phone with the venue people then she'll call the florist for the flowers and Amo's family will deal with the Priest/Pastor for the funeral ( which they might not do after the exchange of ugly words between them

and the daughter in laws)..... As for the guys they are dealing with the funeral parlour and the graveyard ....

Anyway she walked inside the house with her JBL Bluetooth headphones around neck looking good and she stopped on her track with her eyes popped out when she saw MJ and Sbu sitting in the lounge....She slowly turned to walk into the kitchen area but Sbu saw her \*\*\*

Sbu: hey Tee

\*\*\*she stopped on her tracks and when she turned MJ was looking at her with his eyes popped out....he didn't expect to see her at all \*\*\*

Tiara: hey

\*\*\* she said waving awkwardly then she looked at MJ \*\*\*

Tiara: hey MJ

\*\*\*he cleared his throat\*\*\*

MJ: he...hey

\*\*\*Sbu got up and went to give her a hug\*\*\*

Sbu: I didn't know you were coming

Tiara: I was bored at Khari's place so I asked if she can have the driver drop me off here since Omphile is also here

MJ: am I not gonna receive a hug too

\*\*\*she smiled awkwardly as he walked to where she was standing with Sbu and she hugged him....he closed his eyes as he felt Goosebumps all over his body and his heart beat so fast that he thought it was gonna explode.....she tried to move back but he held on to her as his boner grew inside his sweatpants and mind you the boy is packing in there....She felt it then she tried to move back again but he kept her in place \*\*\*

MJ: you smell so good

\*\*\*Sbu cleared his throat\*\*\*

Sbu: ok let the poor child go man

\*\*\*MJ let her go and she moved back feeling uncomfortable...her eyes involuntarily moved to his lower body and yep it was up...she cleared her throat looking away\*\*\*

Tiara: ummm where is Omphile

Sbu: in the backyard with Lesedi....well she's probably on her phone

MJ: I didn't know you visited my brother's place....i would've come there instead

Tiara: ummm excuse me guys

\*\*\* She quickly went to the sliding door leading to the backyard and Sbu hit the back of MJ's head\*\*\*

MJ: ouch man...what the f....

Sbu: can you just hold yourself...you're scaring the poor child

MJ: damn she looks good man....she's....perfect

Sbu: I thought you're over her

\*\*\*he said as they went to sit down\*\*\*

MJ: that's my future wife there

\*\*\*Sbu laughed\*\*\*

Sbu: keep dreaming....her father will skin you alive bro....

MJ: I will fight to make her mine until I take my last breath....she's gonna carry my babies that one...even if it means we elope to be together I'll do it

\*\*\*he said with a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Sbu: damn

MJ: I may joke around a lot but with her im for real....she's gonna be mine...im just waiting for her to grow a little then I'll make my move again

Sbu: that's if some boy doesn't sweep off her feet

MJ: that day I will go to the deep jungle of Congo to bewitch that guy.....that's my girl man.....

\*\*\*Sbu laughed\*\*\*

MJ: I think getting her pregnant will make her father approve of us....i mean they won't force her to abort....right

\*\*\*A wooden spoon landed on top of MJ's head then at Sbu's head too.....they screamed ducking holding their heads getting off the couch and found Jabu's mother behind the couch and they looked at her with their eyes popped out asking themselves how much she heard\*\*\*

Jabu'smom: uthini wena ne khanda eli khulu!!! ( big head what did you say)

MJ: ouch aunty

Sbu: ishuiu

\*\*\*he said rubbing where its aching\*\*\*

Jabu'smom: who are you getting pregnant....uyahlanya yini ( are you crazy)...and wena Sbusiso you're encouraging him...Uencourager amasimba Sbusiso ( you're encouraging sh\*t Sbusiso)

Sbu: no gogo

Jabu'smom: no yamasimba

\*\*\*Sbu kept quiet\*\*\*

MJ: aunty come on we were just talking...nothing serious

Jabu'smom: do I look like a fool to you MJ

MJ: no

Jabu'smom: come here...both of you

\*\*\*they looked at her with fearful eyes then they looked at one another and they shook their heads no\*\*\*

Jabu'smom: you know you can't outrun me MJ with that leg

MJ: aunty come on....we are boys and boys always talks nonsense....all that's ringing in our ears is girls girls girls...we were just talking aunty...you should be happy that we are not gay

Jabu'smom: yoh this child

Sbu: yes....gogo come on...we were just talking...he was talking about some girl back in Nigeria.... right MJ

MJ: yes yes....she left for the UK and we had a thing...i was just making up stories...you know me and stories aunt

Jabu'smom: nx....just get any girl pregnant and you'll see....infact next year June Jabu should send you to the mountain...we don't do that in our family but lena you are an exception ....le ya komeng ya Mapulana ( you're going to be initiated by Mapulana tribe) ....maybe if they smear you ka letsoku and you get fed pap and cabbage that doesn't have salt and its cooked only by water those big head of yours will work properly....Le ya komeng lena ( you are going to be initiated)... mxmui struu

\*\*\*she said pointing at them then she left mumbling things\*\*\*

MJ: chai....what kind of wahala be this.....my ancestors keep failing me...i wonder what did I do to them for them to fail me like this.....

.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

32

MJ: damn

Sbu: you're lucky you didn't say her name

MJ: bro I think that spoon hit my brain

\*\*\*he said rubbing where he was hit\*\*\*

Sbu: eish and we just got new haircuts

MJ: mxm

\*\*\*he said limping to the couch and he sat down so did Sbu\*\*\*

MJ: what did she mean we are going to the mountain

Sbu: to get initiated bro

MJ: wait what

Sbu: mmh

MJ: you mean they gonna cut off our d\*cks

\*\*\*Sbu wanted to laugh so bad at that\*\*\*

Sbu: and all our hair...we gonna fetch fire wood and go bath in a cold river during winter...well that's what I heard happens

\*\*\*MJ looked at Sbu scared\*\*\*

MJ: im Nigerian...we don't do that

Sbu: half Nigerian man....half Nigerian

MJ: full Nigerian....my mother stole me from a Nigerian hospital...she gave birth to an ugly child from a man she cheated with and she switched me...im actually not biologically from this family

\*\*\*Sbu laughed\*\*\*

Sbu: you're crazy wena

MJ: no one is going to cut off my d\*ck man or my hair and I don't even eat cabbage

Sbu: they circumcise you not cut off all your d\*ck man

MJ: no dirty old man will touch my beautiful d\*ck...you know what im calling my dad im sure he wont agree

\*\*\*Heath walked in followed by Jabu....Ray is still outside talking on the phone with Mbali and Naledi\*\*\*

Heath: and now

\*\*\*he said as he looked at a panicking MJ\*\*\*

MJ: where is brother Ray

Heath: brother Ray? ...since when do you call him brother Ray

Sbu: Gogo happened

MJ: they gonna cut off my d\*ck and my hair and they gonna force me to eat cabbage bro...i hate cabbage.....and they gonna force us to bath in cold water during winter...do you know how cold winter is in South Africa

Heath: what are you talking about

\*\*\*Sbu held his laugh\*\*\*

Sbu: gogo said o re isa komeng next year June ( we are going to be initiated in the mountain next year Jun)

\*\*\*Heath laughed and Jabu smirked\*\*\*

Heath: and I support him

Jabu: me too

MJ: what??

Jabu: lo betha di kgomo ya swa....ga e swe ....etla gama ke mang e sa game ke nna setingting sa masogana

\*\*\*Heath busted out with laughter\*\*\*

Sbu: haw thaima ( dad)

Jabu: le tletse ka masepa akere....ba ile go lentsha ona ko thabeng le nnyele ( they'll take out the shit you're full of at the mountain)

\*\*\*he said walking upstairs leaving Heath laughing as he followed him.....Ray soon walked in looking pissed and he rushed upstairs before MJ can say anything\*\*\*

Ray: HEATH...JABU!!!

Jabu: MASTER BEDROOM!!

\*\*\*he walked in closing the door then he paced around as they looked at him\*\*\*

Jabu: dintshang ( what's wrong)

\*\*\*he sat down\*\*\*

Ray: things didn't go well for the girls

Heath: what....the catering company gave them trouble?

Ray: no...at Amo's place

\*\*\*Jabu and Heath looked at each other frowning\*\*\*

Heath: what happened

\*\*\*he said taking out his phone from his pocket\*\*\*

Ray: put the phone away Heath

\*\*\*Heath slowly did\*\*\*

Ray: they verbally attacked them

Heath: huh....verbally attacked who's wives

Jabu: what do you mean by that big Ray

Ray: they'll explain everything when they get here....they are on their way

\*\*\*Heath took out his phone\*\*\*

Ray: Naledi is driving man....put that phone away

\*\*\*he did with his heart beating fast\*\*\*

Jabu: I don't know what they want from me.....maybe they want my life nje

\*\*\*he said sitting down\*\*\*

Ray: they wanted us to bury her and now that we are doing just that they have a problem with how the funeral arrangement are done...what the hell do they want from Jabu

\*\*\*Heath walked to the door\*\*\*

Ray: Heath

Heath: im going to wait for them downstairs

\*\*\*he walked out\*\*\*



Ray: don't worry that funeral is happening tomorrow and you'll move on from this sh\*t...don't worry

## IN THE LOUNGE

\*\*\*Sbu and MJ went to join the girls in the backyard which made Tiara's visit here uncomfortable where else MJ is just happy to see her face to face...Anyway in the lounge Thandi comes from one of the bedrooms downstairs and she finds Heath sitting in the lounge alone looking anxious\*\*\*

Thandi: bro dintshang ( bro what's wrong)

\*\*\*Heath sighed looking at her as she sat down\*\*\*

Heath: Mbali and Naledi were insulted at Amo's place

Thandi: askies?...for the what

Heath: im waiting for them to hear what happened

Thandi: bannyela nxa...we are here busting our a\$\$es off to bury their daughter who hurt my brother deeply and ba re leboga ka skotlolo sa masepa nxa ( and they thank us with a plate full of sh\*t)

Heath: people keep provoking me Mathaa....they keep provoking me...ive been behaving lately and now they are pushing my buttons nxa

---

Gaza: I miss you mama

Tshimo: how's your family

Gaza: don't ignore what I just said

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Tshimo: mara I heard you moes

Gaza: don't you miss me

Tshimo: I do miss you...happy now

Gaza: no....i want you to mean it

Tshimo: I really do miss you Gee your cooking and always feeling safe when you were around

\*\*\*he smiled\*\*\*

Gaza: im happy now

\*\*\*she giggled\*\*\*

Tshimo: yho o dramatic bathong

Gaza: you made me that way....i was never dramatic

Tshimo: yho hae don't blame me

Gaza: I blame you

\*\*\*she laughed and he smiled...she made him feel normal and he loves feeling like that with her\*\*\*

Tshimo: now answer my question...how's your family

Gaza: good and Nyiko couldn't believe it when he saw me...he's been clingy ever since

Tshimo: ncooh....im happy...im sure he missed you dearly

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: yeah....i missed him too....as for my younger sisters they cried like someone died..... my youngest sister kept calling everyone she knew to tell them that im back...she said we should arrange a huge party for my reappearance

\*\*\*Tshimo laughed\*\*\*

Tshimo: she sounds like fun

Gaza: yeah...they have been worried and im thankful they were around to help with Nyiko

Tshimo: im glad you have people who will always have your back

Gaza: you have me as your family....I'll always have your back mama

\*\*\*she smiled over the phone\*\*\*

Tshimo: Thank you

Gaza: you don't have to thank me because that means you'll always thank me every day for the rest of our lives

Tshimo: yho ok...heh before I forget there's a rumour here at work about the Doctor that disappeared that he reappeared

Gaza: ooh....where was he

Tshimo: mabarebare a re (rumours says) he was kidnapped by his brother's enemies

Gaza: hai ok....so how's everything else

Tshimo: you don't like it when I talk about other men neh

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: mmh so can we never talk about them

Tshimo: but ke gossip Gee

Gaza: now you've turned me into a gossip...yah neh

\*\*\*she laughed and he smiled...he saw Alphalette approaching holding two bottles of beer and a bowl\*\*\*

Gaza: hey mama let's talk later...i need to talk to Ntsako now

Tshimo: ok...let me go back to work too

Gaza: mmmmh and stay away from gossip

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Tshimo: never...im a loner so gossip keeps me entertained

Gaza: I need to come back before you become mamghobozi ( a gossip)

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Gaza: na ko randza mama...later

\*\*\*he quickly ended the call right as Alphalette sat next to him and gave him one bottle and the bowl filled with peanuts\*\*\*

Nyiko: daddy look

\*\*\*he showed him that he almost beat his score\*\*\*

Gaza: eish you are almost there....try again

\*\*\*he said brushing his head and Nyiko smiled\*\*\*

Nyiko: I'll beat your score you'll see

\*\*\*Gaza chuckled\*\*\*

Gaza: mmh try again and let's see

Nyiko: I'll beat it you'll see

\*\*\*he said sitting down on his chair again\*\*\*

Alpha: he's happy

Gaza: mmmmh

\*\*\*they kept quiet for a bit\*\*\*

Alpha: why Amo

\*\*\*Gaza sighed\*\*\*

Gaza: she broke Jabu...she needed to go

Alpha: but that was not your call to make

Gaza: it's never anyone's call to make but I made it anyway

\*\*\*he said and drank his beer\*\*\*

Alpha: what if he finds out....he has powerful friends who might now know that you're responsible

Gaza: so....look Alpha...i did it...it's done....Jabu is free and she got what was coming to her....we cant go back and undo it so let's just move on...if Javas finds out then he did...if they tell him then they did cause I can't change what I did and I don't regret it one bit

Alpha: you're going back to your old heartless self Gee

Gaza: I shouldn't have tried to change in the first place...look were changing for a woman did to me

\*\*\*Alpha kept quiet shaking his head\*\*\*

Alpha: you didn't have to involve Root

Gaza: then you definitely don't know the real Root

Alpha: he was an inkabi( a hitman)

Gaza: was?

\*\*\* he chuckled then took another sip from his drink\*\*\*

Gaza: anyway hell is where we are going...if there's such a place

\*\*\*Alphalette just shook his head\*\*\*

Alpha: you two will make me get old quickly I swear.....

\*\*\*Gaza chuckled\*\*\*

Gaza: you like being serious Ntsako and you worry too much....life is too short....tomorrow you might wake up dead and you'll reflect on how you wasted your life worrying about everyone and everything else and you never got to enjoy your life

Gaza: we know that every bad decision we make has its own consequences so worry about Tshepo Nyiko and AJ and stop worrying about us as if are clueless about how the world works...we are old enough to know right from wrong

Alpha: and you still chose the wrong things

Gaza: mmmmh cause it's my decision but that doesn't mean your opinion or advices are not welcomed as long as you don't judge me....i may choose to take your advice or not that's up to me so don't force things...let me and Mpande make our own mistakes so

we learn from them...at the end of the day on judgement day I'll answer for my sins alone you won't be there to have my back or speak for me...i don't know if you get me  
\*\*\*he said looking at him and Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: Anyway I want to send a letter to Masai's family but i haven't asked her to marry me

\*\*\*Gaza kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Gaza: that's good so when are you gonna ask her

Alpha: I want to but...

\*\*\*he kept quiet\*\*\*

Gaza: but what

Alpha: I feel like sh\*t

Gaza: about what now

Alpha: I was ready to marry another woman....i didn't consider her feelings into all that....i claim to love her with all my heart but I was willing to hurt her like that...I swear her mother was gonna kill me...she warned be that if I ever hurt her I'll die a slow painful death...on top of that I need to pay damages and also introduce AJ to my ancestors

\*\*\* Alpha said with a heavy heart and Gaza didn't say anything

Sponsored

AD

he just drank his beer\*\*\*

Alpha: im an a\$\$ neh

\*\*\* he whispered so Nyiko won't hear the curse word\*\*\*

Gaza: yeah you are....i know you Alpha....i wasn't wrong when i warned you to stop when it comes to Tshimo....the fact is I trust you with my life and my son's life but I don't trust you with her

Alpha: I don't want her Gee it's all manipulation I didn't know but now that I know it all makes sense....my heart beats for Masai

Gaza: yet you were willing to marry Tshimo and you've been acting like a jealous ex-lover

\*\*\* Alpha sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: its manipulation Gee...it's not love

Gaza: what if her ancestors puts in more force and you can't hold yourself.....I've been betrayed before Ntsako you know that....i can't go through that again even if it's not your intentions or you're been manipulated to do so....

\*\*\*Alpha sighed...this was bad\*\*\*

Alpha: then what should I do to prove to you that I won't betray you like that

Gaza: I don't know cause as long as she's part of my life you'll meet her

\*\*\*Alpha swallowed hard\*\*\*

Alpha: it hurts to know that you don't trust me anymore

Gaza: with her but I do trust you with my life...

\*\*\*Alphalette didn't say anything then he sighed\*\*\*

Alpha: im going back tomorrow morning...Masai has been discharged

Gaza: ok....I'll come next week with Nyiko....im gonna try and convince Gloria to have that party next week and not this weekend

\*\*\*Alpha chuckled\*\*\*

Alpha: so you approve of the party

Gaza: yeah....they need it....it's been some hectic few months for them

Alpha: mmmmh....wait why next week

Gaza: I'll come back with Tshimo.....she needs to be here for the party....she's part of the reason the party is happening...you should bring Masai and AJ too

Alpha: ok

Gaza: we will be fine... wena just keep fighting this manipulation and we won't have a problem....Masai has been through a lot she doesn't deserve a heart break from you

Alpha: I know

Gaza: good

\*\*\*Gaza looked at his son and he smiled....he looked just like him when he has a serious look on his face....his carbon copy...his heir\*\*\*

Gaza: I'll make both of them happy....im gonna be good for them....i won't turn evil for them

\*\*\*Alpha didn't say anything cause he was shown how evil that thing inside of him is...he wishes he could agree to get rid of it\*\*\*

---

TAREK ( NARRATED)

\*\*\*He refused to be admitted at the hospital and now he's at his parents' house and his father is still not yet back home....He lied to his mother that he was mugged and he even refused to open a case at the police station....He asked his friend Duma to go and fetch his car and bring it at his parent's house \*\*\*

Tarek: he's lucky he caught me off guard nxa

Duma: why don't you focus on Samke and your child and leave Hills man...look at you now

Tarek: what do you mean leave her....that's my wife man....i paid dowry for her...she's mine

Duma: well it looks like she has moved on

Tarek: with that thing...that thing that's below my level...ngeke

Duma: well that thing beat the crap out of you...those kind of people lives and breathes violence man

Tarek: fosek im not scared of him mina....he just caught me off guard nje

\*\*\*Duma laughed\*\*\*

Duma: on a serious note man....you messed up...just accept defeat and move on....you hurt her man....that girl loved you to a point that she even took a bullet for you and what did you do....you broke her heart

\*\*\*Tarek sighed\*\*\*

Duma: wena do you see her forgiving you and giving your marriage another chance

Tarek: she has to Duma...she's my wife man...every marriage goes through challenges...she needs to realise that and once she does we will fix things....i believe so....i know she still loves me

Duma: then what about Samke

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Tarek: im gonna keep lying to her until she gives birth then after that I'll tell her straight up that I've changed my mind.....i don't want a second wife

Duma: you cant be serious man

Tarek: im serious as a heart attack..... im not losing Hills over that low class fool ..... never!!!

Duma: tell me here you don't want to lose Hills over that man or you just don't want to lose her cause you regret everything

Tarek: that shouldn't matter...what matters is she's mine and I wanna keep it that way

\*\*\*Duma shook his head defeated\*\*\*

Tarek: and as for that fool Im gonna deal with him...he doesn't know me....by the time im done with him he'll sell those ugly low class clothes he was wearing at a taxi rank just to buy something to eat nxa

.  
. .  
.

TO BE CONTINUED...

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO

33

AT JABU'S HOUSE

Mbali walked inside the house bare footed holding her heels in the hands followed by Naledi....Heath quickly got up and he went to his wife while Ray got up and went to his wife too\*\*\*

Heath: are you ok

\*\*\*he said cupping her face looking into her eyes and she nodded\*\*\*

Heath: did they touch you

Naledi: no just insults



\*\*\*he closed his eyes clenching his jaws then he opened them again\*\*\*

Heath: im sorry obim

Naledi: its ok....im fine baby

\*\*\*he kissed her lips...while Ray pulled Mbali to sit down after giving her a tight hug and a kiss\*\*\*

Mbali: bathi we are sacrificial lamps....sacrificial lamps imagine....me a sacrificial lamp and a trophy wife

Ray: what....i swear im being tested here

\*\*\*he said looking angry\*\*\*

Mbali: bathi we are wearing designer clothes bought with blood money nxa...jealous fools

\*\*\* she clicked her tongue\*\*\*

Mbali: that stupid old fool with a big belly said to Naledi that he'll slap the albinism off her imagine

Heath: what

\*\*\*\*he said looking at Mbali with a scary frown\*\*\*

Mbali: mmh....they were mean to us Heath...even Mo's mother was somehow towards us...she didn't even reprimand them

Thandi: why didn't I go with you mara...eish

\*\*\*she said getting up\*\*\*

Mbali: me a sacrificial lamp nxa.....bayanya shem....calling us izifebe as if they once f\*ck\*d us nxa

\*\*\* she said getting up and walking away and Ray followed her....Heath searched for his car keys in his pockets and he found them...Jabu grabbed his arm\*\*\*

Jabu: your wife needs you....we will deal with them later

\*\*\*he looked at Jabu breathing heavily and he saw Naledi walking away and he sighed and gave Jabu the car keys and he followed her\*\*\*

Jabu: yho satan wangleka straight ( satan is testing me )

Thandi: I wish I went with them....na ko thuba motho mokgaba ka feish a tlatse bobete ka dinko nxa

\*\*\*she said angrily\*\*\*

.  
. .  
.

## IN ONE OF THE BEDROOMS

\*\*\*Mbali is washing her make up off in the en-suit bathroom when Ray walks in\*\*\*

Ray: you ok

\*\*\*she shook her head no as she wipes water off her face and he pulled her closer and tears ran down her cheeks....he wiped them off and perked her lips\*\*\*

Ray: I love you

Mbali: I love you too

\*\*\*she said with a sad tone\*\*\*

Ray: they gonna be sorry for insulting you

\*\*\*she rested her head on his chest\*\*\*

Mbali: I know

Ray: and they don't know im the sacrificial lamb here cause im at your mercy

\*\*\*she giggled and he smiled\*\*\*

Ray: even Saint knows never to make mommy angry

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: im not that bad

Ray: really

Mbali: mmmmh you guys just like provoking me nje

Ray: cause you're easily provoked

\*\*\*she pinched him and he yelped and she laughed\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

## IN ANOTHER BEDROOM

Heath: you ok

\*\*\*he said looking at her as she took off her shoes\*\*\*

Naledi: yeah im good baby

Heath: im sorry

\*\*\*she smiled looking at him\*\*\*

Naledi: don't be....im ok...he thought he'll hurt me by saying that about my albinism

\*\*\*she chuckled shaking her head\*\*\*

Naledi: but he didn't....my husband children and my in laws loves me the way I am so he can go screw himself with his big fat belly

\*\*\*Heath smiled\*\*\*

Naledi: but I hate that they called us sacrificial lamps and trophy wives...you should have seen how they looked at us when we entered...even them greeting us back was forced...mxm

\*\*\*he went and sat next to her\*\*\*

Heath: ooh well f\*ck them all

Naledi: aarg enough about them...i need some loving from my hubby...my body is tense baby

\*\*\*Heath smiled like a retard\*\*\*

Naledi: not that kind of loving haw....we are in mourning

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Heath: mourning for who

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Naledi: suster in law haw....ga ke nyake go tshwara ke makgome nna ( I don't want to have bad luck)...im too cute for that

\*\*\*Heath laughed out loud.....after he calmed down he looked at her with a loving smile on his face....he loves her and he can't imagine his life without her and he's happy she has grown from a cry baby to this strong woman\*\*\*

Heath: I love you obim

\*\*\*she smiled shyly\*\*\*

Naledi: I love you too

\*\*\*he pulled her to his chest and he kissed the top of her head....he clenched his jaws thinking about what he's gonna do to that uncle\*\*\*

.

.

.

Jabu: where are you...why aren't you here

\*\*\*He just called Lorraine.....He got a call from Jay telling him that Kenny just boarded a flight to Gauteng and that's when he remembered that Lorraine is still around....he felt like sh\*t when he realised that he's been neglecting her....As for Lorraine she has been scared to call him because of what happened when Lile passed away....she thought she was gonna be blamed again so she just concentrated on managing her business while

she's this side and also keeping busy by drafting a proposal for a branch she wanna have this side for possible investors she's gonna approach for funding\*\*\*

Lolly: ummm I thought I should give you some.... space

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Jabu: space for what now Lorraine

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: the last time I came to offer my condolences it didn't go well so I was scared to be all up in your face again

\*\*\*she said with a low tone and he sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: I apologised mara Lolly

Lolly: I know ok but eish.....i guess I got scared but I've been communicating with Thandi and Sbu and im gonna come for the funeral

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Lolly: we only spoke twice since that day Jabu then I heard about Amo's passing and you've been quiet so I thought I should just keep away and give you space...well at least until after the funeral or if you call first so I don't catch stray bullets like the last time

\*\*\*he brushed his head\*\*\*

Lolly: don't worry about it...we are cool....so how are you...im sorry for your loss

Jabu: I need to see you....Amo's family ba tletse ka masepa ( they are full of sh\*t)

Lolly: they giving you trouble?

Jabu: more than that....i need to see you Lolly...i need you closer....assomblief

Lolly: o sure

Jabu: 100

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Lolly: ok

Jabu: Ruu o tla feta ao tseya ( Ruu will pick you up)....he's on his way so get ready and take everything ya gao

\*\*\*he cant tell her about Kenny cause he knows she's freak out\*\*\*

Lolly: umm ok....but why Ruu Jabu....he scares me

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Jabu: Ruu ga a na flopo ( Ruu doesn't have a problem)

Lolly: he's too serious

Jabu: and friendly too

Lolly: ai ke tla reng ( what can I say)

Jabu: you'll play a game on your phone the whole way if you feel uncomfortable

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Lolly: hai ok geh

Jabu: and Lolly

Lolly: mmmmh

Jabu: haarde ka what happened that time and what I said...i know ke flopile blaen...i don't want you to live ka dai deng in you....you didn't deserve it

Sponsored

AD

ne ke tlhakatlhakane ke le a mess kesna taba gore ke hurt(a) mang....i even ended up hurting my son....i don't want you to fear being around me ge ke se shap....i actually want you to be around me....

\*\*\*she kept quiet getting emotional\*\*\*

Jabu: re shap right

Lolly: yeah...let me get ready then

Jabu: ok see you when you get here

Lolly: and no hugs...a ke nyake go tshwara ke makgome nna ( I don't wanna have bad luck)

\*\*\*Jabu laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: tsek wa phapha

\*\*\*she laughed and they ended the call then Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Jabu: eish

\*\*\*he walked to where Heath is \*\*\*

Heath: she ok

Jabu: yeah...o batlang this side

Heath: I don't know as long as he's not here for her or you then I don't care

Jabu: koore motho ha gemenyana...its one drama after the other

Heath: eish

\*\*\*Jabu's phone rang again and he didn't recognize the numbers but he answered anyway\*\*\*

Jabu: sho

Man: sho...ke Jabu?

Jabu: who wants to know

Man: its me Amo's brother

\*\*\*he looked at Heath and he put the phone on speaker\*\*\*

Jabu: sho... dintshang

A's.brother: first of all sorry about what happened today....i just found out now....eish

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

A's.brother: a ke part ya that circus happening at home....nna im just living my life... I don't want you think im in support of what they are doing....

Jabu: ok

A's.brother: all I want is to bury my younger sister and the culprits to be arrested then we move on so ke vraisa location ya venue for the funeral service

\*\*\*Jabu looked at Heath \*\*\*

Jabu: they are saying I got your sister killed...wena o reng

A's.brother: vare ke gore Amo changed....she stopped being that soft spoken shy sister of mine...le mamazala agreed with me....she used to get phone calls and she would answer secretly....She would not sleep at home sometimes and mamazala would call me to come and talk to her cause she was still a married woman and when I did she would be cold or lash out at me....she would say I should stay out of her business cause she's trying to save her marriage.....so yah....she changed drastically....

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

A's.brother: I think her shady phone calls and shady meet ups got her killed..... nna I just want to bury her and move on mfowethu....ke zamile

\*\*\*Jabu sighed and Heath clicked his tongue...he was so done with all this Amo thing\*\*\*\*

A's.brother: and Jabu....mamazala is influenced by aunty le uncle...she has never been in support of what Amo was doing and she would never support all this nonsense that's happening now.... ever since those two came back into our lives ke mathata fela (its one trouble after the other)....I cant even stay mo gae ( here at home) for over an hour because they control everything and mama lets them...im the only son here but my opinion doesn't matter anymore since they came.....we talked le mamazala gore we will bury Amo ourselves then ba fitlha (they came) and everything changed

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

A's.brother: anyway I'll wait for the location of the venue...shap

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and Jabu sighed\*\*\*

Heath: he's lucky nxa

\*\*\*he walked away and Jabu saved his numbers\*\*\*

---

\*\*\*Hills phone rang as she walked inside her boutique....she took it out of her handbag and answered waving at her employees with a smile going to her office\*\*\*

Hills: hello

Mpande: Ntabeni....how are you

\*\*\*she frowned\*\*\*

Hills: im good and yourself?

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Mpande: you sound different why the changed accent

Hills: bathong

Mpande: anyway ukuphi ( where are you)

Hills: why are you asking

Mpande: ukuphi ntokazi

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Hills: what do you want Mpande or maybe Tarek got you arrested and you're calling me from the police station?

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Mpande: his reputation is on the line so he won't get me arrested....

Hills: you don't know Tarek wena....he's gonna come after you

Mpande: I would like to see him try....so ukhuphi ( where are you)

Hills: at one of my boutiques

Mpande: which one

Hills: Mpande you should be giving me your bank account so I pay you for your car's repairs

Mpande: can we go out and discuss that

Hills: bye Mpande

\*\*\*she dropped the call rolling her eyes.....her phone rang again and it was him\*\*\*

Hills: can you stop calling me

Mpande: tell me where you are and I'll stop

Hills: no.... if you call me again I'll block your numbers....

Mpande: I guess I have to find you myself then .....see you later

Hills: later ya eng...Mpande you're being weird now

\*\*\*he dropped the call and she sighed\*\*\*

Hills: yho this guy

\*\*\* Well the outing they went to after he beat the crap out Tarek was a bit awkward for her at first but when he started telling her funny stories of when he was still a taxi driver and she was busy laughing her a\$\$ off it became less awkward and she enjoyed herself....She could see he wasn't a bad person but she still doesn't understand why he's busy avoiding the accident issue....every time she speaks about paying him he changes the topic...He send her a message and she sighed opening it and it read...\*\*\*

Mpande: " anything specific I should bring for you ntokazi"

Hills: yho ha ah....i give up shem

\*\*\*she said to herself as she put her phone down\*\*\*

---

\*\*\*Moera woke up from a nightmare an hour ago....she has been dreaming of Selina a lot lately its like she's haunting her in her dreams..... She would dream being in her kitchen washing dirty dishes and she would get a cold chill run down her spine and when she turned she would find her sitting on her chair tied to it....she would scream frozen on the spot and Selina would start by crying then she would laugh out loud with blood coming out of her mouth then Moera would wake up sweating and panting scared to death.....



On top of it all she's stressed by Drench.....she still regrets asking for his help...she wishes she asked help from her mother or her uncle.... Well she went to see her uncle yesterday to ask for help concerning Drench and before she got out of the car she received a phone call from Drench telling her to go back to her apartment that instant if she knows what's good for her.....she watched as her uncle stood by his door confused as she drove off without even saying hi to him and she has been ignoring his calls since then cause she doesn't even know what lie to tell him for him to believe her cause he knows her too well\*\*\*

Moera: Alex why did you leave me....why did you die.....i miss you so much

\*\*\*she said as tears ran down her cheeks as she hugged her knees \*\*\*

Moera: you should've fought hard to stay alive for me.....i know I was a handful to deal with but I knew you loved me....i made bad decisions and now I don't know what to do

\*\*\*\*she cried\*\*\*

Moera: I miss you Alex....i miss you so much....why did you leave me....you brother is....he.... I trusted him and he.....

\*\*\*she continued to cry painfully\*\*\*

Moera: please help me out of this predicament....i promise I will be a good girl....please help me

.  
. .  
.

TO BE CONTINUED....

#TO-DARE-IS-TO-DO